



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

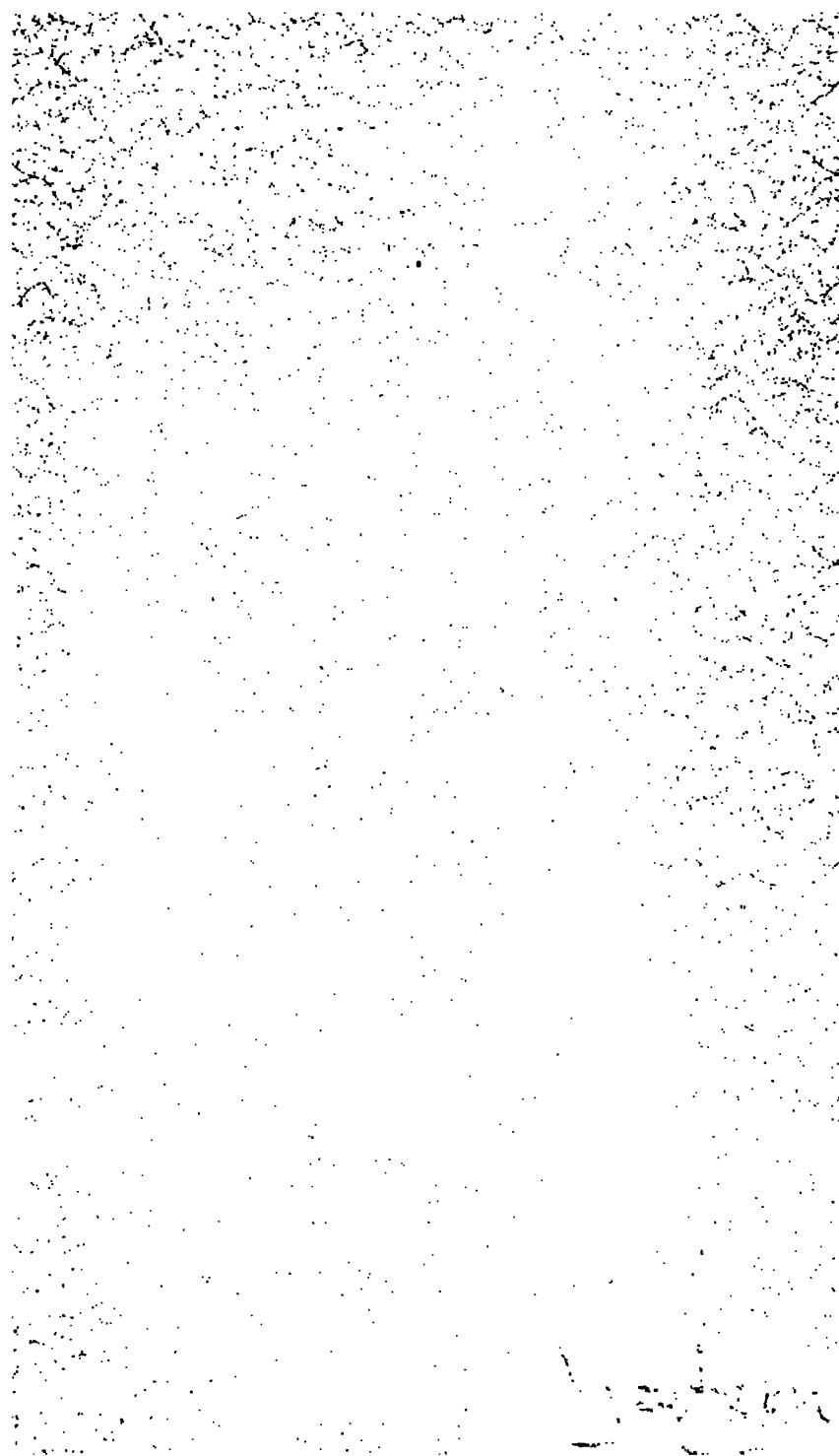
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3 3433 05681203 9





THE
H I S T O R Y
OF THE
R E I G N
OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

V O L. I.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
REIGN
OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.
VOL. I.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
REIGN
OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

By ROBERT WATSON, LL.D.
PROFESSOR OF PHILOSOPHY AND RHETORIC
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF ST. ANDREW'S.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

DUBLIN:

Printed for Messrs. PRICE, W. WATSON, WHITESTONE, SEATE,
CHAMBERLAINE, R. CROSS, J. HOBY, WILLIAMS, W. COLLEY,
POTTS, W. WILSON, MONCRIEFFE, ARMISTEAD, FRANK,
JACKSON, WALKER, PORTER, GILBERT, JESKINS,
P. HOBY, BURNETT, E. CROSS, HALLHEAD,
SPOTSWOOD, EXSHAW, WHITE, J. COLLEY,
HIGLY, HILLARY, and J. BEATTY.

MDCCCLXXVII.

(A)

100

210Y W 3M 1/2
C 25N
V 25L

THE
HISTORY
of Philip the Second
OF THE REIGN OF 1540
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK I.

PHILIP II. King of Spain, son of the Emperor Charles V. and of Isabella daughter of Emanuel the Great, King of Portugal, was born at Valladolid on the twenty-first of May, one thousand five hundred and twenty-seven. He was educated in Spain under ecclesiastics, noted for their bigotry, who were appointed by his father to instruct him; and, by this circumstance, several of those features in his character were either formed, or greatly heightened, which were afterwards so conspicuous in his conduct.

Book I.

Birth and
education of
Philip.

CHARLES, who was born in the Netherlands, and passed his early youth there, had, through his whole reign, entertained such a manifest partiality for that country, as was the source of much dissatisfaction to his Spanish subjects. But they were comforted by the preference which they received from the young prince, and flattered themselves with hopes, which were not frustrated, of obtaining, under his administration,

VOL. I.

B

nistration,

Book I. nistration, that share of the royal favour, which the Flemings had enjoyed under the emperor ^a.

His character

PHILIP early displayed sagacity, prudence, and application : and discovered likewise a disposition wonderfully suited to the religious instructions which he received. His mind, being naturally serious and thoughtful, gave a ready admittance to all the sentiments of that illiberal superstition, which formed, at that time, the distinguishing character of the Spanish ecclesiastics.

His first marriage.

AT the age of sixteen, he espoused Mary, a princess of Portugal ; who died in less than two years after her marriage, in child-bed ; when she was delivered of Don Carlos, whose unhappy fate will be related in the sequel.

He is called by his father to the Netherlands.

PHILIP continued to reside in Spain, and was intrusted with the administration of the kingdom, till the year one thousand five hundred and forty-eight. At that time he was called by his father into the Low Countries ; where he arrived, in the beginning of the following year, with a numerous retinue of Spanish nobles. Upon his entrance into Brussels, as he was ever desirous to maintain the appearance of extraordinary piety, he went first to the cathedral church, to render thanks to the Almighty for his preservation ; and then proceeded to the palace. After passing some days there with the emperor, who, in all his behaviour, discovered that fond affection, which is natural to a person in the decline of life, towards an only son, he set out to visit the principal cities in the Low Countries, accompanied by the regent, his aunt, the queen dowager of Hungary ^b.

NOTHING

^a Haræus Annal. Belgii, &c. p. 570. Cabrera Vida del Philippe II. lib. i. c. 1.

^b Haræi Annales Ducum Brabantie, &c. tom. ii. p. 653. Antwerpæ 1623. Lud. Guiccardini, lib. ii. p. 127.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

3

NOTHING could exceed the pomp with which he was every where received. In presents, entertainments, illuminations, and tournaments, immense sums were expended. The cities vied with each other in displaying that magnificence which their industry had enabled them to attain; and the people gave every where the strongest demonstrations of their attachment ^c.

BOOK I.

His reception there.

BUT Philip, in the midst of those scenes of festivity which were exhibited for his amusement, and which were so well calculated to gratify a young, ambitious mind, could not conceal the natural austerity of his temper. The Flemings observed, with anxiety, that there was a striking contrast between the father and the son. Charles was courteous and affable, but Philip, they perceived, was distant, haughty and severe. The former could speak with facility the principal languages of Europe, and used to discourse familiarly with all his subjects; the latter had declined learning to speak any other but the Spanish tongue, conversed little with the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and was almost inaccessible to all, but the Spanish nobles. He lived in every respect as he was wont to do in Spain, wore a Spanish dress, and refused to conform, in any thing, to the modes and customs of the Netherlands ^d.

His unpopular manners.

THIS behaviour, equally ungracious and impolitic, made a deep impression on the minds of the Flemings, and created in them a jealousy of the Spaniards, which they did not study to conceal. Charles having required the States to swear allegiance to Philip, as they had formerly done to himself, they rejected his request; and refused to acknowledge Philip's right of succession, till he engaged to exclude all foreigners from any share in the

Their effect on the Flemings.

B 2

government

^c Meteren, p. 9. ^d Bentivoglio, Historia della Guerra de Fiandra, p. 5. In Patigi 1645.

government of the provinces. And even to this nothing would have made them agree, but their respect for the emperor, and the awe in which they stood of his power; for, if the distemper under which Charles laboured at this time, had proved mortal, it was believed, they would have excluded Philip from the sovereignty, and conferred it on Maximilian his cousin, son of Ferdinand king of Hungary and Bohemia^c.

The emperor's scheme for procuring him to be elected King of the Romans.

FROM the Low Countries the emperor carried his son into Germany, in order to facilitate the execution of a scheme, which he had lately formed, of having him elected King of the Romans. In the year one thousand five hundred and thirty, Charles had procured that dignity for his brother Ferdinand; but having now a son grown up to maturity, of whose talents for government he entertained the most favourable opinion, he repented of what he had done in behalf of his brother; and resolved, in case he would not resign, to endeavour to persuade the electors to annul his election.

Aversion of the Germans from that scheme.

BUT Philip's manners were not less disgusting in Germany, than they had been in the Netherlands; and served rather to alienate the affections of the Germans, than to conciliate their favour. His demeanour there was equally distant, reserved, and haughty. He suffered even princes of the highest rank to remain uncovered in his presence; and, in all his behaviour, affected a degree of state and dignity which the emperors themselves had never been accustomed to assume. The Germans dreaded the dominion of one whose behaviour, even when he was courting their favour, was so cold and distant. They refused to listen to the Emperor's proposal; and they were confirmed in their resolution of rejecting it, partly, by their remembrance of the calamities which they had suffered, from conferring the Imperial crown on Charles, whose power had

^c *Memoires de Ribier, tom. ii. p. 219. à Paris 1666.*

had proved almost fatal to their liberty ; and partly, by their attachment to Ferdinand, joined with the affection which they bore to Maximilian, whose character and manners were entirely the reverse of those of Philip.

CHARLES was not of a temper to be easily diverted from his designs ; and, being conscious of the great superiority which he had lately acquired, from his triumph over the confederacy of Smalkalde, he doubted not of being able to compel the electors to make choice of his son, provided he could prevail on Ferdinand to resign. To effectuate this, he applied himself with all that earnestness and ardour which he commonly discovered in the prosecution of his schemes. Nothing but the intoxication of prosperity could have inspired a prince of so great sagacity as Charles, with the hopes of succeeding in so chimerical an attempt. Ferdinand himself was in the full vigour of life ; and, considering the declining state of his brother's health, his prospect of the Imperial dignity was not distant : his son had been educated with the view of attaining the same exalted station after his father's death ; and, from the great popularity of his character, he had just ground to entertain the most sanguine expectations of success. Charles might easily have perceived, that no arguments which he could employ would persuade either the father or the son to forego a prospect so alluring. Accordingly, although he had, on all former occasions, found his brother's behaviour towards him respectful and complying ; and, to give greater weight to his present application, made use of the powerful intercession of his sister the queen dowager of Hungary, to whom his brother was indebted for the crowns of Hungary and Bohemia ; yet Ferdinand withstood all his sister's entreaties, and rejected all the offers of compensation which were made to him. Charles had given his daughter in marriage to Maximilian, and
intrusted

Book I. intrusted him with the government of Spain, during Philip's absence, in order to sooth him under the disappointment which he was preparing for him, and to remove him to a distance from Germany, when his father's affection was about to be put to the trial. This young prince was greatly alarmed when he heard of the design which was carrying on against him; and having left Spain, and returned to Germany, he omitted nothing in his power, to confirm his father's purpose, and to render it unalterable. Charles saw at last the necessity of dropping, for the present, the prosecution of his scheme: and Philip left Germany, much dissatisfied with the electors, and other German princes, but with none more than with his kinsmen^f.

Philip returns to Spain.

FROM Germany he returned to Spain, where he held the regency of the kingdom, and acquitted himself of his charge, in such a manner as led his subjects to form a favourable opinion of his prudence, his industry, and his capacity for government. But the cotemporary historians have mentioned no particulars of his conduct during this period, that deserve to be recorded. He remained in Spain till his marriage with the queen of England, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-four.

His marriage with the queen of England.

No sooner was Mary, daughter of Henry VIII. seated on the throne, than Charles, whose ruling passion, towards the close of his reign, was to aggrandise his son, conceived the design of uniting England to his other dominions, by the marriage of Philip with the queen. Had Philip declined this match, it was believed, that Charles would have offered himself to Mary, rather than have lost so inviting an opportunity of augmenting his power. But the son was not less governed by ambition than the father;

^f Lud. Guicciardin. lib. ii. p. 128. Pallavicini Istoria di Concilio di Trento, lib. xi. c. 15. Thuanus, lib. vii. ab initio. Extrait des lettres de Marillac au Roy de France en Ribier, July 22, 1550.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

7

Book I.

father; and readily consented, at the age of twenty-six, to marry a princess of thirty-seven, disagreeable in her temper and manners, homely in her person, and entirely destitute of every female charm^s.

WHEN Charles found that Philip was not averse from the marriage, he immediately dispatched a messenger to the court of London to propose it; and Mary hesitated not a moment in declaring her consent. Philip's bigotry, which made him unamiable in the eyes of others, recommended him to her. She was ever strongly attached to her mother's family; and she considered how much so powerful an alliance would enable her to execute her favourite scheme of extirpating heresy from her dominions.

MARY's subjects had not the same reasons with their sovereign to make them fond of this alliance. They had beheld, for more than thirty years, that restless ambition with which the emperor was actuated: and they now received a striking proof of Philip's inordinate thirst after power, by his agreeing so readily to the intended marriage, to which there was nothing but motives of ambition that could allure him. Besides, they were acquainted with his private character, and the prejudices which his haughty demeanour had, a few years before, created against him in Germany and the Netherlands. They dreaded the consequences of having their queen, whose temper was naturally rigid and severe, united to a prince of so imperious a character. They trembled at the thoughts of the danger to which their liberty and independence would be exposed; and they were filled with the most disquieting apprehensions of falling under the dominion of the Spaniards; a nation noted for their violent use of power in the Netherlands and Italy, infamous for the barbarities which they had exercised over the natives of America, and distinguished, above all other

Objections
of the Eng-
lish against
it.

Book I. other nations in Europe, for their bigoted attachment to the church of Rome^h.

Charles labours to remove them.

To quiet these alarms, Charles had recourse to different expedients. He prevailed on Mary to suspend her persecution of the Protestants; and to resume the title of Supreme Head of the Church, which she had laid aside some months before. He sent over immense sums of money to be distributed among the members of parliament; and he ordered the marriage articles to be drawn in terms the most honourable and advantageous to Mary and her subjects.

By these articles it was provided, that Philip should have only the name of King, while the sovereign power should remain entire in the hands of Mary; that no foreigner should be admitted into any public employment; no innovation made in the laws and customs, and no violation offered to the rights and privileges of the nation; that England should not, in consequence of the marriage, be involved in any war between France and Spain; that the heirs of the marriage should not only inherit the Netherlands and England, but, in the event of Don Carlos's dying without issue, should succeed to the crown of Spain, and to the rest of Philip's hereditary dominions; and that if the queen should die without issue, Philip should have no claim to any share in the government of England, but the crown of that kingdom should devolve immediately to the lawful heirⁱ.

His success. THESE concessions were not altogether without effect. They did not indeed entirely dispel the apprehensions that were entertained; and many persons thought that the more advantageous the conditions offered were, there was so much the greater reason for suspecting that Charles and his son had no serious intention to fulfil

^h Burnet's Ref. part ii. p. 284; and Carte, vol. ii. p. 297.

ⁱ Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. part ii. b. ii. p. 260. Carte, b. xvii.

fil them. But they furnished the courtiers, and other partisans of the Spanish match, with specious arguments in its defence: and deprived those who still remained averse from it, of any plausible pretext under which they might have procured an association against it. This was attempted by Sir Thomas Wiat and others, who succeeded so far, as to persuade several hundreds of the people to take up arms; but this inconsiderable and ill-concerted insurrection was quickly suppressed, and served only to confirm that power of the queen to dispose of herself in marriage, which the malcontents intended to have controuled ^k.

EVERY obstacle being removed, and the articles of marriage ratified by parliament, Mary now employed herself in preparing for the reception of her future husband; for whom, although she had never seen him, she had conceived so violent a passion, as filled her mind with the most anxious impatience for his arrival. She was, at the same time, extremely mortified with his coldness towards her; and complained, that, although she had so readily consented to bestow upon him both her kingdom and herself, he had never vouchsafed to write her a letter on the subject, or to satisfy her as to the causes of his delay in coming to England. At length he sent the marquis De las Navas to inform her that every thing was in readiness for his leaving Spain. But before his departure, the Spanish historians relate, that, having visited the shrine of St. Jago in Galicia, he there heard mass with much devotion; kneeling on the ground, without allowing the monks to furnish him with a cushion; and recommending himself to the protection of the patron saint ^l.

HE set sail from Corunna, in the beginning of Philip's
July, one thousand five hundred and fifty-four, arrival in
and arrived at Southampton, after a prosperous England.
voyage,

^k Burnet, p. 262. Carte.

^l Carte, b. xvii. p. 312. Cabrera, lib. i. c. 4.

Book I. voyage, on the 19th or 20th of the same month. In a few days after his arrival, the marriage ceremony was performed at Winchester; where Philip received, from the emperor's ambassador, the investiture of Naples, Sicily, and Milan, together with the titular kingdom of Jerusalem; all which Charles resigned to him on this occasion, as a testimony of the joy and satisfaction which the marriage afforded him, and in order to render his son a husband more worthy of his royal spouse ^m.

His behaviour and manners,

HAVING brought with him a numerous train of Spanish nobility, Philip studied to dazzle the eyes of the English, by the pomp and splendour of his public appearances, and to gain their affections by his liberality. But he could not, with all his endeavours, hide the blemishes of his character. His natural reserve and haughtiness still appeared in all his demeanour. He was too much a Spaniard to relish any thing that was not Spanish. He could, on no occasion, comply with the manners of the English. He suffered even the chief nobility to remain in his presence without taking any notice of them; allowed no person to approach him without having previously obtained permission; and thus made himself difficult of access, even to those whose favour he wished to conciliate or secure ⁿ.

He discovers his ambitious views.

It soon appeared, how little he was satisfied with that article of his marriage-treaty, by which he was excluded from the government. At his desire, and in order to gain his affections, which Mary regarded more than either the interest of her people, or even her own importance in the kingdom, she requested of the parliament to declare him the presumptive

^m Burnet's Ref. p. ii. b. ii. Carte, b. xvii. p. 313. Summonte Hist. di Napoli, libro 9no, p. 263.

ⁿ Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. v. ii. p. 288. Carte, b. xvii. p. 313.

"His carriage," says Bishop Burnet, "was such, that the acting him and his Spaniards was one of the great diversions of queen Elizabeth's court."

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

11

sumptive heir of the crown, and to commit the administration of the state into his hands. Book I.

BOTH houses had hitherto shewn themselves extremely obsequious to her will ; but they saw now the necessity of putting an end to their compliances. They easily perceived the spirit and tendency of her demands, and considered them as an indubitable proof of her determined purpose to gratify her husband's ambition, without regard to the fatal consequences that might follow. They rejected both her requests. Although they had consented to Philip's bearing the title of king, they would not agree to the ceremony of his coronation ; and they obstinately refused to assist the emperor in the war which he was carrying on against France °.

To overcome the prejudices, which, from this conduct of the parliament, Philip perceived were entertained against him, he resolved to curb his natural disposition, and to assume the appearance of moderation. With this design, he obtained from Mary the release of several persons of distinction, whom she had thrown into prison, on suspicion of their dissatisfaction to her government. But there was no part of his conduct better calculated to conciliate the favour of the English, than his protection of the lady Elizabeth ; against whom Mary had given such proofs of jealousy and resentment, as rendered the life of that princess of importance to the nation. It was unfortunate, however, for Philip, that the favour which he showed towards Elizabeth admitted of an interpretation very different from what he expected would have been put upon it. Men were not inclined to ascribe to generosity, in a prince of his interested character, an action to which he must have been prompted by this political consideration, that if Elizabeth were cut off, and Mary to die without issue, England would

Book I. would be inherited by the queen of Scots : by whose marriage with the Dauphin, both the crowns of Scotland and of England would be united to that of France ^p.

Persecution
of the Pro-
testants.

MARY had, in order to ingratiate herself with the people, and to advance the views of her husband, suspended her persecution of the Reformers. But her zeal and bigotry were too violent to be long restrained ; and Philip was not inclined, either from principle or temper, to oppose those sanguinary measures which she was now determined to pursue. Courts no less arbitrary than the Spanish Inquisition were instituted, and the same barbarous punishments, which that tribunal denounces, were inflicted on great numbers of persons, without distinction either of age or sex. No person doubted that Mary was of herself sufficiently prone to employ those dreadful severities which were exercised ; but as all men knew how implicitly she was devoted to her husband's will, they could not help considering them as the consequence either of his advice or his approbation ^q. Philip was sensible of the odium to which he was exposed ; and, in order to remove or lessen it, he had recourse to the ridiculous expedient of making his confessor, a Franciscan friar, deliver before him, a sermon in favour of toleration ^r. But notwithstanding this artifice, which was too gross to impose upon any person, and though Philip seldom appeared openly to act a part in the administration, the prepossessions against him still

^p Burnet, vol. ii. b. ii. p. 287. Carte, p. 316. Camden's Apparatus. ^q Philip's Historian Cabrera ascribes the persecutions to Philip as matter of praise, p. 29. lib. i. c. 7.

^r This sermon was delivered on the 10th of February ; yet, on the 24th of May following, Philip joined with Mary, upon occasion of Bonner's declining to take all the odium of the persecution upon himself, in writing to that brutal prelate, requiring him to proceed in the execution of the laws against Heretics ; so as that, through his good furtherance, both God's glory may be the better advanced, and the commonwealth the more quietly governed. Burnet's Collection of Records, No. 20.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

13

Book I.

still remained. All his conduct was beheld with an eye of watchful jealousy and distrust; nor was it possible for Mary to obtain any higher concession from the parliament in his favour, than this, that if she should die, and leave issue behind her, Philip should be protector during the minority.

For several months, this concession was not deemed so insignificant as it afterwards proved. A belief prevailed throughout the kingdom, that Mary was with child, and Philip, and even Mary herself, believed it *. Philip remained in England while there was any reason to entertain hopes of so desirable an event; which might have realised that power at which he had aspired ever since his arrival in the kingdom. But when those appearances, which gave rise to the belief of Mary's pregnancy, were found to be nothing but the approach of a dropsy; when all prospect of her ever having children was annihilated, and her anxiety for offspring, joined with her natural sourness and jealousy, had preyed upon her health, and rendered her person, as well as her conversation, disagreeable; Philip left England, after having staid in it fourteen months, and passed over to the Netherlands †.

THERE the emperor was preparing to execute a resolution which he had formed of resigning his dominions, in order to pass the remainder of his life in retirement. At the time of Philip's marriage with the queen of England, he had ceded to him the kingdom of Naples, and the dutchy of Milan; and had little reason to be satisfied with his son's behaviour

The emperor's resignation of his dominions.

* On the 30th of April, a report was spread that she was actually delivered of a son. All the bells in London were set a-ringing. Bonfires were lighted up in every corner of the city. A Te Deum was sung in the cathedral of St. Paul's; and a priest indulged his credulity to such a height as to describe, with great particularity, the proportions and features of the young prince, whom he represented as the healthiest and most beautiful that had been ever seen. Carte, p. 317.

† Haræus, Carte, p. 317. Burnet, part ii. b. ii. p. 312.

Book I. behaviour towards him, after giving so strong a proof of his paternal affection and munificence. Philip, besides refusing to come over to Flanders, where Charles was desirous of seeing him, unless he were clothed with some authority in that country, during his abode in it, insisted, that the grant of the Italian States should be absolute and unconditional ; and no sooner had he entered upon the possession of them, than he displaced his father's ministers, in order to make room for creatures of his own. This undutiful behaviour of his son did not deter the emperor from resolving to resign to him all the rest of his dominions. On the contrary, it appears to have been his principal motive in forming this resolution ; as it gave him a clear discovery of Philip's imperious temper, and shewed that he had now reduced himself to the disagreeable alternative, of either contending with his son, or of yielding to him ".

HAD Charles enjoyed the same vigour, either of body or mind, which he possessed some years before, it is probable that Philip's behaviour would have operated upon him very differently, and have determined him to abridge, rather than augment, his son's power. But finding himself worn out, partly by the excruciating pain which he had long suffered from frequent returns of the gout, and partly by his incessant activity, and continual application to business, he perceived that he must, for the future, either trust to his ministers, which he had hitherto avoided ; or sink ere long under the weight of the government of so many States as were subject to his dominion. It was therefore become necessary for him to disengage himself from, at least, a part of those cares which oppressed him. If his son's ambition had been more moderate, or his temper of mind more complying, Charles might have invested him with the chief branches of administration,

* L' Evesque, p. 24, 25. Summonte, lib. ix. p. 263.

nistration, and have still retained the supreme authority ; or, after resigning to him the sovereignty of a part of his dominions, he might have reserved the remainder in his own hands ; but he foresaw, that Philip's temper would, in either of these cases, have proved the source of continual uneasiness to him ; and this he could not, with dignity, avoid by any other means, than by retiring from the world, and making an absolute cession of his whole dominions *.

DETERMINED by these motives, he resigned the sovereignty of the Low Countries in October 1555, and that of Spain in the month of January immediately following. But he retained possession of his Imperial crown for several months longer, till he had made another fruitless attempt to persuade his brother to relinquish his claim to the empire, in behalf of Philip. Charles was retiring from the world under a conviction of the vanity of human greatness, yet he was as solicitous to secure an accession of that greatness to his son, as if he had believed that it constituted the supreme felicity of man. His own experience had furnished him with the strongest proof, that dominions so widely extended, conferred the appearance of power more than the substance or reality ; that they are the source of continual and distracting anxiety ; that they engage the possessor in enterprises beyond his strength, and that the right government of them is a task above the capacity of any individual : yet he desired nothing so much, as to load his son with that burden, which he himself had found intolerable, and under which he had sunk long before the period when old age obliges men to quit the scenes of active life. Charles had long fostered that preposterous ambition of princes, which prompts them to the pursuit of power, without regard to the great end for which alone it is desirable, the happiness

* Ribier, p. 485.

Book I. pinefs of their fubjects : and it was become impoffible for him entirely to divest himfelf of this paffion, although he was determined never more to indulge it.

The truce of
Vaucelles.

WITH refpect to another part of his conduct at this time, it is much eafier to enter into the motives from which he acted. Previously to his abdication, he had been exceedingly defirous to have peace eftablifhed with France, in order to give his fon leifure to recover his dominions from that exhausted ftate to which his own continual wars, together with the fums tranfmitted to England, had reduced them. In this, however, all his attempts had hitherto failed. But, having been detained in the Low Countries by the feverity of the feafon, and his bodily diftreff, much longer than he intended, he had the fatisfaction, before his departure, to employ his endeavours fuccefffully in effectuating the truce of Vaucelles : and, before the expiration of that truce, there was ground to hope, that the feveral points of difference between his fon and the French monarch, would be amicably adjusted. Soon after this, he fet out for his retreat in Spain : where, having buried, in the folitude of a convent, all his fchemes of glory and ambition, he feldom inquired, or even fuffered his domeftics to inform him, concerning what was paffing in the world :

’ Gianone, tom. iv. p. 198.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK II.

NOTWITHSTANDING Charles was disappointed in his scheme of transmitting the empire to his son, Philip was still the most powerful monarch of the age. In Europe, besides the united kingdoms of Castile, Arragon, and Navarre, he possessed the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, the dutchy of Milan, Franche-Compte, and the Netherlands; in Africa, Tunis, Oran, the Cape-Verd, and the Canary Islands; in Asia, the Philippine and Sunda Islands, and a part of the Moluccas; and in America, the empires of Peru and Mexico, New Spain and Chili, besides Hispaniola, Cuba, and many other of the American islands. The mines of Mexico, Chili, and Potosi, were, at the time of Philip's accession, a source of greater wealth than almost all the other princes in Europe were possessed of^a. His fleet was much more numerous than that of any other European power. His troops were better disciplined, and more accustomed


BOOK II.
Philip's
power and
dominions.

VOL. I.

C

tomed

^a They brought him 25,000,000 of guilders yearly. Meteren.

BOOK II.  **tomed to war and victory : and they were commanded by the ablest, and most experienced generals of the age.**

SUCH extensive power, and such copious resources, could not but appear extremely formidable to the other European States ; especially when they reflected upon the dark, imperious character of the prince to whom they belonged. For although Philip had neither his father's valour, nor his enterprising activity, yet he was plodding, industrious, and penetrating. He had already shewn that his ambition was not less ardent than that of the emperor ; and it was the more to be dreaded, as it was concealed under the cloak of fervent zeal for the interest of religion.

**State of
Europe.**

**Of Eng-
land.**

BUT how much soever Philip's power and character were fitted to excite jealousy in the neighbouring states, there were few of them, at this period, in a condition to counteract his designs. The English had, since Mary's accession, lost much of that importance in Europe, which they had enjoyed for half a century before. Commerce was either neglected, or oppressed ; their troops were undisciplined, and refused to war ; and their navy was in the most languishing condition. During Philip's residence among them, they had given proof of their native spirit of independence, by refusing to admit him to any share of the administration ; but they had, in every thing else, shewn themselves tamely submissive to the will of their weak, bigoted queen : and there was ground to apprehend, that, instead of opposing him, they would be compelled by her to support him, in the pursuit of any violent measures in which his ambition or bigotry might engage him.

**Of Germa-
ny.**

HE had no greater reason to expect opposition from Germany than from England. For whatever disgust his competition with Ferdinand for the Imperial

perial crown might have created, there was no probability that it would ever occasion any violent dissension, or open rupture between them. Ferdinand was not yet fully settled in the possession of Hungary. He was disquieted with apprehensions that the Sultan would ere long renew hostilities against him in that kingdom; and, in order to provide against this event, and secure to himself that support, of which, in case it should happen, he would stand in need, he laboured assiduously to establish concord among the several princes of the Germanic body, and to compose the animosities which the differences in religion had produced.

PORTUGAL had, at this time, reached the summit of its prosperity and glory. Those discoveries and conquests in the most distant regions of the globe, which had advanced that kingdom to a rank so much superior to what it held before, were almost completed. But John the Third, under whose government and auspices so great a number of discoveries and conquests had been made, was now in the decline of life; beloved by his people; respected by his neighbours; and only solicitous to maintain peace, and to render his subjects happy.

THE thrones of Denmark and Sweden were filled by Christiern the Third and Gustavus Erickson. Under the just and mild administration of the former monarch, Denmark was beginning to recover from that exhausted state to which civil dissensions, the calamities of foreign war, and the oppression of an odious tyrant lately dethroned, had reduced it: while the Swedes, who, under Gustavus, had thrown off the yoke of the neighbouring kingdom, and bestowed their crown upon their brave deliverer, were enjoying under him the sweets of liberty, and laying the foundation of that greatness to which they afterwards attained. Neither of these nations, however, were yet in a condition to take a part in the affairs of the other European powers; and the

patriotic princes who ruled over them, found sufficient employment in establishing tranquillity within their kingdoms.

Of the
Pope's do-
minions.

IN Italy, the dominions of the church, lately much diminished by the grant which Paul the Third had made of the dutchies of Parma and Placentia to Octavio Farnese his grandson, were shut up between the dutchy of Milan on the one hand, and the kingdom of Naples on the other. The sovereign pontiff, therefore, was more dependent on Philip, than upon any other prince, and was much more likely to find his interest in courting that monarch's favour, than in promoting any scheme of opposition to his designs.

Tuscany.

COSMO de Medici, duke of Tuscany, had been greatly indebted to the late emperor for the sovereignty which he enjoyed; and his dominions were, by the emperor's favour and his own wise policy, become so considerable, that only the viceroy of Naples, or the governor of Milan, could give him any just ground of uneasiness. Both gratitude and interest seemed to call on that political prince to attach himself to the king of Spain, and to cultivate his friendship.

Savoy, Parma, and Placentia.

OCTAVIO de Farnese, duke of Parma, had been deprived of the dutchy of Placentia by the emperor; and Philibert Emanuel, duke of Savoy, had been stripped, in his father's lifetime, both of Savoy and Piedmont, by the French. Without the favour of Philip, neither of these two princes had any prospect of recovering his dominions.

Venice.

THE republic of Venice, formerly so powerful and ambitious, had, after the league of Cambray, discovered the folly of their ambition; and they now adhered stedfastly to the cautious maxim, of maintaining a strict neutrality in all the quarrels of the European powers; whose friendship, and especially that

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

21

that of Philip, they were solicitous to secure, as the Book II.
only means by which the invasions of their formidable enemy, the Turkish Sultan, could be repelled.

FROM this view of the European States at the Of France.
time of Philip's accession, it is evident there was no other counterpoise in Christendom to his power, but France: which was not indeed of so great extent as Philip's dominions, but possessed such advantages in its situation, in its people, and in its government, as made it at least the second kingdom in Europe, and qualified it to serve as a rampart of the general liberty, against the power of Spain. Although the frontier of this mighty monarchy did not reach so far as it does at present, yet it extended from the British Channel to the Mediterranean and Italy, and from the Pyrenees to Germany and the Netherlands; and, through all that space, was unmixt with the territories of any other state; lying between Philip's dominions in Spain or Italy, and the Netherlands; and in the time of war, rendering it difficult for his troops in one of these countries, to co-operate with those in the other.

DURING the reigns of several princes, the French Character
of the
French.
nation had been accustomed almost perpetually to the use of arms, and had never become sufficiently acquainted either with the arts, or with the sweets of peace, to be averse from war. The spirit of chivalry, the heroic valour, and romantic love of military fame, which, whilst the feudal government subsisted, proved the source of so many calamities to the kingdom, still animated in a high degree the French nobility; but having taken a different direction, instead of engaging them in hostilities against one another, it inflamed them with the laudable ambition of courting toil and danger in support of the glory of the nation and the crown.

HENRY the Second, who governed this warlike Henry II.
people, had already shewn himself possessed of no
inconsiderable

BOOK II. inconsiderable share of that ardent and ambitious spirit by which his father was so eminently distinguished. He had not indeed the bold military genius of Francis; but this defect in his character was abundantly supplied by his generals; among whom were the mareschal de Brisac, the conqueror of Piedmont; the constable Montmorency, so much celebrated for his heroic valour, and Francis of Lorraine duke of Guise, who had lately acquired immortal honour by his defence of Metz against the emperor.

His allies. HENRY was formidable, from his connexions with foreign powers, as well as on account of his internal resources. The queen of Scots having been educated at his court, and betrothed to his eldest son, her kingdom was likely to become a province of France. And, in imitation of his father, he had courted assiduously the friendship of the Swiss, and entered into a strict alliance with the Sultan; from the former of whom, he might, in case of a rupture with Spain, receive assistance by land, as he could, from the latter, by sea, on the coasts of Spain and Italy.

It appeared almost from the beginning of Henry's reign, that he had thoroughly imbibed his father's passions, his ambition to recover possession of those Italian dominions which had occasioned so many bloody wars, and his jealousy of the Spanish or Austrian power and greatness.

PROMPTED by these passions, he had, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-one, taken Octavio Farnese, duke of Parma, under his protection, in opposition both to the pope and to the emperor. And he had entered into a league against Charles, with the Protestant princes in Germany: than which, he could not have given a stronger demonstration of his jealousy of the emperor; since the principal end of this alliance was, to save from ruin in Germany, that religion, the professors of which he had persecuted in France with unrelenting rigour.

The

The war which was the consequence of this alliance, continued with various success, till a stop was put to it, for a few months, by the truce of Vaucelles above mentioned. By this truce the contending parties were to retain possession of their conquests for five years, unless their respective claims were adjusted before the expiration of that term. This was the principal article; and, in virtue of it, not only Metz and Toul and Verdun, which rendered France secure on the German frontier, but almost the whole of Savoy and Piedmont, (the restoration of which the emperor was in honour bound to procure to the duke of Savoy) were to remain in the hands of the French. Charles would never have consented to this condition, which he had rejected when it was proposed in the preceding year, had he not thought it necessary that his son should enjoy some years of peace. Henry, on the other hand, had the highest reason to be satisfied; yet it was by him the truce was violated. Into this measure, of which he had much reason afterwards to repent, he was drawn, partly by that hereditary ambition, which had possessed so many of his predecessors to gain a footing in Italy, and partly by the interested counsels of the family of Guise; but chiefly by the solicitations and importunity of the sovereign pontiff.

PAUL the Fourth, one of the most singular characters of the age, and whose conduct furnished, at this time, a striking contrast to that of the emperor, had been lately advanced to the papacy; after having passed the greatest part of his life either in the study of the learned languages and scholastic theology, or in the austerities of a cloister. Born of the family of Caraffa in the kingdom of Naples, he had in his youth enjoyed several rich preferments, and been employed as a nuncio in Naples, in Spain, and in England. But having grown tired of this public life, he had relinquished the paths of ambition; resigned his benefices; instituted an order
of

Book II. of Monks, and lived, for several years, in strict conformity to the rigid rules which he prescribed them. Paul the Third with difficulty persuaded him to quit his retirement, and accept of the dignity of cardinal: nor would he have been induced to comply with the pope's request, by any other motive, but the hope of contributing towards the extirpation of the Lutheran heresy; against which he had ever shewn the most furious and bigoted zeal. He was the oldest cardinal when Marcellus died; and this circumstance served not a little to promote his election; as it flattered the other competitors with the prospect of seeing, ere long, another vacancy in the papal chair.

BUT his advanced age had given him neither moderation nor prudence, nor any useful acquaintance with the world. He talked perpetually of the power belonging to the successor of St. Peter, and his superiority to princes, in terms that might have been suffered in the dark ages of the church, but which, from the revolution mens sentiments had lately undergone, appeared, even to his courtiers themselves, ridiculous and extravagant. In all his demeanour he discovered a degree of haughtiness, that astonished those who observed it; and he began his pontificate at the age of seventy-nine, with an impetuosity and violence seldom to be met with in the ardour of youth^b.

His nephews.

HE had long held a distinguished character for sanctity of manners, and disinterested zeal for the honour of the Holy see; but having now attained the highest dignity to which he could aspire, and having no longer any reason to disguise his sentiments, he devoted himself, with a blind attachment, to his nephews, and seemed to have no other aim, in the exercise of his pontifical power, than to advance their interests, and assist them

^b F. Paul. lib. v. Onuphrii Panvini vita Pauli IV. Thuan. lib. xv. c. 12. Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. part ii. b. ii.

in the execution of their ambitious designs. Unfortunately for the peace of Europe, their ambition could not be satisfied with the dignities, which, as supreme pontiff, he had the power of conferring; although he bestowed on count Montorio, his eldest nephew, the dukedom of Palliano, of which he had violently dispossessed Mark Antony Colonna; on the second, the government of Rome, with the county of Bagno, and the title of marquis of Montebello; and had made the youngest a cardinal, and legate of Bologna. But these men aspired at some sovereign or independent establishment, such as had been procured by Leo and Clement, for the Medici; and by Paul the Third, for the family of Farnese. They saw no other means of accomplishing their design, but by dispossessing the emperor and his son of their Italian dominions: and to attempt this, both Paul and his nephews were incited by motives of resentment, as well as interest. The younger Caraffa, formerly a soldier, and one of the knights of Malta, though now a cardinal, having, when he served in the emperor's army in Germany, challenged a Spanish officer to single combat, Charles had put him under arrest; and afterwards, when the pope had conferred on him the priory of St. Jerom in Naples, the emperor's viceroy had prevented him from entering upon the possession of it^c.

PAUL himself, during his residence as nuncio in Spain, having acquired the esteem of Ferdinand the Catholic, had been admitted by him into the council of state, and had retained his place there after the accession of Charles. But having, on some occasion, spoken with too much freedom in the consistory at Rome, Charles had testified his displeasure with him, by ordering his name to be struck out of the list of counsellors. Not satisfied with this, he had first opposed his being admitted to

^c Pallavicini, p. 60. Father Paul, lib. v.

Book II. to the archbishopric of Naples, to which Paul the Third had presented him, and afterwards, though Charles was persuaded by Julius the Third to consent to his investiture, yet he had molested him in the exercise of his jurisdiction; and had exerted all his influence in the conclave to prevent his advancement to the papal throne ^d.

THESE injuries made a deep impression on the proud and fiery temper of the pontiff; nor was he solicitous to conceal his indignation. Even in the presence of the cardinals of the Imperial party, he used to inveigh bitterly against the emperor, and to join menaces to his invectives; and would sometimes add, that they might inform their master, if they pleased, of what he said.

Their artifices.

It is probable, however, that he would not have dreamt of having recourse to arms, had not his nephews, and particularly the cardinal, the most ambitious and intriguing, employed various artifices to deceive him. They gave him information of nocturnal assemblies held in Rome, by the partisans of the emperor, in which, measures were concerted prejudicial to his authority; they informed him of a detection which they had made, of persons hired by the emperor, to poison, or assassinate both him and them; and they carried him intercepted letters writ in cypher, from which, according to the cardinal's interpretation, it appeared, that some secret machinations were in agitation against him among the Imperial ministers.

By these and other means of the same nature, they at once roused his fears, and inflamed his resentment; and he at length resolved, in conformity with their advice, to endeavour to engage the French king, whose war with the emperor still subsisted,

^d Summonte, lib. x. p. 269. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 14. F. Paul, lib. v.

sisted, to enter into a treaty of alliance with him Book II.
against the common enemy.

HAVING, with this view, called such of his courtiers as he confided in, to a secret conference, at which he desired the French ambassador, Avanson, to be present; he informed them of the several plots against him and his nephews, which had fortunately been detected, and lamented that, notwithstanding it had pleased God to appoint him to be the common father of Christians, yet his children, by conspiring to accomplish his destruction, had reduced him to the painful necessity of taking arms against them, in order to maintain that sacred dignity with which he was invested. And he concluded with saying, that his hopes of deliverance from the dangers which threatened him and the church, were founded principally on the power and zeal of his most Christian Majesty.

AVANSON replied to this discourse, by assuring him that the king and kingdom of France would be ready to devote themselves to the defence of his sacred person, and the Apostolic See; and Paul dismissed the assembly, after observing that he hoped ere long to see *one* of the king's sons in possession of Naples, and another, of the dutchy of Milan.

CARAFFA the cardinal, impatient of delay, immediately set on foot a treaty between his uncle and Avanson; and having, without much difficulty, brought it to a conclusion, he transmitted it to the court of France.

THE most important articles were these, That the king of France should take upon himself the protection

* From this treaty it is evident, that however solicitous Paul was to advance the ambitious and interested views of his nephews, he was not entirely under their direction, nor altogether regardless of the interest of the Holy See. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 15.

Book II. protection of the pope, and all the family of Caraffa : that the pope should furnish an army of 10,000 men ; and the king the same, or a greater number, if necessary, to co-operate with the ecclesiastical forces, in restoring liberty to Tuscany, and in expelling the Imperialists and Spaniards the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily. And that, in case their arms should be attended with success, the pope should immediately grant the investiture of these kingdoms to a younger son of the French monarch ; reserving for the Ecclesiastical State, the city of Benevento, with its territory, and an annual tribute of 20,000 crowns ; besides an independent establishment, in the kingdom of Naples, of 25,000 crowns, for the count Montorio ; and another of 15,000 for Antonio de Caraffa ^f.

THIS treaty met with such a reception at the court of France, as Avanson had given reason to expect. Henry was allured by the prospect which it opened to him of acquiring those Italian dominions, for which his predecessors had so often contended ; and was of himself strongly inclined to comply with the pope's proposals. The constable Montmorency, ever bold, and often rash in action, but in counsel provident, circumspect, and cautious, employed several cogent arguments to dissuade him ; and was warmly seconded by the cardinal of Tournon.

THEY observed, that, as the emperor was about to resign his dominions, it was highly probable, that either a peace, or a truce with Spain, might soon be established ; they represented how pernicious all those enterprises in Italy had been, which Henry's ancestors had undertaken, in circumstances much more favourable than the present, when the nation was exhausted by a long succession of expensive wars. And they endeavoured to convince him of the imprudence of unnecessarily prolonging

^f Summonte, lib. x. p. 278.

ngoing war with a prince possessed of so many resources as the emperor, depending on the feeble aid of a pope, at the age of eighty ; after whose death, those very forces on which he now relied, might probably be ranged on the side of the enemy.

HENRY, who had been long accustomed to pay the highest deference to the constable's opinion, would have yielded to these arguments, had they not been warmly opposed by the duke of Guise, and his brother the cardinal of Lorraine ; who flattered the king's ambition, and thereby obtained an easy victory on this occasion over their rival. Whether there was ground for the suspicions which were entertained, that Guise had formed a design on the kingdom of Naples, and the cardinal on the papal throne, it is impossible to decide ; but, from the interested and ambitious characters of these men, there is reason to believe, that neither a regard to the welfare of France, nor the glory of the king, determined them to offer the counsel which they gave. They knew that the management of the war, and the conduct of all the negotiations relative to it, would be put into their hands ; and they hoped, if the event were prosperous, to enjoy in Italy, a more independent authority than they could expect to exercise in France, where they must submit to perpetual controul from the presence of the king, or from their rivals in the court.

“ So fair an opportunity, said the cardinal, of recovering those dominions in Italy, which the crown of Spain has usurped, ought not to be neglected. It was from the sovereign pontiff, that the French monarchs had originally received their title to the Neapolitan kingdom ; and it would not be difficult for the king to assert his claim with the assistance of the present pope, whose family would, by their credit and influence, engage the friends of France to stand forth in defence of a cause which their ancestors

BOOK II. ral council. But the real design of Caraffa's embassy was, to persuade Henry to fulfil the conditions of that alliance with the pope, into which he had entered some months before ^h.

REBIBA was purposely detained in Rome for several weeks ; but Caraffa, having carried along with him mareschal Strozzi, a kinsman of the queen of France, proceeded in his journey to Paris with the utmost expedition. He possessed, in an eminent degree, the art and eloquence necessary for executing the difficult negociation which he had undertaken. And it was not without good reason, that the pontiff, when he reflected on his nephew's talents, still flattered himself with hopes of success.

His nephew
persuades
Henry to
violate the
truce.

UPON his arrival at Fountainbleau, Caraffa found the courtiers divided, as formerly, with regard to the subject of his embassy. When Henry first entered into alliance with the pope, the constable was suspected of having too faintly opposed it ; not from any doubt which he entertained of its expediency, but, either from the faithless compliance of a courtier to the inclinations of the king ; or from a desire to have his rivals of the family of Guise removed to a distance from the court. But whatever ground there was for this suspicion, it is certain that Montmorency had been the chief promoter of the truce of Vaucelles ; and that he now shewed himself extremely averse from that shameful violation of it, which Caraffa had come to solicit.

THE duke of Guise, on the other hand, and his brother the cardinal, were still as much bent on the Italian war as ever ; and made no more scruple to exhort their master to undertake it, after he had sworn to observe the truce with the emperor, than they had done formerly, when he was at liberty, consistently with his honour, either to embrace or reject it.

BETWEEN

^a Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 16.

BETWEEN the opposite counfels which were given him, the unftable mind of Henry remained for feveral days in fufpenfe. Elated with the fuccefs which had hitherto attended his arms, and inflamed with the ambition of acquiring the Neapolitan kingdom, he was inclined to a renewal of the war, and withheld his confent from it, only out of refpect for his oath, and his deference to the opinion of the conftable. At length Caraffa having gained over the queen, through the influence of Strozzi; and the Guifes having employed the ftill more powerful interceffion of the dutchefs of Valentinois¹, Henry began to yield to the importunity of fuch powerful folicitors, and admitted Caraffa to a private audience, which he had requested, in the hopes of completing that victory over the conftable's remonftrances, and the king's remaining fcruples, which his affiliates had begun. On this occafion, having, with the ufual ceremony, prefented to the king, a confecrated fword, he remonftrated to him, at great length, on the breach of his engagements with the pontiff; and when he found that Henry was not offended with this freedom, he next addreffed himfelf to his ambition, and reprefented, that a more favourable juncture than the prefent could not be defired for attempting to expel the Spaniards from Italy. That the reins of government were now abandoned by the emperor, and committed to his fon; who, befides his inexperience, was extremely unacceptable to the Italian ftates and princes, and was not yet firmly eftablifhed on his throne. That his exchequer was drained by thofe expenfive wars in which the emperor had been almoft continually engaged; and his armies were neither fo numerous nor fo flourifhing as at any former period fince the commencement of his father's reign. While, on the other hand, the French army would have eafy accefs to Naples, through the territories of the pope; and would thence likewise be furnifhed, both with fresh

VOL. I.

D

troops,

¹ The famous Diana of Poitiers, Henry's miftrefs.

BOOK II. troops, and with abundant supplies of ammunition
 and provisions.

HENRY found it difficult any longer to withhold his consent. But there were two points on which he required still farther satisfaction, than either Caraffa's arguments or promises had given him. He could not entirely divest himself of the scruples which arose from his oath; and nothing offered by Caraffa had taken off the force of the constable's objection against entering into engagements with a pope in the extremity of old age, who, it was likely, would die before the end of the proposed alliance could be accomplished. Caraffa had foreseen both these difficulties, and was prepared to remove them. He produced from Paul a power to absolve Henry from the obligation of his oath; he engaged that such a number of cardinals, partisans of France, and enemies to Spain, should be nominated at the next promotion, as would secure to Henry the absolute disposal of the papacy, in the event of the pontiff's death; and, for his further security, he promised, in all events, that Bologna, Ancona, Paliano, Civita-Vecchia, and even the castle of St. Angelo, should be put into his possession.

THE war was now resolved upon without further hesitation. Caraffa immediately dispatched a messenger to Rebiba, who, according to his instructions, was advancing by slow journeys towards Brussels, to inform him of what had passed, and to desire him to return to Rome. Henry received absolution in form from the obligation of that sacred law of Nature which enjoins the observance of an oath; and, at the same time, he received a dispensation from a law of nations, considered as no less sacred, by which it was held to be unchristian and barbarous to begin hostilities without a previous declaration of war^k.

As

^k Thuanus, lib. xvii. c. 7. Father Paul, lib. v. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 10. p. 71.

As he flattered himself that his transaction with Caraffa might be for some time concealed, he was determined, if possible, to attack the emperor and Philip, while, trusting to the truce, they were off their guard. And thus did this monarch, who was not less virtuous than most of his cotemporary princes, deliberately resolve to add treachery to the perjury and falsehood into which he had been betrayed; under a persuasion that his conduct was not only justifiable, but even honourable, and meritorious in the sight of God and man. Such is the fascinating power of false religion; and so pernicious to society that impious pretension to the power of annulling the sacred obligations of morality, which was claimed by the Roman pontiffs, and which, through the ignorance of their votaries, they were permitted for many ages to enjoy.

CARAFFA had endeavoured to conceal his negotiation at the court of France, under the pretext of treating with the king about the establishment of peace, and the calling of a general council. But the emperor and Philip were too well acquainted with his character, to be so easily deceived. They had penetrated into the real intention of the embassy, and had for some time kept a watchful eye over all the motions both of Henry and the pope.

THE conduct of Paul was extremely ill-calculated to elude the penetration of the Spanish ministers. Besides excommunicating the family of Colonna, and depriving them of their territories, he had treated with much severity and injustice all those whom he suspected of being attached to the Spanish interest; and had received, in the most gracious manner, some Neapolitan exiles, who had fled to Rome. Some of his letters having been intercepted, he had put to the torture Antonio de Tassis postmaster at Rome, though a Spanish subject; and, in violation of a privilege long enjoyed by the kings of Spain,

The violence of Paul,

BOOK II. had given his office to another. He had put under arrest De la Vega, Philip's ambassador at Rome; and, with no small degree of vanity, set on foot a trial in the consistory, against Philip himself, on pretence that, as his liege-lord, he had a right to deprive him of the kingdom of Naples, on account of his having failed in the payment of 700 ducats, which he alleged was an annual tribute due from the possessor of that kingdom to the Holy See ¹.

WHILE Paul gave these impotent proofs of his resentment, his nephews were making diligent preparation for the approaching war. They were employed assiduously in repairing the fortifications of Rome, Paliano, and other places. And, having levied a considerable number of troops, they engaged Camillo Orfini, one of the ablest generals of the age, to command them.

The duke
of Alva.

THE administration of Philip's affairs in Italy was at this time in the hands of Ferdinand de Toledo duke of Alva; a singular and distinguished personage in Philip's reign, whom there will be frequent occasion to mention in the sequel. He was arrogant, vain, and proud; violent, inflexible, and relentless; but patient, prudent, and sagacious; inured from his youth to arms, and possessed of consummate skill in the art of war. He had been intrusted with the supreme command of the emperor's forces in Germany; and, though unsuccessful in the siege of Metz, had discovered uncommon vigour and abilities. He did not, however, enjoy the same degree of credit with the father, which he afterwards attained under the son; whom he nearly resembled in his character, and whose favour he had courted with great assiduity and success. Through the influence of Ruy Gomez de Silva, Philip's principal favourite, who beheld with a jealous eye Alva's growing

¹ Gianone, lib. xxxiii. c. 1. The duke of Alva's letter in Summonte, tom. iv. p. 270. Clement VII. had renounced this claim.

growing favour with the king, and was desirous, on that account, to have him removed to a distance from the helm of government, he had, about a year before, been appointed viceroy of Naples, as well as governor of Milan, and commander in chief of all the Spanish forces in Italy.

PHILIP had been fully informed by Alva, of the pope's conduct with regard to him ; and even before he knew of his alliance with Henry, he could not entertain any doubt of his intentions. Had he permitted Alva to act with vigour, and to improve the advantage over Paul, which his defenceless situation afforded him, he might have got possession of all his fortified places, have deterred Henry from entering into any new connexion with him, and have thereby prevented the renewal of the war. But being convinced that Henry would never violate the truce of Vaucelles, by which he was so great a gainer ; and knowing that the pontiff could do nothing without the assistance of the French, he gave orders to Alva, to use every art of persuasion, before he should have recourse to arms. Alva, though naturally averse from all mild expedients, complied with his instructions ; and, by letters and messengers, complained, remonstrated, and even soothed and flattered both Paul and his nephews. All his endeavours, however, were ineffectual. They still continued their preparations ; and gave him sometimes haughty, and always unsatisfactory replies. At length the duke of Alva sent Pirro de Loffredo, with one letter to the college of cardinals, and another to Paul ^m ; in which, after enumerating the various injuries which his master had received, and renewing his former offers of peace and friendship, he concluded with protesting, that if his offers were again rejected, the pope should be chargeable with all the calamities that might follow. Before the arrival

^m The original letters are preserved by Summonte, lib. x. and dated August 21, 1556.

BOOK II. arrival of Loffredo, Paul had received intelligence from France of the success of the cardinal's negotiation; and the duke of Alva's letter served only to precipitate him into new extravagances. He threw Loffredo into prison, and would even have put him to death, had not the college of cardinals interposedⁿ. He then gave orders to Aldobrandin, the consistorial advocate, to finish the process which he had begun against Philip, on account of his failure in paying tribute for Naples; and, after hearing the cause pleaded, he passed sentence, depriving him of the sovereignty of that kingdom^o.

THIS violent conduct of Paul gave great offence throughout Europe; and, in Italy, served rather to obstruct, than to promote his designs. The Venetians refused to accede to his alliance; and the Neapolitans, perceiving what the ambition of his nephews aimed at, with respect to them, entered warmly into all the prudent measures which the duke of Alva planned for their defence.

Philip's
scruples.

BUT Philip was not so much affected by Paul's extravagant behaviour, as might have been expected from a young, ambitious, powerful monarch, of a temper of mind impatient of injuries and affronts. Notwithstanding the contumelious treatment which he had received, he still continued irresolute, and discovered an amazing reluctance against proceeding to extremities.

SOME historians affirm, that he had early imbibed, from the Spanish ecclesiastics, who had the care of his education, the highest veneration for the Holy See; and entertained some scruples as to the lawfulness of employing force against the sovereign pontiff. Others assert, that these scruples were mere grimace and affectation. He had already formed the

ⁿ Summonte, lib. x. p. 277. Gianone, lib. xxxiii. c. 1.

^o Gianone adds, that he was dissuaded from publishing it by Cameraris of Benevento, the great Civilian, a Neapolitan exile.

the plan of subjecting Europe to his dominion ; and zeal for the Catholic faith was both the pretext and the instrument which he had resolved to employ for accomplishing his design. Book II.

NEITHER of these accounts ought to be entirely rejected ; and neither of them ought to be admitted as satisfactory. On the one hand, it is impossible to doubt that ambition, and not religion, was the ruling principle of Philip's conduct ; and on the other, when we reflect on the pains which were taken, from his earliest infancy, to inspire him with an attachment to the popish faith, and consider how serious and zealous he ever appeared in the profession and support of it ; it will be impossible to suppose, that in religious matters, he was entirely hypocritical. It is improbable that any person could act so uniform a part as Philip did, without feeling, in a considerable degree, the power of that motive which he held forth to the world as the principle of his conduct. Nor does it afford the smallest presumption against this supposition, that his conduct was, on many occasions, inconsistent with religious sincerity. His religion was not surely pure and genuine. It was neither the religion of nature, nor that of Christ, but was the barbarous superstition of the church of Rome, which, in the age of Philip, instead of deterring men from vice, tended to encourage them in the practice of it, by inculcating upon them the highest reverence for an order of priests, supposed to be invested with the power of absolving from the guilt and punishment of the most enormous crimes. To Philip's superstitious veneration for the Holy See, therefore, may be ascribed, in part, both his moderation in the present juncture, and a resolution which he formed, to consult the most distinguished divines, with regard to the lawfulness of waging war against an enemy whose person he deemed so sacred and inviolable.

THOSE

BOOK II. **THOSE** men knew well what counsel was suited to his present circumstances; and they declared, that, although it behoved him to begin with supplicating his Holiness, as the universal father of the church, yet, if his entreaties were rejected, the law of nature would permit him to defend his territories, and to vindicate his right by force of arms ^P.

Alva's military operations.

By this answer, Philip's religious scruples were removed. Still, however, he lamented the necessity he lay under, of beginning his reign with hostilities, against a power, with which, more than with any other, he was desirous of cultivating peace and friendship. But at last, after having lost a great deal of time in negotiating, he sent orders to the duke of Alva to take the field.

1556. **THAT** general, having some time before gone from the dutchy of Milan to the kingdom of Naples, and fixed his head-quarters near the confines of the Ecclesiastical State, began his march in the beginning of September one thousand five hundred and fifty-six, with a well-disciplined army; which, though small in number, was superior to that which the pontiff had provided to oppose it. In a few weeks Alva reduced several towns in the Campagna di Roma; and took possession of them in the name of the sacred college, and of the future pope. The people of Rome were thrown into consternation by his approach; and many families left the city, in order to avoid the calamities of a siege. Paul still retained all his wonted haughtiness, and poured out threats and anathemas against the enemy.

He grants a truce.

BUT the duke of Alva still continued to advance till his troops could make incursions almost to the gates of Rome. In this situation cardinal Caraffa found his uncle's affairs upon his return from France. The army which he had obtained from Henry, had already reached Piedmont; but, being detained there

there by the rigour of the winter, could not arrive BOOK II.
in time to save Rome from falling into the hands of 1556.
the Spaniards. In order to prevent this, Caraffa prevailed on Paul, who, from pride, and ignorance of his danger, was extremely reluctant to apply for a cessation of arms; and Alva, at the request of his uncle, the cardinal of St. James, consented to a conference with Caraffa, in the isle of Fiumicino. He could not be ignorant, that this crafty Italian's intention was only to amuse him till the French army should approach. But an interval of repose was no less expedient for himself, than for the enemy. His army was greatly diminished by putting garrisons into the conquered towns. His ships with provisions had been long detained by contrary winds; and his presence was necessary in Naples, to hasten his levies, and put the kingdom into a posture of defence against the arrival of the duke of Guise. Influenced by these considerations, Alva, readily consented to a truce of forty days; and, immediately after concluding it, he set out for Naples, where he exerted himself, with great assiduity, in completing his preparations for the next campaign.

THE duke of Guise had now passed the Alps, 1557.
with twelve thousand foot, and near two thousand horse, and had advanced as far as Rheggio. There he was met by the duke of Ferrara, who, having acceded to the alliance between the pope and Henry, had brought along with him near seven thousand men. Guise deliberated for some time whether he should begin his operations with laying siege to Cremona, Milan, and other towns in the north of Italy; or, leaving these behind him in the hands of the enemy, should march directly towards Naples. He had been earnestly exhorted by mareschal de Brissac, whom he saw in Piedmont, to embrace the former of these measures, as being the safest and most practicable; and in this opinion the duke of Ferrara concurred; but Guise had received positive orders

Book II. orders from the king, to be directed in this matter
 1557. by the pope, who insisted that he should advance
 without delay towards Naples. In compliance,
 therefore, with his instructions, he pursued his
 march southward till he reached the frontiers of
 that part of the kingdom which is called the **Abruz-**
zo. At his arrival in Rome, he was received in
 triumph, as if he had been already crowned with
 victory. But he soon found that he had been cru-
 elly deceived by Caraffa, with regard to the assist-
 ance which that prelate had so confidently promised
 him in the name of the pontiff; who had not been
 able either to raise the troops which he had stipulat-
 ed, or to furnish his magazines with an adequate
 quantity of military stores. Guise was extremely
 mortified at his present disagreeable situation, and
 saw that he was likely to meet with nothing but dis-
 grace and shame, where he had flattered himself
 with the hopes of adding to his former glory. He
 laid siege, however, to Civitella, and carried on
 his operations against it, for more than three weeks,
 with his wonted spirit and intrepidity. After hav-
 ing made a breach in the wall, he attempted to
 take the place by storm. But his troops were re-
 pulsed with great loss by the garrison, who were
 bravely seconded by the inhabitants. Even the
 women discovered, on this occasion, the most un-
 daunted resolution, and seemed determined to lay
 down their lives, rather than submit to the domi-
 nion of the French; whose insolent use of victory,
 in former Italian expeditions, was not yet, after
 many years, obliterated from their minds.

He lays
 siege to Ci-
 vitella.

THE duke of Alva had resolved, with his usual
 caution, to act on the defensive; and to fortify
 his camp on the south side of the river **Piscarra**,
 which lay between him and the enemy. But
 when he found that their enterprise against **Civi-**
tella detained them so long, he concluded that
 the accounts which he had received of their
 strength

strength must have been exaggerated; and therefore he crossed the river, and advanced towards them.

Book II.

1557.

GUISE was extremely unwilling to quit the siege; but, having received certain intelligence that the enemy's army was superior to his own, he listened to the advice of marshal Strozzi, and retired into the ecclesiastical territories. Alva followed him: but neither he nor Guise seem to have wished for a general engagement. The former could not have ventured on it with any probability of success; and the latter thought it absurd to risk a kingdom without necessity on the chance of a battle⁹.

But is obliged to raise it.

WHILST these things passed in the Abruzzo, Mark Antony Colonna made rapid progress in the neighbourhood of Rome, where he reduced several forts and towns, and obtained a victory over the pope's forces, commanded by Julio Orsini and the marquis of Montebello.

By these disasters, Paul was overwhelmed with terror. And when he was lamenting in the consistory, the calamities in which his dominions were involved, he expressed his dread, that ere long the Vatican itself would be in the hands of the enemy. He added, that he longed now to be with Christ; and, as if he had engaged in the present war from zeal for the faith, and not from ambition and resentment, he concluded with saying, that he would wait for his crown of martyrdom without dismay.

He was willing, however, to preserve his earthly crown as long as possible; and had sent to the duke of Guise, intreating him to hasten towards Rome for his defence. This general was now on his march thither; full of vexation and chagrin on account of the inglorious part which he had acted. He called upon cardinal Caraffa to fulfil his promises; and

⁹ Haræus says, that Guise laboured to force Alva to engage; but this does not appear from the detail in Thuanus.

BOOK II. and he employed all his interest to procure supplies from the court of France. But the pope's resources were already exhausted; and the French monarch had more than sufficient employment at home for all the troops which he had reserved, after providing for his Italian expedition.

1557.

The war in France.

PHILIP had, for the reasons above mentioned, entered into the war with reluctance; but having, in the origin of it, received the highest provocation from Henry, as well as from the pope, and knowing that, in the beginning of his reign, the eyes of all Europe would be fixed upon his conduct, he had resolved to exert his utmost vigour, and to attack Henry, in that quarter, where he could most successfully annoy him.

WITH extraordinary industry and dispatch, he assembled a numerous army in the neighbourhood of Charlemont, under the command of Philibert Emanuel duke of Savoy. And Emanuel cheerfully undertook the charge committed to him, as it gave him at once an opportunity of displaying his great abilities, and of taking vengeance on the French king, by whom he had been expelled from his dominions. Of the army which was collected, only a small part consisted of Spaniards; the greatest part were either Dutch, and Flemings, or Germans. In levying them, Philip was much indebted to the zeal and alacrity with which his subjects in the Netherlands espoused his cause. For the States, notwithstanding the prejudice to their commerce, which they foresaw must arise from the war, granted, with unusual liberality, all the supplies which he demanded. But while in this they gave proof of their loyalty, they discovered, by another part of their conduct, their jealousy and discontent. They reserved in their own hands the administration of the money which they voted him; and appointed commissioners to apply it to the payment of the troops. This action, which proceeded from their jealousy of the Spaniards,

niards, made a deep impression on the dark resentful mind of Philip; it contributed to alienate his affections from his Flemish subjects; and gave him an inveterate prejudice against that free constitution of their government, by which they were thus enabled to limit his authority. But he was sensible how improper it would have been, in the present conjuncture, to discover his resentment, or to dispute their privileges. He agreed to accept of their supplies, with the condition annexed to the grant of them; and proceeded to complete his preparations.

Book II.
1557.

Not satisfied with the army which he had drawn together from Germany and the Netherlands, augmented by a reinforcement sent from Spain, he resolved, if possible, to persuade the English to enter into the war. With this view he went over to England. He found the privy-counsellors, the queen herself, and the whole body of the people, averse from his design. It has almost never happened, either before or since that period, that war with the French was not agreeable to the English. During many centuries they had been accustomed to consider their French neighbours as enemies and rivals, with whom they often shewed an eagerness to contend, when it was greatly their interest to remain at peace. But their enmity towards the French yielded at this time to their jealousy of the Spaniards; and they entertained the most irreconcilable aversion to the proposed alliance. Mary, as just now hinted, was not of herself inclined to the war, but notwithstanding this, and the cold indifference with which Philip had ever treated her, she was unable to resist his solicitation^r.

Philip engages England in the war.

HER kinsman cardinal Pole, and her other counsellors, represented, that it was a chief article of her marriage, that the alliance with France should be preserved inviolate; that the violation of it would

excite

^r Van Meteren. Thuanus, lib. xix, c. 7. Camden's Apparatus.

Book II.

1557.

excite an universal alarm with regard to the observance of the other articles ; and that the present state of her finances would render it impossible for her, if she should enter into the war, to acquit herself with honour. But Philip having said, that if he were not gratified in his request, he would leave England, and never return to it ; Mary was deaf to every argument that could be employed to dissuade her from her purpose ; and, without further hesitation, she ordered war to be declared in the city of Rheims, with the usual ceremony ; on pretences which were either entirely false, or extremely frivolous. As she knew it would be in vain to apply to her parliament for assistance in carrying on a war so disagreeable to the nation, she had recourse to the oppressive expedient of extorting loans from individuals and corporations. By this, and other means of the same nature, she equipped a considerable fleet, and raised an army of eight thousand men ; of which she gave the command to the earl of Pembroke.

WHEN this reinforcement had joined the duke of Savoy, his cavalry amounted to twelve thousand, and his infantry to between forty and fifty thousand ; an army much superior to any which Henry could muster to oppose it. This inconsiderate monarch had not expected that Philip would have been able to make so great an effort, and saw now the folly of his late engagements with the pope. He was not wanting, however, either in prudence or activity, in repairing his fault, and providing for the security of his kingdom. He committed the chief command of the forces to the constable, whom, notwithstanding his averfeness from the war, he chose to employ, as the ablest of all his generals, to conduct it ; and a great number of the principal nobility and gentry flocked to the camp, eager to display that zeal and bravery, which the French nation have

have often exhibited in defence of their king and country. Book II.

1557.

THE constable could not for some time conjecture on which side the duke of Savoy intended to turn his arms. His first movements were calculated to beget a persuasion, that he designed to enter France by the way of Champaign; but no sooner had he drawn the French army to that quarter, than, changing his route, he marched into Picardy, and laid siege to St. Quintin. The siege and battle of St. Quintin.

THIS town must quickly have surrendered to so great a force, had it not been defended by the celebrated Jasper de Coligni, admiral of France, who made, on this occasion, a conspicuous display of those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age. Being governor of the province in which the place lay, he thought it his duty to exert himself to the utmost for its preservation; and he forced his way into it, through the midst of the surrounding army, with a body of troops, which he animated to expose themselves to every hazard of war in its defence. Immediately after his arrival, he expelled the Spaniards from the suburbs, and set fire to the houses. But he soon perceived, that, by reason of the neglected state of the fortifications, the garrison was still too weak; and that, without a reinforcement, it would be impossible to hold out long against so numerous an enemy. Of this he gave immediate intelligence to the constable his uncle, and at the same time informed him where it would be easiest to introduce the succour which he requested. The constable, anxious for his nephew's safety, and sensible how necessary it was for the preservation of the kingdom that the duke of Savoy should be detained before St. Quintin, appointed d'Andelot the admiral's brother, to the command of a select body of two thousand foot, destined for the relief of the besieged. A person of the August.
Admiral Coligni.

Book II.

1557.

the name of Valpergue, well acquainted with the face of the country, had been sent by the admiral, to serve as a guide to this reinforcement. But whether he mistook his way, or the duke of Savoy had got intelligence of the design, is uncertain. D'Andelot found the enemy prepared to receive him, and was so vigorously attacked, that he escaped with difficulty, after the greatest part of his troops had been cut to pieces.

By this disaster the besieged were extremely dejected, and the admiral had much occasion to exert all the address and eloquence which he possessed, to prevent them from abandoning themselves to despair. From a high tower in the town he could view the country round, and saw that the place was completely invested on every side but one, where there was a marsh or lake, too deep in some places to be passed on foot, and in others too shallow to admit of boats. Through this marsh, however, he hoped that his friends might introduce a reinforcement. Having concerted with the constable the time and manner of putting his design in execution, he threw up the earth in a part of the marsh, and reduced the water into a canal large enough to receive some small boats which he had prepared. When this was done, the constable advanced toward the lake with all his forces, and gave d'Andelot an opportunity of entering the town, with between four and five hundred men*. But, in making his approach, the constable had led his army through certain narrow defiles, which he must re-pass before he could put his troops in safety. His misconduct, in thus exposing his army to so great a risk in sight of an enemy so much superior, was quickly perceived by the duke of Savoy; and a council of war was immediately called to consider of the measures proper to be pursued. Many of the officers thought that the constable should be
suffered

* Laboreur additions, &c. p. 375.

suffered to retire; but count Egmont, general of the horse, whom Philip afterwards used so ungratefully, maintained with warmth^t, that it was practicable to attack him in his retreat with the highest probability of success. The duke of Savoy approved of the plan of attack which the count proposed, and committed the execution of it to himself. No time was lost. Egmont advanced instantly at the head of the cavalry, while the duke hastened forward with the infantry to support him; and finding the enemy unprepared for their defence, he soon threw them into disorder. The constable exerted himself strenuously to retrieve his error; but count Egmont, seconded by the infantry, with the general at their head, advanced with such impetuosity, that the constable found it impossible to recover his troops from the confusion into which they had been thrown. Perceiving that the fortune of the battle was irretrievable, and stung with the consciousness of the imprudence of which he had been guilty, he rushed into the midst of the enemy, and seemed determined not to survive the reproach in which his rashness had involved him. He was dangerously wounded, and would have fallen in the field, as he desired; but, being personally known to certain Flemish officers, he was by them rescued from the soldiers and taken prisoner. His army was entirely broken. Three thousand men were killed on the spot, and four thousand taken prisoners; among whom, besides the constable and his two sons, there were many persons of distinction, and several of the first nobility of France. On the side of the victors only eighty men were killed; a certain proof that the attack had been conducted with no less prudence than intrepidity.

Book II.

1557.

The French
defeated.

PHILIP, although a slave to the lust of power, yet unambitious of military glory, remained at
VOL. I. E Cambray

^t Auctore, consuasore, & prope dicam, perfectore Egmontensi. L. Guicciardini, p. 150. lib. iii.

Book II. Cambray till intelligence was brought him of the
 1557. victory. He then entered the camp with great
 pomp, and when the duke of Savoy and count Eg-
 mont approached him, he received them in the most
 gracious manner, and expressed his gratitude for the
 important service they had performed, with a degree
 of sensibility and joy which he was seldom accustomed
 to discover". His conduct on this occasion was in
 another respect more agreeable to his character. In
 memory of the battle, he vowed to consecrate a pa-
 lace, a church, and monastery, to St. Laurence, be-
 cause it was on the anniversary of that saint that he
 had obtained the victory. He afterwards religiously
 fulfilled his vow by building the Escorial; for which
 he reserved immense sums, notwithstanding all the
 difficulties in which, through his expensive wars, he
 was almost continually involved.

THE battle of St. Quintin might have been at-
 tended with the most important consequences, if
 Philip had complied with the advice of some of his
 general officers, who exhorted him to lead his army
 without delay into the heart of France. But this
 measure was too bold to be relished by a prince like
 Philip, whose caution often bordered on timidity. He
 gave orders to proceed in the siege of St. Quintin;
 saying, that it would be dangerous to leave so strong
 a place behind him in the hands of the enemy, and
 that every army that ventured to penetrate into a
 powerful kingdom, like that of France, ought first
 to secure their retreat. His officers were the more
 easily reconciled to these orders, as they believed
 it impossible for the besieged to hold out above a
 few days longer. But they were disappointed in
 their expectations by the skill and intrepidity of
 the admiral; who, in order to save his country
 and retard the progress of the Spanish arms, had
 resolved to bury himself in the ruins of the place,
 rather than agree to a surrender. He inspired the
 garrison with the same generous resolution; and
 though

" Cabrera, lib. iv. c. 7.

though the fortifications were weak and ruinous, he withstood all the vigorous and skilful efforts of the duke of Savoy till the seventeenth day after the renewal of the siege, when the town was assaulted in eleven different places at one time, and both the admiral and his brother, after a brave and obstinate defence, were taken prisoners on the breach. During the assault, Philip shewed himself to his troops in complete armour; and this was the only time of his life in which he was ever seen in a military dress. He allowed his army to plunder the town, as a reward of their labours; but gave strict orders to preserve the churches and the relics of the tutelary saint.

In the mean time Henry's ministers, who had been overwhelmed with consternation, employed to the best advantage the leisure which the admiral's heroic bravery afforded them. They levied forces in every quarter of the kingdom, gathered together the remains of the vanquished army, sent for the troops which served in Piedmont under the marshal de Brissac, and recalled the duke of Guise. In a few weeks the whole eastern frontier was in a posture of defence, and an army collected in Picardy under the duke of Nevers, able to make head against the enemy. Philip perceived then that he had suffered the only opportunity to escape which he would probably ever have, of penetrating into France and seizing the capital unprepared. He was now under a necessity of being satisfied with employing his troops in enterprises of less splendor and importance; and the only fruit of his victory at St. Quintin was, the taking of the inconsiderable towns of Catelet, Ham, and Noyon; after which, he dismissed a great part of his army, sent home his English forces, and retired himself to Brussels *.

E 2

THE

* Thuanus says, that the English and Spaniards quarrelled after the battle, and that this was the reason why Philip so hastily broke up his camp. Lib. xix. p. 660.

BOOK II.

1557.

THE recalling of the duke of Guise from Italy rendered it necessary for the pope, though exceedingly reluctant, to apply for peace; to which Philip readily consented upon much more moderate terms than could have been expected, considering that Paul was now entirely at his mercy, and that no enemy remained in Italy able to withstand his power. The same motives, whether religious or political, that made him so averse from entering into this war with the pontiff, determined him to have it brought as soon as possible to a conclusion. Almost the only condition which he required was, that Paul should observe a strict neutrality between France and Spain. All the ecclesiastical towns which had been taken were restored; and orders sent to the duke of Alva to go to Rome, and supplicate the pope's forgiveness, both in his own name, and that of his master, for their crime of invading the sacred possessions of the church. In these conditions, and in the manner in which they were fulfilled, Paul appeared as if his arms had been victorious; and Philip, as if he had been humbled and overcome. Such was the reverence which the latter either felt in reality for the Holy See, or thought it necessary to affect, in order to promote his ambitious designs.

The duke
of Guise re-
turns from
Italy.

In this manner did Philip put a period to the war with the sovereign pontiff; but that with Henry still continued. This prince, conscious of his incapacity, and sensible that an exertion of the highest abilities was necessary in the present critical situation of his affairs, devolved almost his whole authority to the duke of Guise, and created him viceroy of France, under the name of Lieutenant General of the kingdom. The French nation knew how much the ambition of this nobleman had contributed to involve them in their present calamities; nor were they ignorant how unsuccessful

unsuccessful his attempts in Italy had been against the sagacity and skill of Alva; yet so splendid were his accomplishments, and to so great a height in the general esteem had his spirited defence of Metz against the emperor exalted him, that his arrival diffused universal joy, and roused the nation from that despondency into which it had been cast by the late disaster at St. Quintin. He quickly shewed that his countrymen were not mistaken in the opinion which they entertained of his abilities. The ordinary season for action was over, and the enemy had gone into winter-quarters, when he took the field, at the head of an army which he had collected with the utmost secrecy and dispatch. The eyes of all Europe were directed towards him, and Philip attended to his motions with much anxiety; never doubting that he intended to fall either upon St. Quintin, or some of the frontier towns of the Netherlands. It soon appeared that he meditated an attack, by which the interest of Philip's allies would be more affected than his own, but in the success of which France was more deeply interested than even in the recovery of St. Quintin. For more than two hundred years the town of Calais had remained in the hands of the English; and as it served for a key by which they could at all times open an entrance for their armies into France, it had been ever deemed one of their most valuable possessions. The French monarchs were fully sensible of the dishonour, as well as of the danger, which attended the suffering a rival nation to possess a place of so much importance in their dominions. But in those days, when the art of attacking towns was little known, Calais was regarded as impregnable. Nor had any of the French kings, even in the height of prosperity, ever thought of laying siege to it. They were ignorant of the means of taking it by storm, and they could not reduce it by blockade; while the English could easily furnish it by sea with fresh troops, stores, and

Book II.

1557.

1558.
January.
Siege of Calais.

Book II. and provisions. But a plan of attack, which had
 1558. never occurred to any person, was discovered by
 the fruitful genius of the admiral de Coligni, and
 by him had been suggested to the duke of Guise.

IN order to carry this plan into execution, and thereby to redeem the nation from what had ever been considered as reproachful and ignominious, Guise put his troops in motion long before the usual season for action had arrived. He judged wisely in making choice of the rigour of winter for beginning his enterprise; for besides that the enemy had no army in the field at this time to disturb his operations, he knew that the queen of England and her ministers had, from a principle of ill-judged economy, been accustomed to dismiss a great part of the garrison in the end of autumn, and to trust, for the security of the place, to the marshy ground on the land side, by which, they believed, that, in winter, all access to it would be found impracticable.

BUT the briskness of the duke of Guise's approaches soon convinced the governor, lord Wentworth, how little reason there was for this imprudent confidence. Wentworth represented to the English ministry, the necessity of sending him an immediate reinforcement. He acquainted them, that he had not above one-fourth of the number requisite to defend the works; and that, with the present garrison, it was impossible to prevent the place from falling quickly into the hands of the enemy. Had Mary's ministers been ever so desirous of complying with his request, it would not have availed him. Guise was sensible that the success of his enterprise depended on his conducting it with expedition. He pushed forward all the operations of the siege with extraordinary vigour, and although it is acknowledged that the governor and garrison acquitted themselves with honour, yet he reduced them to the necessity of capitulating on the eighth
 day

day after his arrival*. He then laid siege to Guisnes and Ham, which he subdued with great facility; and thus, in less than four weeks he expelled the English from all those possessions on the continent which they had enjoyed since the time of Edward the Third, and in the acquisition of which that victorious prince had, after the battle of Crecy, employed a numerous army for near a twelve-month.

Book II.
1558.
January
8th.

THE remaining part of winter was spent in preparing for the next campaign: and, on the part of the French, preparations were carried on with the utmost diligence, not only in France but in Germany, where forces were levied to the amount of four thousand horse and fourteen thousand foot. These troops the duke of Guise received in Lorraine; and then he marched with his whole forces united, and invested Thionville, a city of great importance in the province of Luxemburg. The garrison, which consisted of eighteen hundred men, made a vigorous defence; but as the vigilance of Guise rendered all attempts to introduce supplies impracticable, they were soon obliged to capitulate.

The reduc-
tion of Thion-
ville.

WHILE the duke of Guise was thus employed in Luxemburg, the mareschal de Thermes, an old experienced commander, who had been appointed governor of Calais, having collected an army of ten thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, invaded Flanders, took and destroyed Dunkirk, together with some others places of smaller note, and penetrated as far as Newport, laying waste the country with fire and sword. Philip sent count Egmont; with an army superior in number, to oppose him. On the count's approach, de Thermes retired hastily towards Gravelines, intending to continue his march to Calais, along the shore, without risking a battle. But the impetuosity and ardour of count Egmont, who advanced towards him with great rapidity,

The battle
of Grave-
lines.

* Thuanus, l. 20. Van Meteren, p. 18. Carte's Hist. of England

Book II. rapidity, put out of his power to execute this design. His men too were loaded with the spoil of the ravaged country, which, whilst it retarded their march, contributed not a little to accelerate the progress of the enemy. He had time however to repass the river Aa; but finding it impossible any longer to avoid an engagement, he drew up his army advantageously on a plain, where the enemy could not attack him but in front, nor avail themselves of the superiority of their number. He placed his carriages with the baggage and plunder on the south, and had the sea upon the north, and the mouth of the Aa behind him. In this posture he waited for the enemy; and being fully prepared for their reception, he made considerable havock among them with his artillery as they advanced. This served only to quicken the approach of the Flemings, and to bring on the sooner a close fight, in which almost every part of both armies were engaged, troop with troop, and man with man. The French were rendered desperate by their situation in an enemy's country, where they could not escape without conquering; and the Flemings were animated, partly by revenge for the outrages that had been committed by the enemy, and partly by the desire of recovering the spoil which they had carried off. The battle was obstinate and bloody, and the issue remained for some time doubtful. It would probably have been sooner decided, if the Germans in count Egmont's army had shewn an equal regard with the Flemings to the exhortations and example of their general, who not only acted the part of a prudent commander, but often mingled with the foremost combatants, and gave conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valour. The French however still maintained their ground, and seemed resolved either on death or victory; when, fortunately for count Egmont, some English ships of war, which happened to be cruising upon the coast, perceiving

ceiving the smoke, and conjecturing the occasion of it, entered the river, and began to discharge their guns upon the French army. Although they did not approach near enough to do much execution, yet so unexpected an event, in the time of battle, could not fail to produce an alarm even in the most resolute, and it threw the cavalry into confusion. Count Egmont improved, with great dexterity, the advantage which was thus presented to him; and pushing forward with all his force, he broke their ranks and dispersed them. The infantry intimidated, turned their backs and fled. Near two thousand veteran troops were slain on the field of battle. Many were drowned in the river; and some were killed by the peasants, in revenge for the devastation of their country. A small number only made their escape. The marshal de Thermes, who was grievously wounded, and several other persons of distinction, besides three thousand common soldiers, were taken prisoners. All the artillery and baggage fell into the hands of the victors; whose loss did not exceed four hundred men.

PHILIP was now at liberty to employ all his forces united, against the duke of Guise. Having almost exhausted his finances by the extraordinary effort which he made in the first campaign, and having found it impossible to draw any considerable supplies from England, it was late in the season before he could assemble an army of sufficient strength. But after the marshal de Thermes was defeated, and count Egmont's victorious troops were combined with those under the duke of Savoy, the armies of the two monarchs were nearly a match for one another, and consisted, each of them, of more than forty thousand men.

THEY came in sight of each other, upon the borders of Picardy, where the duke of Savoy pitched

Anxiety of
Philip and
Henry.

* Thuanus, lib. xx. Van Meteren, p. 16. Haræus, tom. ii. p. 698.

BOOK II. pitched his camp near Dourlens, and the duke of
 1558. Guise, in the neighbourhood of Pierrepont. Both
 kings discovered that anxiety which it was natural
 for them to feel in their present critical situation,
 and though they placed entire confidence in their
 generals, they could not be at ease while they re-
 mained at a distance from the scene of action, and
 therefore they repaired, each of them, to his respec-
 tive camp. Many skirmishes happened with various
 success. But it soon appeared that neither of the two
 monarchs was inclined to risk a general engage-
 ment. The principal strength of both armies con-
 sisted in their German forces, and it was apprehend-
 ed that, if either of the two armies were defeated, the
 victors as well as the vanquished would be exposed
 to the injuries and insults of the foreign troops ^b.

They wish
 for peace.

BESIDES this consideration, by which both par-
 ties were alike affected, there were other motives
 peculiar to each. Henry had, from his late misfor-
 tunes, learned a degree of caution, which nature
 had not bestowed on him. He trembled at the
 thoughts of another battle, in which he must en-
 counter the same generals by whom his troops had
 been already twice conquered; and considered that,
 after his defeat at St. Quintin, it had been owing to
 the remissness or misconduct of the enemy, more
 than to his own strength, that his capital had not
 been taken, and his kingdom over-run. Philip, on
 the other hand, was, in all military affairs, cautious
 to excess; and chose rather to accomplish his de-
 signs by political negociation, in which he judged
 for himself, than by the operations of war, in which
 he depended on the abilities of others. Far from
 being elated with the success which had hitherto
 accompanied his arms, he was now as desirous of
 peace, as he had been before averse from entering
 into the war. This is not to be ascribed either to
 his moderation, or his freedom from the ambition
 of

^b Meteren. L. Guiccardini, lib. iii.

of extending his power and territories. No prince ever gave more convincing proofs of his being actuated by that ambition; but having, as was just now hinted, found, that his most vigorous exertions had been necessary to assemble the forces which he had brought into the field; he dreaded, that, in case his present army were defeated, the difficulty of raising another would be insurmountable^c. His arms, indeed, had hitherto been crowned with victory; but none of his generals had entered the lists on equal terms with the duke of Guise; and he was justly apprehensive with regard to the issue of a battle in which he must contend with a general so highly celebrated for his military genius, and whose enterprises had been so often accompanied with success.

THESE considerations derived additional force from Philip's extreme impatience to return to Spain; for which, in preference to his other dominions, he discovered, through his whole reign, a warm and partial affection. And his desire of going thither was increased by accounts which he received at this time, that the opinions of the Protestants had made their way into that kingdom. He dreaded the propagation of these opinions, and resolved, as soon as possible, to embrace this opportunity in his native country, of testifying his zeal for the catholic faith, by shewing, that he would treat those who opposed it, without mercy, in whatever part of his dominions they should be found.

SUCH were the motives which made the contending monarchs so desirous to put a period to the war. A negotiation had been begun for this purpose in the month of August, by the constable Montmorency, and William the first prince of Orange. Montmorency, who beheld with much anxiety the exaltation

Negotiations for peace.

^c Carte says, he received no less than three millions of gold during this war. from Peru, p. 343.

Book II. 1558. exaltation of the family of Guise, had borne his captivity with great impatience; and in order to obtain his liberty, had exerted himself strenuously in removing every obstacle to the establishment of peace. He was permitted to go to Paris on his parole, to treat in person with the king. A marriage was concluded about that time between his son and a grand-daughter of the dutchess of Valentinois. And by this event, joined to the king's habitual attachment to him, he recovered all his wonted influence; and easily persuaded Henry to consent to such terms of accommodation as it was not likely that Philip would reject.

PLENIPOTENTIARIES were soon afterwards named by both princes, and a congress, for discussing their respective claims, appointed to be held at the abbey of Cercamps, not far from the place where the armies were encamped. The duke of Alva, the prince of Orange, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, Granvelle bishop of Arras, and Viglius, president of the council of state at Brussels, were nominated by Philip; and by Henry, the constable himself was named, the cardinal of Lorraine, the mareschal of St. Andre, Morvilliers bishop of Orange, and Aubespine the secretary of state. The dutchess of Lorraine, whom it highly imported, on account of the vicinity of her dominions, that the two kings should put an end to the war, acted with great assiduity the part of mediator between them.

THE conferences, which were opened in October, were soon afterwards interrupted by the death of Mary queen of England, who ended her short inglorious reign on the seventeenth of November following. But Elizabeth renewed the powers of the English commissioners, and the congress was resumed in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and fifty nine, at Chateau Cambresis ^d.

IN

^d Forbes's Full View, p. 1.

IN removing so many grounds of difference as Book II.
1559. subsisted between Philip and Henry, the plenipotentiaries encountered many difficulties; but the zeal and activity of the constable, added to the unlimited influence which he had acquired over his master, surmounted every obstacle, and soon brought the treaty, so far as Philip, Henry, and the duke of Savoy were concerned, to the desired conclusion. Nothing retarded the signing of it, but the determined obstinacy of the French commissioners in refusing to restore Calais to the queen of England; who, on the other hand, declared, that she would not agree to the peace unless that conquest were restored. Philip thought himself bound in honour to support the claim of Elizabeth; since it was entirely on his account that the English nation had engaged in the war, and incurred the loss of the place in question. In a political view, likewise, he was desirous that Calais should be restored. He considered, that, in some future period, he might derive advantage, as his father had sometimes done, from that facility which the possession of Calais gave the English of invading France.

BUT the zeal which Philip discovered on this occasion in behalf of Elizabeth, arose principally from a very different motive. By Mary's death, his connexion with England had lately been dissolved, and he had formed the scheme of renewing it, by marrying Elizabeth. The duke of Feria, his ambassador at London, was ordered to propose the marriage, and at the same time to acquaint the queen that his master would procure a dispensation for it from the pope.

ELIZABETH had many motives to deter her from listening to this proposal. Philip's imperious temper would alone have been a sufficient reason for rejecting it. Besides this, she knew well what apprehensions her sister's marriage had occasioned
among

BOOK II. among the English, with regard to their liberty and
 1559. independence; and that her own popularity was greatly owing to the universal joy which their deliverance from these apprehensions had excited. She considered that her marriage with Philip would be liable to the same objection as that of her father with Catharine of Arragon; and that her accepting of the pope's dispensation would be in effect to acknowledge that her mother's marriage was unlawful, and she herself illegitimate. By doing this she might secure to herself the protection of the Spanish monarchy, and thereby hold a precarious and dependent authority during Philip's life; but she would forfeit for ever the favour of her protestant subjects, who alone were sincerely attached to her person and government; while she would throw herself on the mercy of the catholics; who considered her as an usurper, and would, on the first favourable opportunity of asserting the title of the queen of Scotland, think it their duty to deprive her of her crown.

WHILE, for these reasons, Elizabeth was unalterably determined not to accept of Philip for a husband, she thought it prudent for some time to conceal her intention; and she returned such an ambiguous, but obliging answer to his ambassador, that Philip flattered himself with the hopes of success, and actually took some steps to procure a dispensation. As long as there remained any foundation for these hopes, he appeared extremely zealous for the restitution of Calais. But when Elizabeth, finding herself firmly established on the throne, ventured to introduce certain alterations in religion, which discovered her resolution to abolish popery in her dominions, Philip considered this part of her conduct as a sufficient indication of her intentions with regard to him. That zeal with which he had at first espoused her interest, began to abate; and the English plenipotentiaries dreaded that, without respect to the claim of their mistress,

trefs, he would not delay much longer to put the finishing hand to his treaty with the king of France ^{Book II.} ^{1559.}

ELIZABETH at length perceived that it was in vain to hope for recovering Calais by treaty ; and, as the situation of her affairs at home rendered it highly inexpedient to employ force, she wisely resolved to give it up on the following conditions : that Henry should restore it before the end of eight years, or pay 500,000 crowns ; that foreign merchants, not subjects of France, should give security for the money ; that hostages should be delivered, till that security were procured ; and that, whether the money were paid or not, Elizabeth's claim should remain valid, unless, within the time specified, she should commit hostilities against the subjects of the French king.

TOWARDS his other allies, Philip's conduct was perfectly conformable to the dictates of the strictest honour. He procured the restitution of Montferrat to the duke of Mantua ; of Bouillon to the bishop of Liege ; of the isle of Corsica to the Genoese ; and of all the towns which the French had seized in Savoy, Piedmont, and Bresse, to the duke of Savoy. This peace was advantageous to himself as well as to the princes in alliance with him. He recovered Thionville, Marienburgh, Montmedi, and all the other places which had been taken by the French generals during the war, and acquired the sovereignty of the county of Charolois ^{Peace concluded.}

IN

* If it is likewise true, that he made an offer to Elizabeth, of continuing the war till she should recover what she had lost, upon condition that she too would engage to carry it on for a certain term of years ; it would then seem, that he gave little reason for accusing him as some authors have done, of having acted ungenerously towards his English allies. But as this circumstance is omitted by the principal historians, and contradicts what is said of his coldness with regard to the interest of Elizabeth, I have not ventured to advance it as an undoubted fact. Burnet, part ii. p. 383.

^f Meteren, p. 24. Guicciardini, lib. iii.

BOOK II. IN return for the many concessions made by Henry, that monarch received no other compensation but St. Quintin, and the two unimportant towns of Ham and Catelet. While his people, therefore, rejoiced at the conclusion of the war, which, at certain times, had excited in their minds the most dreadful apprehensions, they complained bitterly of the inequality of the terms of peace, and were highly exasperated against the constable; who, in order to accomplish his private views, had abused the too easy temper of his master, and made a sacrifice of the interests and the honour of France. Montmorency durst not have counselled Henry to consent to such disadvantageous terms, had he not devised the expedient of giving Elizabeth, Henry's eldest daughter, in marriage to Philip, and Margaret, his sister, to the duke of Savoy. These marriages served, in some measure, as an excuse for the ample concessions made to these two princes; since honourable settlements were thereby obtained for the daughter and sister of the king.

AMIDST that attention which Philip and Henry bestowed in this treaty, on their political and civil interests, religion was not forgotten. They bound themselves mutually to maintain the catholic faith in their dominions; and to procure^s the convocation of a general council, for suppressing heresy, and restoring tranquillity to the church.

Death of
Henry.

It is not to be doubted that Henry would have fulfilled this article of the treaty with the same exactness which he observed in executing the other articles; but a sudden period was put to his life, in a few months after the peace was signed, by an accident which happened in the time of the rejoicings celebrated on account of his sister's marriage. Having entered the lists at a tournament with the count of Montgomery, captain of his guards, the count's lance broke on Henry's corset, and a splin-

ter

of it having pierced his right eye, inflicted a wound, Book II.
of which he died in a few days, at the age of forty. 1559.

THIS melancholy event made no alteration with respect to the treaty of peace. The duke of Alva had some time before espoused Elizabeth, in his master's name; and Margaret's marriage with Emanuel was celebrated privately in a chapel of the palace.

THE courtiers and the people of France were State of France. affected variously by Henry's death. The constable lost thereby all the fruits of his late intrigues, and was soon afterwards obliged to retire from court, and to resign that power which he had shewn himself so solicitous to attain, into the hands of his enemies.

THE young king, Francis the Second, a prince Francis II. equally weak in body and in mind, was entirely governed by his wife, the celebrated Mary queen of Scots; who was blindly devoted to her uncles, the cardinal of Lorraine and the duke of Guise. These two men engrossed almost the whole administration of the kingdom; admitting only the queen mother to a share of it, from their knowledge of her ambitious, intriguing spirit, and the dread which they entertained of her influence, as a mother, over the feeble mind of Francis. They shewed no moderation in the exercise of the power which they had usurped; but seized on every advantage for themselves, and laid hold of every opportunity to humble and mortify their adversaries. The princes of the blood, with Lewis prince of Conde at their head, bore with extreme impatience the insignificance to which they were reduced; and resolved to embrace the first occasion that should offer, to vindicate their right to that share in the management of affairs, to which they thought themselves intitled by their birth, and the ancient practice of the realm¹.

VOL. I.

F

WHILE

¹ Davila, Castelnau ab initio, & Additions aux Memoires de Castelnau.

BOOK II.

1559.

WHILE the great men in France were thus animated against each other by considerations of a political nature, the people were violently agitated, and their minds inflamed by religious controversies. Under the reign of Henry, the Calvinists had suffered the most cruel persecution; yet they had multiplied exceedingly during that period in every quarter of the kingdom. The duke of Guise and the cardinal of Lorraine kept alive the flames of persecution against them, and on all occasions appeared intent on their destruction. This alone would have determined the prince of Conde and his adherents to espouse the protestant cause; for even although we should not believe that the chiefs in either party were sincere in their religious profession, yet it cannot be supposed they would have failed to embrace so specious a pretext as the differences in religion afforded them to palliate their conduct. The prince of Conde would instantly have had recourse to arms, if the admiral, more prudent and sagacious, had not prevailed on him to suspend his resolution till a more favourable juncture; but it was impossible that passions so violent as those by which both parties were impelled, could be kept long under restraint; and to every person capable of reflecting on what he saw passing before him, it was apparent that the nation was upon the eve of a civil war.

FRANCE has in no period produced a more remarkable assemblage of great men than in the present and the succeeding reigns; and had there been a prince upon the throne possessed of abilities sufficient to controul their inordinate ambition, the French nation might have much sooner reached that degree of greatness and prosperity, which it attained towards the conclusion of the following century: but this mighty kingdom, possessed of every advantage which nature bestows, became a scene of devastation and misery for almost forty years,

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

67

years, through the misapplication of those very talents, which, if they had been properly employed, would have rendered it prosperous and happy.

Book II.

1559.

NOTHING could be more desirable to Philip than this confusion, and the debility consequent upon it, in that nation, from which alone he had reason to expect opposition to his designs. It left him at liberty to pursue whatever measures he should think proper for the confirmation and increase of his power in Spain, Italy and the Netherlands; and it gave no small reason to the other European powers to apprehend, that France itself would fall under the Spanish yoke.

IN Italy, the state of affairs was no less favourable to Philip's views, than in France: He was now the sole and undisputed sovereign of the dutchy of Milan; and the kingdom of Naples and Sicily. His inveterate enemy, Paul the fourth, was lately dead; and Pius the fourth, who was no less devoted to his interest than Paul had been adverse, was raised to the papal throne. The republic of Genoa, the dukes of Savoy, Mantua, Tuscany, and Parma, were his allies, whom he had bound to his interest by the strongest ties; the three first, by procuring for them the restitution of their dominions from the French king; the fourth, by granting him the investiture of Siena; and the last, by ceding to him the city of Placentia and its territory.

State of Italy.

AFTER the conclusion of the peace, nothing remained to render Philip uneasy, either in his own dominions or in the neighbouring kingdoms, but the progress which the reformers had made, and were still making, in almost every country in Europe. From Germany and Switzerland, where the reformation took its rise, it had spread with the most astonishing rapidity. It had become the established religion, not only in several of the considerable provinces and free cities in Germany and the

Book II. Cantons in Switzerland, but likewise in the kingdoms of England, Scotland, Sweden, and Denmark; and in some of those states where the ancient religion still maintained its ground, the protestants were grown so numerous as to be extremely formidable to their opponents.

1559.

FROM the constant intercourse which subsists between Germany and the Netherlands, it was impossible but the new opinions must have been early propagated from the former to the latter; and accordingly, in the month of May 1521, the emperor Charles had published an edict, in which all the penalties of high treason were denounced against those who should be found guilty of holding any of Luther's tenets; or of republishing, or vending any books written by him or his followers. In the execution of this edict, which Charles from time to time renewed, all the fury of persecution was exercised; and it is affirmed by several cotemporary historians, that during the reign of Charles fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the Low Countries were put to death on account of their religious principles. These principles however, far from being extirpated, were more and more diffused in the midst of those severities which were employed to suppress them.

PHILIP was not ignorant of the progress which they had made; and it gave him the greater uneasiness, because, being exceedingly desirous of setting out for Spain, he would be obliged to commit the business of extirpating heresy from the Netherlands to others, whom he could not suppose possessed of the same fervent zeal against it, of which he himself was conscious. In order to prevent as much as possible the inconveniences which might arise from his absence, he had gone from his camp at Dourlens to Brussels, and had been employed during the winter season in settling the government of the provinces.

THE

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK III.

THE provinces, which, on account of their Book III.
 situation, are called the Netherlands, were 1559-
Ancient
State of the
Nether-
lands.
 long governed, by their respective princes, under
 the titles of Dukes, Marquisses, or Counts. These
 princes were for many years engaged in perpetual
 wars with the neighbouring powers, or with one
 another; and, as they had frequent occasions, dur-
 ing these wars, to have recourse to the people for
 supplies, the cities, the nobles, and ecclesiastics, ac-
 quired, in return, several rights and privileges, by
 which the provinces partook more of the nature of
 republics, than of regal governments. The su-
 preme authority was lodged in the assembly of the
 States, which had the power of meeting as often as
 the members thought expedient. And without the
 consent of that assembly, no war could be under-
 taken, no taxes could be imposed, no new laws
 enacted, no change made in the current coin, and
 no foreigners admitted into any branch of the ad-
 ministration. The sovereignty descended accord-
 ing

Book III. ing to the ordinary laws of hereditary succession; but no prince was allowed to enter upon the exercise of it, till he had solemnly sworn to observe and maintain the fundamental laws *.

1559.

IN this situation these provinces remained for several ages; till by the failure of the male line in some of the reigning families, by intermarriages, and by conquests, they fell under the dominion of the house of Burgundy. After this event they still continued to enjoy their ancient privileges, and to be governed according to their old laws; with this difference only, that whereas all criminal and civil causes had been formerly determined, in the last resort, by the councils of the several provinces, it was established, that parties might appeal from those to the tribunal of Mechlin; which was instituted in order to unite the provinces more closely, and to give them more the appearance of one state.

**Prosperity
of the Pro-
vinces.**

UNDER the administration of the Burgundian princes, and even long before their accession to the sovereignty, trade and manufactures flourished in the Netherlands more than in any other European state. No city in those days, except Venice, possessed such extensive commerce as Antwerp. It was the staple, or great mart of all the northern nations. Bruges was little inferior. Arras was famous for tapestries, which still retain the name of that place. In the city of Ghent there were many thousand artificers employed in the woollen manufacture, long before the art was known to the English, from whom the wool was purchased by the industrious Flemings.

Causes of it.

FOR this prosperity the inhabitants of the Netherlands were, in a great measure, indebted to the nature and situation of their country; which, as it lies in the centre of Europe, commanding the entrance and

* Grotius de Antiq. Repub. Batav. cap. 5.

and navigation of several of the great rivers of Ger-
 many, and is almost every where intersected by
 these rivers, or, by canals and branches of the sea,
 is admirably fitted both for foreign and domestic or
 inland trade. This singular advantage, however,
 could not have enabled the Flemings to leave the
 other European nations so far behind them, if the
 form of their civil government had not been pecu-
 liarly favourable to their exertions. The greatest
 advantages which nature affords for improvement in
 the arts of life, may be rendered useless to the peo-
 ple who possess them, by an injudicious, or tyranni-
 cal and oppressive exercise of the civil power. And
 universal experience proves, how vain it is to expect
 that men will apply themselves with vigour to com-
 mercial pursuits, where their persons are insecure, or
 where the fruits of their industry may be seized by
 the rapacious hand of a despotic prince. But hap-
 pily for the inhabitants of the Low Countries, the
 sovereigns of the several provinces (unable, perhaps,
 from the small extent of their dominions, to execute
 any plan of tyranny against the people) were, at a
 very early period, induced to give their consent and
 sanction to the above-mentioned system of funda-
 mental laws; by which, although their prerogative
 was abridged, yet their power and resources were
 greatly augmented, through that prosperity which
 their moderate government had enabled their sub-
 jects to attain.

THE sovereignty of these flourishing provinces
 passed from the family of Burgundy into that of Aus-
 tria, by the marriage of Mary, daughter of Charles
 the Bold, and sole heiress of his dominions, with Maxi-
 milian, son of Frederic the Third, emperor of Ger-
 many. This marriage was set on foot and concluded
 by the Flemings themselves, who, agreeably to their
 free maxims of government, assumed the direction
 of the conduct of their prince's in this matter, which
 so nearly concerned their prosperity and safety.

LEWIS the eleventh of France had demanded her for his son the dauphin; whilst he most impolitically gave offence to the States, by seizing upon Burgundy and Picardy as fiefs of the kingdom of France. This imprudent step, and the death of the bishop of Liege, uncle of Mary, and a partisan of Lewis, determined the Flemings in their choice. They judged wisely, that their liberty would be safer in the hands of Maximilian, whose hereditary dominions were small, and lay at a distance from them, than in those of a neighbouring prince so powerful as Lewis, who, in all his conduct, had discovered so much injustice and rapacity.

THE Flemings shewed the same laudable jealousy of their privileges after Maximilian's marriage with their princess, which had influenced them in their choice of him for her husband. About four years after her marriage, Mary died of a bruise which she received by a fall from horseback, when she was big with child. Maximilian, under the name of tutor to his son Philip, assumed the reins of government. The Flemings considered his conduct as an encroachment on their rights, and refused to acknowledge his authority, till the States had ordained that he should be admitted as governor, only for a limited time, and upon conditions which they required he should take an oath to fulfil.

HE did not observe these conditions so exactly as they expected. They complained of his conferring offices upon Burgundians and Germans. They were grievously offended with him for introducing foreign troops into the provinces, and apprehended that he had formed a design against their liberty. After he was elected king of the Romans, their suspicions rose to so great a height, that, upon his entering the city of Bruges with a numerous train of attendants, the inhabitants ran to arms, surrounded him in the market-place, seized his person, and confined him in the castle, where

where they kept him prisoner for several months. Book III.
 The pope and emperor interposed in his behalf, 1559.
 but could not obtain his liberty till he had given
 security with regard to the several particulars on
 account of which they had taken offence.

OF the same jealous attention to their liberty Charles V.
 the Flemings gave proofs during the administration
 of Maximilian's successors. Under that of his
 grandson Charles V. they had real ground of un-
 easiness. Charles might have easily subdued them,
 if he had been inclined to use his power so ungen-
 erously : and his arbitrary temper had sufficiently
 appeared in his government of Spain and Germa-
 ny ; in both which countries he had trampled on
 all those rights of the people, which had been long
 esteemed the most inviolable. On several occasions
 he had introduced foreign troops into the Low
 Countries ; and it has been asserted ^b, that he once
 deliberated whether he should employ them in esta-
 blishing in the provinces the same sort of arbitrary
 government which subsisted in his Spanish and Ita-
 lian dominions.

BUT Charles was born in the Netherlands, and His popu-
larity.
 had passed there the pleasantest of his younger days.
 He loved the people, and was fond of their man-
 ners ; which resembled his own, and were not so
 reserved and stately as those of the Spaniards. From
 taste and early attachment he kept them always
 about his person, and had bestowed on them the
 most important offices in his dominions. To his pre-
 ceptor, Adrian of Utrecht, who, through his inter-
 est, was afterwards advanced to the papacy, he
 committed the government of Spain : and Charles
 de Lanoy, whom he appointed viceroy of Naples,
 was intrusted with the management of his affairs in
 Italy for several years, with unlimited authority. In
 all the wars which he carried on in Germany, and
 on

^b Grotius, p. 6.

Book III. on the frontiers of France, he placed a particular confidence in his Flemish troops; used the people, when he resided among them, with the most courteous familiarity, and banished from his intercourse with them, that form and ceremony which renders it so difficult for princes either to know that they are beloved, or to shew that they deserve it ^c.

1559.

THE Flemings entertained a grateful sense of the kindness with which he treated them. If we except the insurrection of the people of Ghent, there happened almost no disturbance in the Netherlands during his reign. The States assisted him liberally in defraying the expence of those wars in which he was almost continually engaged, and discovered, at all times, a warm attachment to his person.

CHARLES would gladly have transmitted to his son the affection which he bore towards his Flemish subjects; and for this purpose he had, as above related, brought him to Flanders in his youth, in order to reconcile him to the manners and customs of the people. And afterwards, when he himself had resolved to retire from the world, and to leave the government of his dominions in the hands of Philip, he exhorted him, with much earnestness, to cultivate the affections of the Flemings, and to govern them according to those laws to which they had been so long accustomed, and were so strongly attached.

Of Philip.
His unpopular behaviour.

BUT Philip could not enter into his father's views. He had never made any considerable stay in the Netherlands; and could not be fond of a people whose manners were so different from his own. In Spain, where he received his education, he had been taught the most superstitious reverence for the Holy See, and had imbibed the most extravagant ideas of the extent of regal authority. Charles was not, in reality, less fond of power; but in him ambition was, in some measure, tempered and corrected by his

^c Bentivoglio, p. 4.

his acquaintance with the world ; whereas, in Philip, Book III.
it was perverted and inflamed by the sentiments of }
an illiberal, cruel, gloomy superstition. 1559.

THE Flemings had long perceived and lamented The Flemings jealous of him.
the difference between the character of their late, and that of their present sovereign. Philip had taken the usual oath, by which he bound himself to maintain their privileges ; and had made them the strongest professions of regard and affection. But they judged of his disposition towards them from his conduct, rather than from his oath or his professions. They were not admitted, whilst he lived amongst them, to any share of his trust and confidence ; and, in violation of their fundamental laws, he committed the administration of the most important branches of government to the bishop of Arras, a Burgundian ; or to his Spanish ministers, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, prince of Eboli, and the dukes of Feria and Alva ; whom the Flemings considered as enemies to their nation, and strenuous abettors of that despotic power, to which, from the beginning of Philip's reign, they had suspected that he aspired.

It was not long before he gave them convincing The edicts against the protestants.
proof how well-grounded their fears were with regard to his intentions, by the measures which he employed for extinguishing the new opinions in religion. These opinions had been of late diffused through every corner of the Netherlands ; having been imported thither, partly by foreign merchants who came to reside there ; and partly by the Swiss and German troops, whom both Charles and Philip had employed in their wars against France ; but chiefly by the English, French, and German protestants, who had fled from the persecutions which were carried on against them in their native countries.

CHARLES had, as mentioned in the preceding book, shewn the same inclination to extirpate the reformed

Book III. reformed religion in the Netherlands, which he had
 1559. discovered in Germany ; and had, for this purpose,
 published several edicts against the protestants;
 many of whom had suffered the most cruel death ^d.

GREAT numbers had begun to leave the provinces, and to transport their families and effects to the neighbouring states. Charles was moved with the representation which he received of this event, from the regent his sister, the queen dowager of Hungary. He felt for the calamities of the people, and he dreaded the consequences of depopulating a country where he had often received the most effectual assistance and support.

BUT these considerations had no degree of influence on Philip. He republished the edicts, and ordered the governors and magistrates to carry them into rigorous execution.

IN these edicts it was enacted, that all persons who held any erroneous opinion should be deprived of their offices, and degraded from their rank. It was ordained, that whoever should be convicted of having taught heretical doctrines, or of having been present at the religious meetings of heretics, should, if they were men, be put to death by the sword, and if women, be buried alive. Such were the punishments denounced even against those who repented of their errors and forsook them ; while all who persisted in them were condemned to the flames. And even those who afforded shelter to heretics in their houses, or who omitted to give information against them, were subjected to the same penalties as heretics themselves.

The inquisition.

PHILIP was not satisfied with publishing and executing these cruel edicts. He likewise established

^d It is almost incredible that the number of those who suffered could amount to 50,000, yet this is affirmed by several historians. Meterén calls the number 50,000. Grotius, p. 12. calls it 100,000. F. Paul, lib. v. calls it 50,000.

ed a particular tribunal for the extirpation of heresy, Book III.
1559. which, although it was not called by the name Inquisition, had all the essentials of that iniquitous institution. Persons were committed to prison upon bare suspicion ; and put to the torture on the slightest evidence. The accused were not confronted with their accusers, or made acquainted with the crimes for which they suffered. The civil judges were not allowed to take any further concern in prosecutions for heresy, than to execute the sentences which the inquisitors had pronounced. The possessions of the sufferers were confiscated ; and informers were encouraged, by an assurance of impunity in case they themselves were guilty, and by the promise of rewards *.

It is not surprising, that the establishment of this arbitrary tribunal should have occasioned disquietude in the Netherlands. It had created disturbance even in Spain and Italy, where the people could not boast so much as the Flemings of their civil rights ; and had been strenuously opposed by many who were sincerely attached to the catholic religion. In the Flemings it excited the most frightful apprehensions. They considered it as utterly subversive of their liberty. They dreaded the ruin of their commerce ; which could not subsist unless the foreign merchants, many of whom were protestants, could reside among them with safety. The new opinions had been propagated throughout all the provinces, and men knew not how far the inquisitors might extend their power, or how great a number might be found liable to punishments that were denounced, not only against heretics themselves, but against all those who were suspected to befriend them.

To these causes of discontent Philip added another, by increasing the number of bishoprics from five to seventeen, the number of the provinces.

New erection of bishoprics.

This

* Grotius Annales, lib. i.

BOOK III. This measure, which would not at any other time have given much offence, was in the present juncture universally disagreeable. Granvelle bishop of Arras was the chief adviser of it: nor did he and the king's other counsellors scruple to acknowledge, that their intention in promoting it, was to have at all times a sufficient number of persons in the Netherlands, upon whose zeal the king could rely for a vigorous execution of the edicts.

1559.

THE new bishops were therefore considered as so many new inquilitors. Their creation was regarded as an encroachment on the privileges of the provinces, and a violation, on the part of the king, of the oath which he had taken at his accession, to preserve the church in the condition in which he found it. The principal nobility were particularly averse from this innovation, because the number of the counsellors of state was thereby greatly augmented, and consequently the influence of the ancient members of the council was impaired, and the balance of power thrown into the hands of the clergy; who, they doubted not, would on all occasions shew themselves ready to support the arbitrary measures of the sovereign. But no sect of men exclaimed so loudly as the monks and abbots, whose opposition was inflamed by motives both of ambition and interest. For besides that they would be obliged to yield the precedency to the bishops, and have much less weight than hitherto in the assemblies of the States, it was out of their revenues that the new bishoprics were to be endowed. They were therefore highly incensed. They laboured to connect their private interest with that of the public; and represented the new erection as no less pernicious to the country in general, than it was to their order in particular.

Spanish
troops in
the Nether-
lands.

BESIDES the grievances enumerated, the Flemings complained bitterly, that in the midst of peace

he

† Bentivoglio, lib. i.

the provinces were filled with Spanish soldiers. Book III.
 They had ever esteemed it one of their most valuable privileges, that, according to their fundamental laws, no foreign troops could be brought into the Netherlands. Charles indeed had often introduced them in the course of his wars with France, and with the protestants in Germany. But the Flemings had been dazzled with the glory which generally attended that monarch's arms, and had not entertained the same jealousy of his intentions as of those of Philip; who, they could not help thinking, had formed a design to reduce them under a despotic government; and had, with this view, deferred so long the dismissal of his Spanish troops. Their discontent was greatly increased by the insolent and rapacious behaviour of these troops; which in Zealand was so intolerable, that the people actually refused to work at their dykes, saying, that they chose rather to be swallowed up by the ocean, than to remain a prey to the cruelty and avarice of the Spanish soldiers [§].

1559.

SUCH was the state of affairs, and such the temper of the people, when Philip, intending to set out for Spain, was deliberating concerning a proper person to whom he might commit the government of the Netherlands.

He hesitated for some time between Christina the dutchess of Lorraine, his cousin, and Margaret dutchess of Parma, a natural daughter of the late emperor. The dutchess of Parma appointed regent. The former had distinguished herself by her prudent conduct in the government of Lorraine after her husband's death, and had lately acquired considerable reputation by her negotiations in the treaty of peace at Chateau-Cambresis. From the vicinity of Lorraine to the Low Countries, the Flemings were well acquainted with her character; and,

as

§ These soldiers were not removed till the year following, when Philip had occasion for them elsewhere. Reidanus, p. 5. Meursii Auriacus, near the beginning.

Book III. as they had groaned under the burthen of the French war, and were now begun to taste, with gratitude, the fruits of that peace which Christina's wisdom had contributed to procure for them, they were exceedingly desirous that the government of the provinces should be left in her hands. But Philip had good reason for the preference which he gave to the dutchess of Parma. The dukes of Lorrain were, from their situation, in some measure dependent upon the crown of France ; whereas the dutchy of Parma was surrounded with Philip's Italian dominions ; and the duke and dutchess were willing to send their son, the celebrated Alexander Farnese prince of Parma, to the court of Spain ; on the pretence of being educated there, but, in truth, as a pledge of that implicit obedience which the dutchess engaged to yield to the king's injunctions in her government of the provinces ^h.

1559.

As Philip did not intend to return soon to the Netherlands, he thought proper, before his departure, to summon a convention of the States ; which was accordingly held in Ghent. He was present himself, accompanied by the new regent, at the first opening of that assembly ; but as he could not speak the language of the country, he employed the bishop of Arras to address the deputies in his name.

The bishop
of Arras's
speech to
the States.

THE bishop began his speech with informing them of the king's resolution of going to Spain, and the reasons which rendered his journey thither necessary. He expatiated on the affection which Philip bore towards his Flemish subjects ; to whom his family had been so much indebted for that ascendant and influence, which had given them possession of such extensive territories. His affairs in Spain, he hoped, would not detain him long ; but, in case they should, he promised to send his son to reside in the Netherlands. In the mean time he earnestly exhorted the States to study to preserve the public peace ;

^h Bentivoglio.

peace; and to this end he thought that nothing could conduce so much, as the extirpation of heresy, which, whilst it set men at variance with God, put arms into their hands against their civil sovereign. They ought therefore zealously to maintain the purity of their ancient faith, and, for this purpose, to execute with vigour the several edicts published for the suppression of heresy. In this, and every other measure, he hoped that they would concur cheerfully with the dutchefs of Parma, whom he had appointed regent in his absence. He would leave the Netherlands, impressed with the deepest sense of that fidelity and affection which his subjects there had ever shewn him; and would, as soon as possible, remove the foreign troops, and deliver the people from every other burden which the exigency of his affairs had made it necessary to impose^k.

THE answer of the States to this speech contained the warmest sentiments of affection and loyalty. But, before the convention was dissolved, Philip perceived that the deputies were far from being satisfied with every part of his administration. They had expected that the troops would have been immediately transported to Spain, and could not discover any reason for keeping them longer in the Low Countries but such as filled their minds with terror. Their suspicion that the Inquisition was about to be established in the Netherlands, excited the most disquieting apprehensions. There were some of the deputies who scrupled not openly to remonstrate, That the Low Countries had never been accustomed to an institution of so much rigour and severity: that the people trembled at the very name of the Inquisition, and would fly to the remotest corners of the earth rather than submit to it: that it was not by fire and the sword, but by the gentlest and softest remedies, that the evil com-

VOL. I.

G

plained

^k Bentivoglio, p. 9.

Book III. plained of must be cured : that as each individual
 1559. had a habit or constitution of body peculiar to himself, so every nation had a peculiar temperament or character : that what might be suitable to Spain or Italy, would be extremely unfit for the Netherlands ; and that, in general, the nations in the southern parts of the world could live happily under a degree of restraint which would render the northern nations extremely miserable ¹.

Philip refuses to gratify them.

THESE and such other representations were addressed to the king himself by some of the deputies, who endeavoured to persuade him to annul, or at least to moderate the edicts. But on this head Philip was inexorable. And when one of his ministers represented, that, by persisting in the execution of these edicts, he might kindle the seeds of rebellion, and thereby lose the sovereignty of the provinces ; he replied, “ That he had much rather “ be no king at all, than have heretics for his subjects ^m.”

HIS religion, which was of all superstitions the most intolerant ; his temper of mind, which was naturally haughty and severe ; his pride, which would have been wounded by yielding what he had repeatedly declared he would never yield ; his engagements with the pope, and an oath which he had taken to devote his reign to the defence of the popish faith and the extirpation of heresy ; above all, his thirst for despotic power, with which he considered the liberties claimed in religious matters by the protestants as utterly incompatible ; all these causes united, rendered him deaf to the remonstrances which were made to him, and fixed him unalterably in his resolution to execute the edicts with the utmost rigour. He shewed himself equally inflexible with regard to the new bishoprics ; nor would

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. i.

^m Chegli voleva piu tosto restar senza regni, che possederli con heresia. Bentivoglio, p. 10.

would he consent at this time to withdraw the Spanish soldiers. In order however to lessen the odium arising from his refusal, he offered the command of these troops to the prince of Orange and count Egmont, the two ablest and most popular noblemen in the Netherlands; the former of whom he had appointed governor of Holland, Zealand, and Utrecht; and the latter, of Artois and Flanders. Both of them declined accepting of the offer which was made to them, and had the courage to declare, that they considered the continuance of the troops in the Low Countries, after peace had been established with France, as a violation of the fundamental laws of the constitution.

Book III.

1559:

COUNT EGMONT, descended from the dukes of Guelderland, and one of the most accomplished noblemen in the Netherlands, having lately gained immortal honour by the victories of St. Quintin and Gravelines, had just ground to expect the highest rewards in the power of Philip to bestow.

Count Egmont.

THE prince of Orange, so well known in history by the name of William the first, was the representative of the ancient and illustrious family of Nassau in Germany. From his ancestors, one of whom had been emperor of Germany, he inherited several rich possessions in the Netherlands; and he had succeeded to the principality of Orange by the will of Rene de Nassau and Chalons, his cousin-german, in the year 1544. From that time the late emperor had kept him perpetually about his person, and had early discovered in him all those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of this or of any other age. Both he and count Egmont had aspired to the regency; and their declining to accept of the command of the Spanish troops was, by some, ascribed to the chagrin occasioned by

William I. prince of Orange.

Book III. their disappointmentⁿ. The prince of Orange, after dropping his own pretensions, had expressed his desire to have the regency bestowed on the dutchess of Lorrain; and this discovery of William's inclination is said to have been a principal motive with Philip, and his Spanish counsellors, for conferring it on the dutchess of Parma. Nor were they satisfied with thwarting him in this. He had begun and made some progress in a treaty of marriage with one of the princesses of Lorrain. In this measure likewise they opposed him, from an apprehension, it was pretended, that so close a connexion with a family of so great influence, and whose territories lay so near the Netherlands, would give him an accession of power that might be dangerous in the hands of a person whose loyalty there was reason to suspect.

Causes of
Philip's
alienation
from him.

It does not however appear, that, before the assembly of the States, Philip had any just ground for his suspicions of William's conduct; and there is only one circumstance recorded to which they can be ascribed. The prince having been sent to France as an hostage for the execution of some articles of the peace of Chateau-Cambresis, had, during his residence there, discovered a scheme formed by the French and Spanish monarchs for the extirpation of the protestants. This scheme he had communicated to such of his friends in the Netherlands as had embraced the reformed religion, and from that time the king ceased to treat him with his wonted confidence^o.

BUT we find a still more satisfactory account of Philip's alienation from the prince, in the jealousy of Granvelle and the Spanish ministers. From his early youth William had been considered as a principal favourite of the late emperor, who had
on

ⁿ Ferreras, tom. ix. Grotius, p. 4—9.

^o Bentivoglio, p. 6. Thuanus, tom. i. lib. xxii. sect. 10.

on all occasions distinguished him with peculiar marks of his esteem. Charles used to communicate to him his most secret counsels, and had been heard to declare, that the prince, though scarcely arrived at the years of manhood, had often suggested expedients to him that were of great advantage to his affairs. William was in the twenty-third year of his age when Charles resigned his dominions, yet he had already received several public proofs of the emperor's attachment. Not to mention his making choice of him to support him in that august assembly in which he resigned his dominions, or his bestowing on him, in preference to his other courtiers, the honour of carrying the imperial crown to his brother Ferdinand; he had appointed him commander in chief of his army, in the absence of the duke of Savoy, when the prince was only two and twenty years old. Against this measure all his counsellors had remonstrated, and had represented to him the superior character of the French generals, the duke de Nevers and the admiral de Coligni. But Charles adhered to his choice, and had no reason afterwards to repent of it. William not only saved the troops while they were under his command from sustaining any misfortune or calamity, but fortified Charlemont and Philipville, and thereby secured the frontier of the Netherlands, in spite of the most vigorous efforts which the enemy could make to prevent him. This uncommon degree of attachment that was shewn him by the father, was the real cause of the coldness with which he was treated by the son. Granvelle and the Spanish ministers were envious of his rising greatness, and took every opportunity to inspire Philip with suspicions of his designs, and an aversion to his character. Philip was confirmed in his suspicions by William's refusing to accept of the command of the troops; and saw that neither he, nor count Egmont, who likewise declined accepting it, were persons on whom he could depend for executing the

Book III. the plan which he had formed for establishing despotism in the provinces.

1559.

HE left them however in possession of the several governments to which they had been appointed, and still allowed them to hold their places as formerly in the council of state. He did not chuse to exasperate them too much. Their merit, he was sensible, intitled them to all the honours and offices which they enjoyed. He knew how extensive their influence was among the people; and he was conscious they had been guilty of nothing that could justify him for removing them from their employments; since, even when their conduct had offended him the most, they had only exercised those rights, which, by the fundamental laws of the country, belonged to every inhabitant of the Netherlands.

BUT although Philip did not think proper to dismiss them from his service, he resolved that they should not have power to frustrate his intentions. And for this purpose he left, for principal counsellor to the regent, the bishop of Arras, whose views were entirely coincident with his own, and in whom, therefore, the dutchess of Parma was desired to repose unlimited confidence.

The bishop
of Arras.

ANTONY PERENOT, bishop of Arras, so well known in the history of the Netherlands by the name of cardinal Granvelle, was son to the celebrated chancellor of that name, whom the late emperor had for many years intrusted with the management of his most important affairs. Antony having been early initiated into business, had been employed by the emperor for several years in the nicest political negotiations, and in some of the highest departments of the state. He was a person of extraordinary abilities, and particularly distinguished for his eloquence, his activity, his industry, and address. Yet he was extremely odious to the people

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN

15

people whom he was left to govern, who looked upon him as the principal author of all their grievances. In the court of Charles and elsewhere it was of Philip, he had acquired more and more, not unfavourable perhaps to the character of a national prince, but which rendered him exceedingly unfit for the government of the Low Countries, where the power of the sovereign was in many limited by the laws. He was naturally arrogant and impatient, vain, and ostentatious of his credit with the king, and, by an imperious and intrusive behaviour, had disgusted many of his friends, and increased the resentment of his enemies. He was particularly odious to the principal nobility, and in the course of his ministry, had been instrumental in disappointing many of them in their most important views of ambition and interest.

In the hands of a person so universally disliked, it could not reasonably be expected that the government would proceed smoothly. While Philip himself was present, the discontented nobles were overawed. But no sooner was that restraint removed which the king's presence imposed upon them, than their ill-humour broke out with a degree of violence that drew after it the most serious and important consequences.

* Bentivoglio, & Straits, & Dom. Ferris, tom. 1.



THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK IV.

PHILIP set sail from the Netherlands with a ^{Book IV.} fleet of near seventy ships, on the 20th of August, and arrived at Laredo, in the province of Biscay, on the 29th. He reached the port in safety, but no sooner had he landed than a dreadful storm arose, in which a part of his fleet was shipwrecked; above a thousand men perished, and a great number of capital paintings, statues, and other curious works of art, were lost, which Charles had been employed during forty years in collecting, in Germany, Italy, and Flanders.

PHILIP, animated by a spirit similar to that which prompted him, after the victory of St. Quintin, to consecrate a church to St. Laurence, thought he could not, on this occasion, express his gratitude for his preservation, in a manner more acceptable to the Deity, than by declaring his resolution to dedicate his life to the defence of the catholic faith, and the extirpation of heresy ^a.

As

^a Father Paul, lib. v. p. 417.

Book IV.

1559.
The joy of
the Spaniards
on this
occasion.

As the Spaniards had not for many years enjoyed the presence of their sovereign, his arrival diffused universal joy throughout the kingdom. His administration before his marriage with the queen of England had procured him the general esteem, and he was now more respected than ever, on account of the signal success with which his arms had been attended in his war with France, and the moderation and equity which he had displayed in the peace of Chateau-Cambresis.

Philip's attachment to
Spain.

THE proofs of affection which he received at this time from his Spanish subjects, were the stronger, because, although Philip seldom suffered either joy or sorrow to appear in his looks, his discourse, or behaviour, it was well known how much he was attached to his native country, more than to any of his other dominions; and it was generally believed, that he intended to fix in it his perpetual residence. His manners were suited only to those of his Spanish subjects; he could not, as has been already mentioned, speak with facility any other language but theirs, and he possessed not that courage and enterprise by which the late emperor had been determined to undertake so many voyages and journeys to the different states which were subject to his dominion. The Low Countries had not, in the eyes of Philip, those charms by which Charles had been so powerfully attracted; and were particularly disagreeable to him, on account of the restrictions which their free constitution of government imposed on his authority.

In the beginning of the reign of Charles, Spain was one of the freest states in Europe; but as the nobles were humbled, and their power abridged, during the arbitrary, but vigorous administration of cardinal Ximenes; so the ill-concerted and unsuccessful attempt which the commons of Castile made some years afterwards, to assert their rights, served only to exalt the royal prerogative, which they intended

tended to have circumscribed, and to reduce the Cortes to an intire dependence on the crown. And although in Arragon the people still enjoyed their ancient privileges, yet there was little probability that they would ever adventure to dispute the will of their prince; who possessed such inexhaustible resources, and could, when he pleased, employ even their own countrymen the Castilians, to subdue them. But there was no circumstance which served more to increase Philip's partiality for Spain, and to make him prefer it to any of his other dominions for the place of his abode, than the full establishment which the court of inquisition had acquired in that kingdom, and the security which this institution afforded him against the propagation of heresy.

Book IV.

1559.

THIS tribunal, which, although it was not the parent, has been the nurse and guardian of ignorance and superstition, in every kingdom into which it has been admitted, was introduced into Spain near a century before the present period, by Ferdinand and Isabella; and was principally intended to prevent the relapse of the Jews and Moors, who had been converted, or pretended to be converted to the faith of the church of Rome. Its jurisdiction was not confined to the Jews and Moors, but extended to all those who, in their practice or opinions, differed from the established church. In the united kingdoms of Castile and Arragon, there were eighteen different inquisitorial courts; having each of them its counsellors, termed Apostolic Inquisitors; its secretaries, serjeants, and other officers; and besides these, there were twenty thousand familiars dispersed throughout the kingdom, who acted as spies and informers, and were employed to apprehend all suspected persons, and to commit them for their trial, to the prisons which belonged to the inquisition. By these familiars, persons were seized on bare suspicion; and, in contradiction to the common rules of law, they were put to the torture, tried

Of the in-
quisition.

BOOK IV. tried and condemned by the inquisitors, without being confronted either with their accusers, or with the witnesses on whose evidence they were condemned. The punishments inflicted were more or less dreadful, according to the caprice and humour of the judges. The unhappy victims were either strangled, or committed to the flames, or loaded with chains and shut up in dungeons during life. Their effects were confiscated, and their families stigmatised with infamy ^b.

THIS institution was, no doubt, well calculated to produce an uniformity of religious profession; but it had a tendency likewise to destroy the sweets of social life; to banish all freedom of thought and speech; to disturb mens minds with the most disquieting apprehensions, and to produce the most intolerable slavery, by reducing persons of all ranks in life to a state of abject dependence upon priests; whose integrity, were it even greater than that of other men, as in every false religion it is less, must have been corrupted by the uncontrouled authority which they were allowed to exercise.

SUCH nearly were the sentiments which even the Spaniards entertained of this iniquitous tribunal, at the time when it was erected ^c. But not having had experience then of its pernicious effects, and considering it as intended for the chastisement of Jews and infidels, they only murmured and complained; till, the yoke being wreathed about their necks, the most secret murmurings became dangerous, and often fatal to those who uttered them.

Effects of
this institu-
tion on the
character of
the people.

By this tribunal, a visible change was wrought in the temper of the people; and reserve, distrust, and jealousy, became the distinguishing character of a Spaniard. It perpetuated and confirmed the reign of ignorance and superstition. It inflamed the rage of religious bigotry; and, by the cruel spectacles

to

^b Mariana, lib. xxiv. c. 16. p. 137.

^c Mariana.

to which, in the execution of its decrees, it familiarised the people, it nourished in them that ferocious spirit, which, in the Netherlands and America, they manifested by deeds that have fixed an everlasting reproach on the Spanish name.

BUT these considerations could not be apprehended by Philip; nor, if they had been suggested to him, would they have had any influence upon his conduct. He had imbibed, in all its virulence, that spirit of bigotry and persecution, which gave birth to the inquisition. He regarded heretics as the most odious of criminals; and considered a departure in his subjects from the Romish superstition, as the most dreadful calamity that could befall them. He was therefore determined to support the inquisitors with all his power, and he encouraged them to exert themselves, in the exercise of their office, with the utmost diligence.

THE zeal and vigilance of these men fully corresponded to that ardour with which their sovereign was inflamed; yet so irresistible in this age was the spirit of innovation, and so great the force of truth, that the opinions of the reformers had found their way even into Spain, and were embraced openly by great numbers of both sexes, among whom there were both priests and nuns.

EVEN the archbishop of Toledo, Bartolomé de Caranza y Miranda, was, from certain propositions contained in a catechism which he published, suspected to have espoused them. The inquisitors informed the king of the grounds of their suspicion, and desired to receive his instructions for their conduct. Caranza had been universally respected as one of the most virtuous and learned prelates in Spain. Having, when provincial of the order of St. Dominique, been carried by Philip into England, as a person well qualified to promote the re-establishment of popery in that kingdom, he had laboured

Caranza
Abp. of Toledo.

BOOK IV. laboured with so much zeal for that end, and there-
 1559. by recommended himself so powerfully to the king,
 that in the year one thousand five hundred and
 fifty-seven, Philip advanced him to the primacy.
 His first employment after attaining this high dig-
 nity was to administer spiritual comfort to the late
 emperor, whom he attended in his last distress.
 But the memory of his merit and services was now
 obliterated. Philip wrote to the inquisitors from
 the Netherlands, that they must, without hesitati-
 on, proceed against the archbishop as they would
 do against other delinquents; and that they should
 not spare even his own son, if they found him
 guilty of heresy. Caranza was accordingly thrown
 into prison, and his revenues were sequestrated.
 The propositions in his catechism, at which the in-
 quisitors had taken offence, were held to be of a dis-
 putable nature even among the catholics them-
 selves. It is probable, however, that sentence would
 have been pronounced against him, had not the
 pope interposed, and claimed an exclusive right to
 decide the cause. Philip, anxious for the honour of
 the holy office, to whose power he was desirous
 that no bounds should be prescribed, employed
 all his interest to prevail on the pontiff to drop
 his pretensions. But at last he himself yielded;
 and Caranza, after having languished in prison for
 six years and seven months, was transported to
 Rome, where he was released from confinement,
 but died in a few weeks after he was set at liberty^d.

An Auto-
 de-feat Val-
 ladolid,

witnessed
 by Philip.

BEFORE Philip's arrival in the city of Valladolid, an Auto-de-fe had been celebrated, in which a great number of protestants were committed to the flames. There were still in the prisons of the inquisition more than thirty persons, against whom the same dreadful punishment had been denounc-
 ed. Philip, eager to give public proof as early as possible

^d Ferreras, Annis 1559 and 1565. Campana, an. 1559. Miniani, lib. v. c. 11.

possible of his abhorrence of these innovators, defired the inquisitors to fix a day for their execution; and he resolved to witness it. The dreadful ceremony (more repugnant to humanity, as well as to the spirit of the christian religion, than the most abominable sacrifices recorded in the annals of the pagan world) was conducted with the greatest solemnity which the inquisitors could devise; and Philip, attended by his son Don Carlos, by his sister, and by his courtiers and guards, sat within sight of the unhappy victims. After hearing a sermon from the bishop of Zamora, he rose from his seat, and having drawn his sword, as a signal, that with it he would defend the holy faith, he caused an oath to be administered to him by the inquisitor-general, that he would support the inquisition and its ministers, against all heretics and apostates, or others who should attempt to oppose it; and would compel his subjects every where to yield obedience to its decrees.

AMONG the protestants condemned, there was a nobleman of the name of Don Carlos di Sessa, who, when the executioners were conducting him to the stake, called out to the king for mercy, saying, "And can'st thou thus, O king, witness the tortments of thy subjects? Save us from this cruel death; we do not deserve it." "No," Philip sternly replied, "I would myself carry wood to burn my own son, were he such a wretch as thou." After which, he beheld the horrid spectacle that followed, with a composure and tranquillity that betokened the most unfeeling heart.

THIS dreadful severity, joined with certain rigid laws, enacted to prevent the importation of Lutheran books, soon produced the desired effect. After the celebration of another Auto-de-fe, in which about

* Io traen lenna para quemar a mi hijo, si fuere tan malo como vos. Cabrera, lib. v. c. 3. Miniana, l. v. c. 11.

† In Seville.

BOOK IV. about fifty protestants suffered, all the rest, if there were any who still remained, either concealed their sentiments, or made their escape into foreign parts ■■■

1559.

PHILIP proceeded next to settle the civil government of the kingdom; and, according to the Spanish historians, he discovered in the choice of his ministers, and of the governors of towns and provinces, much prudence and circumspection; of which last, an historian gives the following instance, that besides making diligent inquiry concerning the characters of the several candidates for office, he kept a register for his own use, in which he recorded all the vices and defects, as well as the virtues and accomplishments of each ^b.

He might have confined his attention to objects of this nature, and have applied himself wholly to the internal administration of his dominions, had he not found it necessary to provide against the hostile intentions with which the Turkish emperor, and the corsairs of Barbary, were animated against him.

Of the Turkish emperor.

THE Ottoman empire was, in the present period, at the summit of its glory, under the victorious Solyman; the greatest and the most enlightened of all the Sultans. In Persia, in Hungary, and in Africa, this heroic prince had widely extended the limits of his empire; had expelled the knights of St. John from Rhodes, which till then had been deemed impregnable; had stripped the Venetians of a great part of their territories; laid waste the coasts of Italy and Spain; and filled all Europe with admiration of his exploits, and with the terror of his name. From the time of his competition with Ferdinand in Hungary, he had regarded the princes of the house of Austria as his rivals. He had assisted Henry II. of France, first against Charles, and afterwards against Philip; as he had formerly assisted Francis against the emperor.

And

^a Miniana, lib. v. c. 11.

^b Ibid.

And in the late war, although by some accident his fleet did not arrive in time to act in concert with that of France, yet it came afterwards under his admiral Piali, who, having landed his troops in Italy, and in the islands of Prochita and Minorca, put great numbers of the inhabitants to the sword, and carried off many hundred prisoners into slavery¹.

Book IV.
1559.

From an enemy so powerful and enterprising, Philip had much to apprehend. But he believed it to be inconsistent with the character of protector of the church, to which he aspired, to enter into any alliance with a prince who was the declared and irreconcilable enemy of Christianity; and therefore, far from proposing any terms of accommodation, he issued orders for putting the coasts of Spain and Italy into a posture of defence, lest Solyman should find leisure from his other occupations to renew hostilities.

But the Spanish monarch had more immediate cause of inquietude from the corsairs on the coast of Africa, who had become much more formidable than before by the assistance which Solyman had afforded them ever since they acknowledged him for their sovereign. They consisted of Turks, Arabs, Negroes, and Moors; the last of whom were partly natives, and partly such as had been expelled from Spain in the time of Ferdinand and Isabella. They were all men of barbarous manners, inflamed with the most bigoted zeal for the Mahometan religion, open foes to almost every Christian power, and animated with a peculiar hatred against the Spaniards, who had often attacked them in their strong holds, and had long treated their brother Mahometans, the Morescoes in Spain, with inhumanity. They had often taken full revenge for these injuries, under the celebrated brothers, Horuc and Hay-

The Corsairs of
Barbary.

VOL. I.

H

radin

¹ Ferreras, ann. 1558.

BOOK IV. radin Barbarossas. Their principal fleet was now
 1559. commanded by another corsair, of the name of
 Dragut, the Barbarossa of his age, and not inferior
 to either of the two brothers in those qualifications
 by which they were so eminently distinguished.

Dragut. BORN in a little village in Natolia, opposite to
 the isle of Rhodes, and sprung, like the Barbarossas,
 from the meanest parents, Dragut had, in his youth,
 enlisted himself on board a Turkish galley, and had
 served there for some years as a common sailor. In
 that station he gave conspicuous proofs of his capa-
 city. He seemed however to be governed by a
 passion extremely different from that ambition
 which is the ordinary attendant upon genius, and
 to have no other end in view than to enrich himself.
 But as soon as he had acquired a certain sum of
 money, he purchased a galley of his own, and
 began the adventurous occupation of a corsair, in
 which he became remarkable for his skill in naviga-
 tion, his knowledge of the seas, his intrepidity, and
 enterprise. His character did not remain long un-
 known to Hayradin Barbarossa, who was at that
 time high admiral of the Turkish fleet. Barbarossa
 gladly received Dragut into his service, and having
 made him his lieutenant, he gave him the command
 of twelve of his ships of war. With this fleet Dra-
 gut did infinite mischief to all the European states
 who traded in the Mediterranean, the French only
 excepted, whose monarchs were in alliance with the
 Turkish emperor. He suffered no season to pass
 unemployed. Scarcely a single Spanish or Italian
 ship escaped him; and when he failed in taking a
 sufficient number of prizes, he commonly made
 some sudden descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy,
 plundering the country, and carrying off great
 numbers of the inhabitants into captivity. In these
 descents he was generally fortunate; but in the
 year 1541, having landed his men in a creek in
 Corsica, they were scattered along the coast, and
 employed

employed in collecting their booty, when Juanetin Doria, the brave nephew of the illustrious Andrew Doria, came upon him with a superior force, took nine of his ships, and compelled him to surrender. When he was carried on board the admiral's galley, he could not restrain his indignation, but exclaimed, "And am I then doomed to be thus loaded with fetters by a beardless youth?" a saying which occasioned his meeting with harder usage than he would otherwise have received. Both Barbarossa and Solymán interested themselves in his behalf, and made tempting offers to the Genoese for his ransom. Notwithstanding which they detained him four years in captivity; nor could they be persuaded to set him at liberty till Barbarossa, with a hundred galleys under his command, appeared before their town, and threatened to lay it in ashes if he were not instantly released. The Genoese found it necessary to comply with this request; and Dragut, who was immediately afterwards furnished with a strong squadron of ships by Barbarossa, and was now inflamed with redoubled hatred against all who bore the name of Christians, resumed his former occupation, and sought after opportunities, with unceasing ardour, to wreck his vengeance upon his enemies. Besides captures which he made at sea, he sacked and pillaged, year after year, innumerable villages and towns in Italy and the adjacent isles. Having been dispossessed by Doria of his strong sea-port of Mohedia on the coast of Barbary, he had ample revenge afterwards on that gallant seaman, in an engagement off Naples, in which he took six of his ships, with a great number of troops on board, and obliged Doria himself, and the rest of the fleet, to fly before him. In the year immediately following he subdued almost the whole island of Corsica, and delivered it into the hands of the French. After this, having made himself master of Tripoli, he fortified that place in the strongest manner. From Tripoli he issued

Book IV. forth as often as the season would permit ; and
 1559. after Philip's accession, and even after peace was
 concluded between France and Spain, he continued
 to practise as formerly his depredations upon the
 coasts of Sicily, Naples, and other states which
 belonged to the Spanish monarchy.

Expedition
 against Tri-
 poli and the
 isle of
 Gerba.

OF these hostilities Philip had received particular
 information before he left the Netherlands, and had
 been earnestly exhorted by the Sieur de la Valette,
 grand-master of the knights of Malta, and the duke
 de Medina Cœli, governor of Sicily, to think seri-
 ously of putting an end to the innumerable mis-
 chiefs to which his subjects were exposed from this
 active corsair, by sending such a force against him
 as might compel him to abandon his retreat. Philip
 readily consented to this request ; and as he was in-
 formed by la Vallette, that Dragut himself was ab-
 sent at that time from Tripoli, carrying on an in-
 land war against one of the kings in Barbary, he
 sent immediate orders to the duke de Medina Cœli,
 Doria, and others, to hasten forward the preparati-
 ons necessary for the intended enterprise. The pope
 and most of the other princes in Italy contributed
 their assistance, and a fleet was assembled consisting
 of more than a hundred ships, having 14,000 sol-
 diers on board. This armament, of which the duke
 de Medina Cœli had the chief command, set sail
 from Messina in the end of October 1559, and
 passed over to Syracuse. There it was detained by
 contrary winds for several weeks, and during that
 time a disease, occasioned by unwholesome provisi-
 ons, carried off between three and four thousand
 of the troops. Medina Cœli however proceeded in
 his voyage, still hoping that he had force sufficient
 to ensure success ; and it is probable that he would
 not have been disappointed had he advanced di-
 rectly and laid siege to Tripoli. But he thought it
 would facilitate the reduction of that place, to make
 himself master beforehand of the isle of Gerba,
 which

which lies a few miles from Tripoli, and was held by a Moorish governor, attached to the interest of Dragut. This island was subdued with little difficulty; and a castle which had been erected upon it was, after a feeble resistance, abandoned by the Moors, whose commander swore allegiance upon the Alcoran to the king of Spain.

Book IV.
1559.

It was the opinion of some of the principal officers that this castle should be immediately destroyed, and that the fleet should proceed to Tripoli without delay. But the duke was unfortunately of a different opinion, and resolved not only to preserve the castle, but to strengthen and enlarge it. In this preposterous undertaking a great deal of time was lost. Dragut had returned with his army from his inland expedition; and he had leisure not only to provide for the security of the town, but to send notice to the Grand Seignior of the operations of the Christian fleet, which he represented might be attacked with great advantage in its present situation, while the commander was off his guard, and most of the forces were on shore.

SOLYMAN embraced without hesitation the tempting opportunity which was thus presented to him. He fitted out, with the utmost expedition, a fleet of seventy-four gallies, put a hundred Janissaries, besides other soldiers, on board each of them, and gave the command to his admiral Piali, with orders to proceed in his voyage as fast as possible. The Spaniards were informed of his approach by a Maltese frigate, and were thrown into great perplexity. A council of war was immediately held. Some officers were for waiting till the enemy should arrive, and advised Medina to give them battle. Others, among whom was the younger Doria*, whose courage was unquestionable, were of opinion, that considering

Destruction
of the Span-
ish fleet by
the Turks.

* The elder Doria was prevented from taking a part in this expedition by the infirmities of old age.

Book IV. sidering the sickly condition of the troops, and the
 1559. great diminution which they had undergone, they could not contend with so powerful an enemy without the utmost danger of a total overthrow, and therefore that they ought immediately to retire, and conduct the fleet to a place of safety. The duke de Medina Coeli, a man of no experience in maritime affairs, and utterly unqualified for the charge which he had undertaken, was at a loss to determine to which of the two measures proposed he should give the preference. There was a necessity for embracing instantly either the one or the other. Yet he balanced between them for some days, and still continued to make the troops work in completing the fortifications of the castle, till intelligence was brought him that the enemy were at hand, and steering directly towards the island.

THERE was no time now to put the fleet into a posture of defence. Both the mariners and soldiers were overwhelmed with terror; and each crew, without waiting for the word of command, made haste, with oars and sails, to escape from the impending danger. Several ships foundered among the flats and shallows. Others were driven back by the wind, or by the enemy, and wrecked upon the island. Some escaped, and particularly those which belonged to the order of St. John, through their superior acquaintance with the coast. Above thirty were taken by the Turks; about one thousand men were killed or drowned, and five thousand taken prisoners. Medina Coeli, with Doria and some other principal officers, passed in the night through the middle of the enemy's fleet, and arrived safe at Malta; having, before his departure, committed the charge of the fort of Gerba to Don Alvaro de Sande, to whom he gave the strongest assurances of speedy assistance and relief.

The siege of
 the fort of
 Gerba by
 the Turks.

THIS valiant Spaniard had very little reason to trust to these assurances, and could not expect to be

be able to hold out long against so great a force as **Book IV.**
 he knew would be employed against him; especially **1559.**
 as he was but indifferently furnished with provisions,
 and was much more likely to find enemies than
 friends in the natives of the island. Notwithstanding
 these discouraging circumstances, he readily under-
 took the arduous task assigned him; and having got
 his garrison augmented by the crews of those ships
 which, in attempting to make their escape, had
 been driven back upon the coast, he prepared with
 great alacrity for a vigorous defence.

PIALI lost no time after his victory, but im-
 mediately landed his troops and began the siege. He
 was furnished with artillery by Dragut, who brought
 it himself, together with some fresh forces, from
 Tripoli. About twelve thousand Turks, besides
 the islanders and other Moors, were employed in the
 siege. In their first approaches many of them were
 killed. But soon after their battery had been un-
 masked, a great part of the wall of the fort was
 laid in ruins. The besieged in the mean time be-
 gan to suffer greatly from the heat of the season,
 and from the scarcity and unwholesomeness of the
 water and provisions. Great numbers died, and
 many, grown impatient under the hardships to
 which they were exposed, deserted to the enemy.
 By these men Piali was informed of the distressed
 condition of the garrison; and he invited them to
 surrender, and promised to spare their lives. Don
 Alvaro rejected this offer with disdain, and still per-
 sisted in the defence. But at length finding that his
 stock of provisions was almost spent, and having
 despaired of the relief which had been promised by
 Medina, he called together the garrison, which
 amounted now only to one thousand men, and hav-
 ing reminded them of the glory which they had ac-
 quired, and informed them that they had neither
 bread to support their bodies, nor numbers to defend
 the

End of July
 1560.

Book IV. the fort any longer, he desired them to resolve, whether they would give themselves up tamely to be the slaves of their barbarous enemy, or imitate the example which he would set them, and die with their arms in their hands, fighting bravely for the honour of their religion and their country. The soldiers called out with one voice, "That they chose death rather than slavery; and were ready to follow wheresoever he should lead them." He then desired they would refresh themselves with such victuals as still remained, and hold themselves in readiness to leave the fort about the middle of the night.

At that time they set out, by the gate which looked towards the sea, and having passed a triple rampart, which had been thrown up to prevent their sallies, they made dreadful havock among the Turks, and had almost reached the general's tent, when they were put to a stand by the Janissaries. They fought long and desperately; but at last, the whole Turkish camp being up in arms, they were overpowered by numbers, and almost all of them were slain. Alvaro, with two officers who had kept near him, forced his way through the thickest part of the enemy, till he reached the shore, and got on board a Spanish ship which had been stranded. There he was standing at day-break, with his target in one hand and his sword in the other, surrounded by the Turkish soldiers, who would have quickly buried him under their darts, if their officers, who highly respected his heroic valour, had not restrained them. Having been urged by a Genoese renegade to lay down his arms, and assured of receiving a treatment suitable to his rank and merit, he at last consented to surrender himself to Piali¹.

SUCH

¹ He was carried to Constantinople with the other prisoners, and was afterwards set at liberty; by an article in a treaty of peace between the Sultan and the emperor of Germany.

SUCH was the conclusion of this unfortunate enterprise; the failure of which, and all the calamities which ensued, seem to have been owing principally to the weakness, obstinacy, and inexperience of the commander in chief; yet we do not find that Philip ever expressed any dissatisfaction with his conduct. He either viewed it in a different light from that in which it has been represented by the contemporary historians; or he considered, that it would have been a tacit acknowledgment of his own want of discernment, to accuse, of imprudence, or incapacity, a person whom he had judged deserving of so great a trust. Instead of this, he applied himself to provide against the effects which he had reason to dread from the success of the Turkish arms. He could hardly doubt that Piali would pursue his victory, and make a descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy.

BOOK IV.

1559.

THE inhabitants were every where agitated with the most alarming apprehensions. Watch-towers were raised along the coast; and the fleet, which had lately suffered so much, was repaired with the utmost diligence. But these preparations, although they were afterwards found useful, were not at present necessary. Solyman having other objects of ambition which engrossed his attention, recalled his fleet to Constantinople, and thus delivered the Italians and Spaniards from their present fears ^m.

PHILIP soon afterwards received intelligence that Hascem, son of the celebrated Barbarossa, and viceroy of Algiers under Solyman, had formed a design upon Oran and Mazarquivir, two strong forts on the coast of Barbary, which had been in the possession of Spain since the year one thousand five hundred and nine, when they were subdued by cardinal Ximenes. In order to frustrate this design, a fleet of twenty-four gallies had been ordered

The siege of Oran and Mazarquivir.

^m Cabrera, lib. v. c. 5. 8. 12. 13. Miniana, lib. v. c. 12.

BOOK IV. dered to sail to Oran, for the reinforcement of the
 1559. garrison; but this fleet had been overtaken in the middle of its course by a dreadful storm, in which two and twenty of the ships were lost, and upwards of four thousand men.

By this accident Hascem was encouraged to proceed in his projected enterprize. Having persuaded several of the Mahometan princes in Barbary to assist him with their troops, he arrived in the neighbourhood of Oran early in the spring, with a fleet of more than thirty ships, and an army of a hundred thousand men. Of the two places which he intended to attack, only Masarquivir is a sea-port, and Oran lies at the distance of near a league from it. With so great an army he was enabled to block up both places at once; but he began his operations with the siege of Masarquivir, which, though of greater importance by reason of its situation, was not so strongly fortified.

THE count de Alcaudete, the Spanish governor, who had foreseen the approaching storm, had provided to the utmost of his power for the security of the places committed to his care; and both he and his brother Don Martin de Cordova, to whom he committed the chief command in Masarquivir, were determined to hold out to the last extremity. Many bloody rencounters passed between the contending parties, in the sallies which Alcaudete made from Oran; and in these the Spaniards had generally the advantage. Don Martin, and the troops under his command, gave, if possible, still stronger proofs of intrepidity in their defence of Masarquivir. The walls were laid in ruins by the enemy's artillery. Hascem made eleven different assaults, and his standard was raised again and again upon the ruins of the walls; yet he was finally repulsed and obliged, notwithstanding his numbers, to yield to the unconquerable obstinacy of the Spaniards. These brave men, however, were now sensible, that,

that, from the want of provisions, they must ere long either throw away their lives, or submit to that odious slavery to which they knew that the implacable hatred of their ungenerous enemy had doomed them.

Book IV.

1559.

PHILIP was not ignorant of the distress to which they were reduced; and he had exerted himself with great activity in making preparations for their relief. But as Mafarquivir was blocked up by sea as well as by land, it was necessary that the supplies which he had provided should be accompanied with a fleet superior to that of the enemy. Such a fleet he at last collected from Italy and the sea-ports in Spain, and gave the command of it to Don Francis de Mendoza, with instructions to sail for Mafarquivir with the utmost expedition. Mendoza happily arrived in time. Having come unexpectedly upon Hascem's fleet, he took nine ships, and put the rest to flight; and Hascem himself, who had been employed for some days in preparing for a new assault, perceiving the danger to which he was exposed from the Spanish fleet on the one hand, and the garrisons in Oran and Mafarquivir on the other, raised the siege precipitately, after it had lasted for three months; and marched off with all his forces to Algiers. The Spaniards pursued for several miles; but finding they were unable to overtake him, they returned; and the fleet, after reinforcing the garrisons of Oran and Mafarquivir, set sail for Spain, where they were received with great rejoicing. The count de Alcaudete was soon after made viceroy of Navarre; Don Martin received distinguished marks of the royal favour; and all the officers, and even private soldiers, were rewarded in proportion to their rank and merit ^a.

The siege of Oran raised by the Spaniards.

DURING the absence of the fleet the trade of Spain had sustained considerable prejudice from the depredations

The reduction of Penon de Velez by the Spaniards.

^a Cabrera. lib. vi. Herrera Hist. Gen. del Mondo, lib. v. c. 3. and 4.

BOOK IV. depredations of a celebrated corsair, of the name of
 1559.

Cara Mustapha, who, with a squadron of six or seven ships, traversed the Mediterranean with unwearied activity, and made innumerable captures. His retreat was a fort on the African coast, called Pennon de Velez, which, in those days, before the invention of bombs, was reckoned almost impregnable. It is situated on a steep and rugged rock, and is inaccessible, except by a narrow path, cut out in the rock itself; which is separated from the continent by a channel, capable of containing about a dozen of those ships which were usually employed in cruising. This rock was fortified, both above and below, with a wall, flanked with bastions, and mounted with cannon; and afforded a constant shelter and protection to the corsairs, when pursued. From its situation near the straits, these corsairs could annoy the Christians, while they themselves were exposed to very little danger; and it was become an object of the most serious concern to all the Christian powers who traded in the Mediterranean, to wrest it from them.

In consequence of a report which gained credit, that Solymán intended this year to make an attack either on Spain or Italy, Philip had greatly augmented his naval force; but when he found that either there had been no ground for this report, or that the Sultan had changed his design, he thought that he could not employ his fleet more usefully than by attempting to reduce Pennon de Velez, which had been long an object of much dread to his subjects.

Not satisfied with his own numerous fleet, he solicited assistance from Portugal, from the knights of Malta, and from his allies in Italy; nor did he permit them to set sail from Malaga, the place of rendezvous, till he had collected above ninety galleys, besides sixty ships of a smaller size, with no less than thirteen thousand soldiers on board. The providing

providing of so great a force was not merely an effect of that extraordinary caution with which Philip commonly entered upon any military enterprise; and such a number of troops could not be employed in besieging a place of such small extent as Penon de Velez; but, as the Moors in the country adjacent were deeply interested in the preservation of the fort, on account of immense quantities of commodities of all kinds, and the number of Christian slaves which were daily sold to them by the corsairs, there was reason to apprehend that they would consider the cause of these pirates as their own, and give all the opposition in their power to the Spaniards, in the operations of the siege.

Book IV.
1559.

AGREEABLY to this persuasion, the allies no sooner arrived upon the coast, than great numbers of these barbarians appeared among the hills, by the foot of which the army were obliged to pass in their way to their fort. But these tumultuary troops were not able to prevent the Spaniards from landing; nor, although they gave them some annoyance on their march, could they obstruct the operations of so formidable a body of regular forces. Still, however, it was the opinion of several of the allies, that after all that could be done to reduce a fort of so singular a construction, they would in the issue find it necessary to abandon their attempt. This would probably have happened, if Mustapha himself had been present. But, in order to save his ships from falling a prey to the enemy, he had left the place some time before, and given the command of it to a renegado, of the name of Ferret, with two hundred Turks under him, and ammunition and provisions sufficient to serve for a much longer time than the blockade was likely to continue.

He believed that the Spaniards would soon perceive the folly of their undertaking; and was therefore employed in his usual practice of cruising, with very

Book IV. ^{1559.} very little concern about the fate of his retreat. But he had been deceived in his opinion of those to whom he had committed a charge of so great importance. Both the governor and garrison were intimidated by the sight of that powerful fleet and army which now encompassed them. No sooner were some of their guns dismounted by a Spanish battery, and a part of the wall demolished, than they were struck with the most violent panic, and the governor, and most of the garrison, made their escape to the continent in the middle of the night, by swimming. Such of them only remained as could not swim; and by these men the fort was delivered to the Spaniards.

THERE was much good fortune and little glory in this valuable conquest; but the joy which it excited over all the southern coast of Spain was inexpressible; and it was the more complete, as well as the more generally diffused, because only a very small number had been killed or wounded in their rencounters with the Moors. Don Garcia de Toledo, the commander in chief, was, soon after his return, rewarded by Philip, with the viceroyalty of Sicily^o.

^o Cabrera, lib. vi. c. 17. Ferreras, part xiv. Vertot's Hist. of the Knights of Malta.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK V.

DURING the course of those military operations which have been described, Philip beheld with much anxiety the rapid progress of heresy in almost every state in Europe except Spain; and, in order to obstruct it, he employed all his influence to procure the convocation of a general council of the church.

Book V.

1559.

IN the first years of the reformation, the bigotry of those who adhered to the ancient superstition, suffered them not to think of any other means of extirpating the opinions of the protestants, but persecution; which was exercised against them with the same unrelenting severity, as if they had been guilty of the most atrocious crimes. But it soon appeared how inadequate this barbarous procedure was to the purpose which the Romanists intended. Those bloody edicts which were published, those fires which were lighted up, and that variety of torments which priests and inquisitors invented with ingenious cruelty, served in reality to propagate the doctrines against

The persecution of the protestants.

Book V. against which they were employed, and contributed to inflame, rather than extinguish, that ardent zeal with which the protestants were animated. Being firmly persuaded, that the cause which they maintained, was the cause of God and truth, and that the perseverance would be rewarded with a happy immortality, they courted their punishments instead of avoiding them; and in bearing them, they displayed a degree of fortitude and patience, which, by exciting admiration in the beholders, produced innumerable profelytes to the faith for which they suffered.

Progress of
the Reformation.

SEVERAL princes had been converted to that faith. In some states the protestants had become more numerous and powerful than their opponents; and in others, their opinions so generally prevailed, that the catholic princes found it no longer possible to extirpate them, without depriving themselves of great multitudes of their most industrious subjects, on whom the wealth and importance of their states depended. The time when persecution might have proved effectual was past, and the princes came at length to perceive the necessity of having recourse to some more gentle means than had been hitherto employed. They were at the same time sensible, notwithstanding their prejudices against the reformers, that some reformation was extremely necessary; they had long borne with great impatience the numberless encroachments of the court of Rome; and were convinced, that if some abuses were removed, it would not be impracticable to persuade the protestants to return into the bosom of the church.

A general council desired by the catholic princes.

A GENERAL council appeared to be the only expedient by which this important end could be obtained; and the late emperor Charles had taken infinite pains to procure the convocation of that assembly. In former times the councils of the church had been convened by the emperors themselves; but,

but, in the time of Charles, the power of calling them was, by all true catholics, considered as the peculiar prerogative of the popes; who dreaded, that such assemblies might derogate from their usurped authority, and were therefore inclined, if possible, to prevent them from being held. With the timid Clement, Charles employed all his art and influence to procure a council, but in vain. Paul the third was likewise exceedingly averse from this measure; but the emperor being seconded by almost all the catholic princes in Europe, Paul yielded to their importunities, and summoned a council to meet in Trent. From this place it was afterwards translated to Bologna. After the death of Paul it was again assembled in Trent in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-one, and continued to be held there till the year following; when it was prorogued for two years, upon war being declared against the emperor, by the elector of Saxony.

In the sessions which were held under Paul, that fundamental tenet of the reformers, by which the writings of the evangelists and apostles are held to be the only rule of the Christian faith, was condemned; and equal authority was ascribed to the books termed Apocryphal, and to the oral tradition of the church.

From the manner in which the deliberations of this assembly were conducted; from the nature of its decisions, and from the blind attachment of a great majority of its members to the court of Rome, there was little ground to hope for the attainment of those ends for which the calling of it had been so earnestly desired. But no other expedient could be devised, which the catholics thought so likely to stop the progress of heresy; and therefore, as soon as the war between France and Spain was concluded, the several catholic princes began to think seriously of the restoration of the council.

BOOK V.

1560.
The state of
Europe.

THE state of Europe at that time seemed more than ever to require the application of some immediate remedy. The power and number of the protestants was every day becoming more and more considerable. Both England and Scotland had disclaimed allegiance to the see of Rome, and new-modelled their religion. In the Netherlands the reformers had greatly multiplied of late, notwithstanding the most dreadful cruelties had been exercised against them; and in France, where every province was involved in the most terrible combustion, there was ground to apprehend, that they would soon become too powerful for the catholics, and be able to wrest from them the reins of government. The new opinions had penetrated even into Italy, and had been embraced by a considerable number of persons both in Naples and Savoy. From the former of these States they were extirpated by the unrelenting severity of Philip; who issued orders to his viceroy to put all heretics to death without mercy, and even to pursue with fire and sword a remnant of them who had fled from Cosenza, and were living quietly among the mountains^a.

The pope's
dread of na-
tional sy-
nods in Sa-
voy and in
France.

BUT the duke of Savoy, unwilling to deprive himself of so great a number of useful subjects as had been converted to the protestant faith, was inclined to attempt to enlighten and convince them; and with this view he desired the pope's permission to hold a colloquy of the principal ecclesiastics in his dominions, on the subject of religion. Pius was about the same time informed, that in France a resolution had been formed to have recourse to the same expedient. He believed that no measure could be devised more likely to prove fatal to that exclusive prerogative which he claimed, of judging in matters of religion. He dreaded that the example of France and Savoy would be quickly followed by other States, and the decrees of provincial synods

^a Paul, lib. v.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

115

synods substituted in the place of those of the Holy See. It highly concerned him, therefore, to prevent this measure (so pernicious to his authority) from taking place. Nor did he find much difficulty in dissuading the duke of Savoy from adopting it. "If the heretics," said he to the duke's ambassador, "stand in need of instruction, I will send divines and a legate, by whom they may be both instructed and absolved. But your master will find, that they will lend a deaf ear to all the instructions that can be given them, and will put no other interpretation upon his conduct, but that he wants power to compel them to submit. No good was ever produced by that lenity which he inclines to exercise; but from experience he may learn, that the sooner he shall execute justice on these men, and make use of force to reduce them, the more certain will be his success; and if he will comply with the counsel which I offer, he shall receive from me such assistance as will enable him to carry it into execution."

Book V.
1560.

THE duke, who was sincerely attached to the Romish faith, and closely connected with Philip, unfortunately yielded to these persuasions, and engaged in a bloody war with his protestant subjects; of which he had afterwards the greatest reason to repent ^b.

THE pope met with much more difficulty in preventing a national synod in France, than in Savoy; and was obliged to promise, that he should call a general council without delay. Pius had, before his promotion, taken an oath to this purpose, as all the other cardinals had likewise done, before they proceeded to his election. But no sooner had

His aversion
to the calling of a
council.

I 2

he

^b He found it necessary at last to grant them the free exercise of their religion, after having been worsted by them in several skirmishes among the mountains, and suffering a total overthrow in a pitched battle, in which he lost 7000 of his troops. Paul, lib. v.

BOOK V. *he ascended the papal throne, than he adopted the sentiments of his predecessors ; and shewed that he entertained the same aversion to this assembly which they had so uniformly manifested. He remembered the motives which had determined Paul the third to dissolve it, under the colour of a translation to Bologna. He reflected on the danger to which Julius had been exposed, and from which his good fortune and the war of Germany had delivered him; and he considered, that as there was now no prince so powerful as Charles, by whom the prelates could be overawed, they would probably assume a bolder tone in the council, and attempt to advance their own prerogatives on the ruins of the papacy.*

He finds it necessary to consent to it.

FOR these reasons he would gladly have eluded the performance of his oath. But so great was his dread of the fatal consequences which might arise from a national synod in France, and so earnest the importunity of Philip, of the emperor, and other catholic princes, that he at last thought it necessary to comply with their request ; resolving to employ all his attention in providing against the dangers to which his authority would be thereby exposed.

AFTER many delays, which Pius knew well how to interpose, the bull of convocation, summoning the council to meet in Trent at Easter, was published in the consistory on the twenty-ninth of September one thousand five hundred and sixty ; and nuncios were dispatched to give intimation of it to all the Christian powers.

The bull of convocation.

THE pope and cardinals were greatly at a loss to determine whether the council should be mentioned in the bull as a new one, or as a continuation of that which had been held under Paul and Julius. The decision of this point, seemingly of small importance, was rendered difficult by the consequences which it involved. For if the continuation were declared, then all those decrees of the former sessions,

sions, which were levelled against the protestants, would be held sacred, and receive the sanction of the council that was about to be convened. The protestants would consider themselves as already condemned, and pay no regard to the bull of convocation. Whereas, if in this bull the assembly to be summoned were denominated a new council, they might expect that all the points in controversy would be discussed anew, and consequently, might be persuaded to send deputies to the council, and to acknowledge its authority.

Book V.
1560.

IN this the emperor and the queen-mother and ministers of France were deeply interested; and they urged with great earnestness, that in the bull no mention should be made of the former sessions, and no occasion given the protestants to suspect that any restriction would be laid upon the proceedings of the council. Philip was governed by views and sentiments of a very different nature. His detestation of the protestants prevented him from relishing any other method of dealing with them, but that of force. He was utterly averse from making any concessions to reconcile them; and he desired the celebration of the council, not so much in order to recover those who had already revolted from the church, as either to prevent others from following their example, or, as Pius afterwards suspected, to increase the power of the bishops and princes, by abridging the jurisdiction of the pope; to whose exorbitant pretensions Philip was in reality adverse, notwithstanding that devoted attachment to the Holy See which he affected, in order to promote his ambitious designs. With these views and sentiments, Philip did not desire that the protestants should come to the council. He believed that their presence would serve only to perplex and retard its deliberations. He apprehended, that to suffer the decrees of the former sessions to be again discussed, would contribute to invalidate the authority

Book V.
1560.

city of the council itself: and for this reason he thought it necessary that the intended meeting should be declared a continuation of the council which had formerly been prorogued.

IN this matter Philip's sentiments were entirely conformable to those of the pope; but Pius durst not, on this occasion, run the risk of giving offence either to the emperor or to the court of France; and therefore, after long deliberation, he couched the bull of convocation in such ambiguous expressions, as might be interpreted to signify either a new council, or a continuation of the former. This expedient had, in some degree, the effect intended. Although neither of the parties was entirely satisfied, yet neither of them was so much disgusted as either the one or the other would have been, if the terms had been explicit; and the bull was at length received by the emperor and the French king, as well as by Philip, and the other catholic princes; who all gave orders to the ecclesiastics in their dominions to repair to Trent at the time appointed.

The protestants refuse to attend the council.

IN the bull, only bishops, abbots, and others entitled to vote by the rules and ancient practice of the church, were summoned to attend. But an invitation was carried to the several protestant powers, by two nuncios, Martinengo and Commendone.

Their reason.

THE protestant princes in Germany were, on this occasion, assembled at Naumburgh, in Upper-Saxony; and to that place the emperor sent three ambassadors, to second the nuncios in their invitation. To the imperial ambassadors, the princes replied in terms expressive of their respect for Ferdinand. They thanked him for the solicitude which he discovered in their behalf; and said, that nothing would be more agreeable to them than a general council, provided it were calculated to heal the divisions of the church. But no such desirable effect, they thought, could be expected from the council to which they were now invited; which

which was called by one whose authority they could not acknowledge ; and in which (as appeared from the bull of convocation) only those were to have decisive votes, who had sworn allegiance to the pope, and the see of Rome.

Book V.

1560.

THE nuncios however were brought in, and briefs were delivered by them from the pope to each of the princes ; but these briefs were on the next day returned unopened, with the following declaration : “ That as they did not acknowledge any jurisdiction in the bishop of Rome, there was no reason why they should explain to him their sentiments of the council, which they had already done to the emperor “.

FROM Naumburg the nuncios set out for England and Denmark ; but they were obliged to stop short, Martinengo in the Low Countries, and Com-mendone at Lubec ; the latter having been forbid to proceed by Frederic, and the former by Elizabeth, both of whom had resolved to give no encouragement to the intended council.

THE opinion which the protestants entertained of the sinister intentions of the pope was fully justified by the event. In the very first decree of the first session, when many of the prelates were not yet arrived, his legates, who presided in this assembly, procured it to be enacted, that they only should propose the several questions to be discussed ; and thus they made at once effectual provision against all attempts to correct any of the numberless abuses in the court of Rome, for remedying which the meeting of the council had been desired. Against this decree Philip and the other princes remonstrated in the most importunate manner, and employed their interest, both with the pope and in the council, to procure the repeal of it. But all their endeavours were ineffectual. Their solicitude on this head served only to confirm Pius

The council meets at Trent, and is governed by the pope and his legates.

in

Book V. in his suspicions of their having formed a design to encroach on his authority. He eluded their applications with consummate artifice, and sent orders to the legates to make all the opposition in their power to any proposal which might be made for annulling the decree.

1560.

Vain attempts to a-
bridge the
power of the
pope.

THIS did not prevent several of the prelates from endeavouring to persuade the council to establish certain points, such as the divine institution and the residency of bishops, which would have struck deep at the root of the papal power. The pope, from whom the legates received instructions on every difficult emergency, was kept in perpetual anxiety; and he sometimes thought of suddenly dissolving an assembly, which he found so difficult to keep within the bounds he prescribed to it. But, by unremitting vigilance and attention, by threatening some prelates with his displeasure, by flattering others, and heaping promises upon them of advancement in the church; and above all, by means of the great number of Italian bishops^d, who depended entirely on his favour, he secured, in every question, a majority of voices; and not only prevented any decision from being passed that might be detrimental to his authority, but procured the ratification of many of those ecclesiastical usurpations which the princes, who had been so solicitous for the convocation of the council, had expected would have been abolished and condemned. These princes were greatly disappointed and chagrined. Their ambassadors, as well as the prelates, complained, that the council, far from enjoying freedom, were fettered in all their deliberations by the secret orders which were daily sent from Rome: and on this head, remonstrances were made again and again to the pope himself, who sometimes vouchsafed a soft, evasive reply; and at other times, appearing to be greatly offended, asserted that the council was at perfect

^d Many of them were so poor, that he was obliged to defray the expences of their attendance.

perfect liberty; and insinuated, that the true source of all the discontent on this head was, that the ambassadors of the princes had not the power of dictating the decrees. Book V.
1560.

WHATEVER ground there was for this insinuation, the deliberations of the council were conducted in the same manner as before, till at length Pius, grown impatient under the perpetual attention and expence which it required from him, sent orders to his legates to bring it as soon as possible to a conclusion. And it was concluded accordingly, with the most indecent precipitation, towards the end of the year one thousand five hundred and sixty-three, without any considerable opposition from the princes, who had long despaired of deriving from it any of those salutary effects which had been expected. They perceived that the pope's influence over it was not to be controuled; and foresaw that the continuance of it must serve only to augment and strengthen his authority, which it had been their intention to circumscribe. Of this they had the most convincing evidence in the concluding session, in which two decrees were passed that had not been mentioned before, and were manifestly designed as an acknowledgment of the subordination of the council to the Holy See. One of these was, That application should be made to the pope for his confirmation of the decrees; and the other, That whatever expressions had been employed in any of the decrees, were to be understood without prejudice to the pope's authority. Conclusion
of the council.
1563.
The last decrees.

Pius rejoiced exceedingly when he was informed of the dissolution of the council, and still more when he received intelligence of these its last decrees. He ordained, on this occasion, a solemn thanksgiving; and in the consistory declared, that he 1564.
The pope's
joy on this
occasion.

* The acts were subscribed by the 4 legates, 2 cardinals, 3 patriarchs, 25 archbishops, 268 bishops, 7 abbots, 7 generals of regulars, and 39 proxies. Paul, lib. viii.

Book V. he would confirm all the decrees, and add many
 1564. reformations to those which had been enacted by
 the council. By these reformations, some of his
 courtiers apprehended that the profits arising from
 their offices would be diminished; and they employ-
 ed all their influence to dissuade him from his pur-
 pose. Pius had no intention to introduce any alte-
 rations of which they had reason to be afraid; but
 he considered, that his refusing to confirm the de-
 crees would be interpreted as a condemnation of
 the council; that all its acts would be thereby
 brought into disrepute; and that occasion might
 thence be taken, by the French and others, to hold
 national assemblies. And he considered likewise,
 that it would depend entirely upon himself to de-
 termine, how far any particular decree should be
 carried into execution. For these reasons he disre-
 garded the objections of his courtiers, and publish-
 ed his bull of confirmation, with the usual formal-
 ities; requiring all prelates and princes to receive
 and enforce the decrees of the holy council of Trent;
 prohibiting all persons, whether laymen or ecclesi-
 astics, from writing any explication of them under
 the form of notes or commentaries; and command-
 ing the catholics every where to have recourse, in
 all dubious cases, to the Apostolic See.

His bull of
confirmation.

Bad effects
of the de-
crees of the
council.

THIS bull was addressed only to the catholics; for Pius did not expect that any greater regard would be paid to it by the protestants than they had shewn to his bull of convocation. The whole conduct of the council had, from the beginning, been calculated to widen, instead of closing, that breach which subsisted between them and the Roman church. The ancient religion was now more clearly ascertained. Its doctrines, the offspring of subtle sophistry, artifice, and presumption, were formally defined; its rites, which had crept into the church in the dark ages of ignorance and superstition, were now made an essential part of worship;
 and

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

123

and anathemas were pronounced against all persons Book V.
by whom either the former or the latter were not
embraced. By this impolitic conduct the protestants
were more clearly instructed where to direct their 1564.
attack; and in those absurdities, into which men
must fall who venture to dogmatise on subjects so
mysterious as many articles of the Christian faith,
they often found abundant matter of victory and
triumph. No concessions of any kind had been
made by the council, in order to reconcile them;
but all their doctrines had been indiscriminately
condemned; and henceforth all ground of hope was
cut off of ever inducing them to return into the bo-
som of the church, by any other means but open
force and persecution.

Pius flattered himself that these means would The decrees
rejected by
the court of
France.
sooner or later prove effectual; and was therefore
little concerned at the conduct of the protestants
with respect to the council. He was much more
deeply affected by the ill-humour which the queen-
mother and ministers of France discovered on the
present occasion. They had been somewhat dis-
gusted at the little regard that had been shewn to
their desire, of having the council declared to be a
new council. They were displeased with the de-
crees of reformation, by some of which the ecclesi-
astical jurisdiction was extended beyond its former
bounds; and they were highly dissatisfied with the
tacit acknowledgment contained in the concluding
decrees, of the superiority of the pope above coun-
cils; an opinion which in France had been always
impugned and rejected. Influenced by these con-
siderations, and desirous at the same time of avoid-
ing to give any fresh occasion of discontent to the
Calvinists, the French court (although earnestly so-
licitated by Pius) refused to receive and publish the
decrees¹.

Pius

¹ Father Paul, lib. v, vi, vii, viii.

Book V.

1564.
They are
accepted by
Philip, and
other catho-
lic princes.

Pius had reason to apprehend that the example of so great a monarchy would be imitated by the other catholic powers. But he had the pleasure of receiving information from his nuncios, that not only the republic of Venice, and the several Italian princes, but most of the catholic princes in Germany, and the king of Spain, had resolved to acknowledge the authority of the council.

Dispute of
precedence
between the
ambassadors
of France
and Spain,

decided in
favour of
France.

In forming this resolution, Philip gave a striking proof of that zeal which he so uniformly felt, or affected, for the catholic religion and the Holy See. No prince was ever more jealous of his power, or more tenacious of his rights; upon some of which encroachments had been made in the decrees of reformation. During the celebration of the council, he had complained loudly of the dependance in which it was held by the pope; he had again and again endeavoured, but in vain, to get that first decree rescinded, by which the legates alone could propose the questions to be discussed; and he had likewise been highly offended with the pope's precipitate dissolution of the council, in which measure he had neither been consulted, nor had any delay been granted at his ambassador's request. To these causes of alienation, Pius added another, which might have been attended with the most serious consequences, by determining a dispute for precedence between the Spanish and French ambassadors at Rome, in favour of the latter. To decide this point, which was of so delicate a nature, at so critical a juncture, the pontiff was induced, partly by the hopes of prevailing on the court of France to receive the decrees of the council, and partly by his dread that if the young king were not gratified in this matter, his counsellors would advise him to break off all connection with Rome, and to commit the supreme ecclesiastical authority in the kingdom to a patriarch of his own election.

PIUS

PIUS ordered his nuncio to explain these motives Book V.
 to the catholic king, and spared no pains to con- 1564.
 vince him of the necessity of the step which he had
 taken : and his endeavours were not altogether inef-
 fectual. Philip did not, indeed, for some time, send
 any ambassador to Rome in the place of Don Louis
 de Requesens, who left it when the point of preced-
 ence was decided; but being determined, if possi-
 ble, to live on amicable terms with the Holy See,
 he resolved to stifle his resentment. Nor did he
 suffer it to influence his conduct with regard to the
 decrees of the council, which, although they were
 not entirely conformable to his wishes, yet would
 contribute, he believed, in some measure, to prevent
 the progress of heresy ; and therefore he issued or-
 ders, without hesitation, to have them received and
 obeyed throughout all his dominions ^s.

July.

^s Cabrera, lib. vi. c. 16. Pallavicini, lib. xxiv. cap. 12.



THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VI.

PHILIP's attention was, soon after this, called to objects of a very different nature from those by which, during the sitting of the council, it had been engrossed. The success of his enterprise against Penon de Velez, having given great uneasiness to all the piratical states, they had endeavoured to engage the Sultan to undertake the recovery of that fort; and had intreated him to employ such a fleet and army as might be sufficient to expel the Spaniards from the coast of Africa. Solyman was at the same time earnestly solicited by great numbers of his subjects, to take vengeance on the knights of Malta, who, besides co-operating with the Spaniards in all their African expeditions, still continued to exercise their wonted hostilities against the Turks at sea, and had of late made innumerable captures.

BOOK VI.

1565.
Hostile intentions of the Sultan against Philip and the knights of Malta.

THIS

BOOK VI. **1565.** THIS prince was of himself as much incensed both against the former and the latter of these his enemies as any of his subjects could desire; and notwithstanding his great age, he was inflamed as much as ever with the ambition of extending his dominions. He therefore lent a willing ear to the solicitations which he now received; and having suspended all his other pursuits, he resolved to turn his whole attention against the Maltese and Spaniards. But he hesitated whether he should begin his operations with invading Malta, or the dominions of the catholic king; and to assist him in deciding this point, he held a council of his most experienced commanders. x

MAHOMET, the oldest and wisest of all his Bashas, was of opinion, that it would be highly inexpedient to begin with invading Malta; in subduing which, he said, the Sultan would find infinitely greater difficulty than he had encountered formerly in the conquest of Rhodes. For the latter of these islands, he observed, lay at so great a distance from Europe, as had made it almost impossible for the Christians to send assistance to the besieged; and was besides so large and fertile as to furnish subsistence to the Turkish troops. Whereas the former was small and barren, so far from the Porte, and so near to Sicily and Italy, that the knights could easily receive from thence perpetual succours and supplies. The king of Spain was deeply concerned in their preservation; and he, and other Christian princes, would, from religion as well as interest, think themselves bound to support an order of men whom they had long regarded as the champions of their faith. The knights would defend their island with the utmost obstinacy. And even although the Sultan should at last get possession of it, yet a new crusade would be formed by the Christians for its recovery, and the Turkish fleet would be destroyed in the harbours, before it could be put into a posture of defence.

fence. Sicily, he thought, would be a much easier and more certain conquest. The reduction of that island would conduce more to the Sultan's glory, as well as to the interest of his empire; and it would be quickly followed by the reduction of the knights of Malta, who could not subsist a single season without those continual supplies of provision which that more fertile region afforded them.

Book VI.

1565.

A PRINCE of so great penetration as Solymán could not be insensible of the weight of these considerations; but having been long accustomed to triumph over much more formidable enemies than the knights of Malta, and having formerly expelled the knights themselves from Asia, when their power was more considerable than at present, he believed that they could not long resist his victorious arms. In this confidence of success he was confirmed by most of the Bashas, who chose rather to flatter his inclinations at the expence of his interest, than to run the risk of incurring his displeasure. His resentment against the knights was greatly heightened at this time by the capture of a rich galleon belonging to some of his greatest favourites in the seraglio. These persons exerted all their influence to procure a speedy vengeance, and contributed to determine the Sultan to open the campaign with the siege of Malta; after the conquest of which he resolved to turn his arms against the king of Spain.

Solymán resolves to begin with the siege of Malta.

HAVING thus fixed his purpose, he issued orders for equipping all the ships in his empire with the utmost expedition; sent a great number of troops to the sea-ports in the Morea, where he intended they should embark; and desired Hascem and Dragut, his viceroys in Algiers and Tripoli, to hold their corsairs ready to join his fleet when it

His preparations.

BOOK VI. should arrive at Malta. He gave the command of the fleet to Piali, and that of the land forces to Mustapha, an experienced general, at the age of sixty-five, who had acquired his esteem and confidence by several victories which he had obtained in Asia. To these men he recommended strongly the acting in concert with each other; and required them to consult in every matter of importance with Dragut, whom he regarded as the ablest naval officer in his dominions.

La Valette
the grand-
master of
Malta.

THE news of his preparations soon reached the several Christian powers on the coasts of the Mediterranean. But they were for some time in doubt where the storm which was gathering would burst. At length John de La Valette Parisot, the grand-master of Malta, received certain information of Solymán's design, from spies whom he employed at Constantinople. He immediately communicated his intelligence to the king of Spain, the pope, and most of the other Christian princes; and represented to them the necessity of granting their assistance at the present crisis, if they would save from ruin an order of men whose bravery had for ages past been continually exerted in the protection of Christians of every nation in Europe, against the implacable enemy of the Christian name.

Philip's re-
solution to
support the
knights.

BUT although the subjects of almost every Christian state had, on numberless occasions, been supported by their generosity, and protected, or rescued from slavery, by their intrepid valour, yet only such princes thought it incumbent on them to interest themselves in their behalf, whose territories lay exposed to immediate danger. Of these no one had so much ground to dread the consequences of suffering the knights to be overwhelmed, as the king of Spain. For besides that his dominions were more exposed, he was much more obnoxious
to

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

131

to the Sultan, than any other Christian monarch. Book VI.
He had repeatedly committed hostilities against 1565.
the African corsairs, whom Solyman had taken under his protection; and he could not call in question the intelligence transmitted to him by the grand-master, that as the Turkish armament was to be sent first against the knights, it would be employed next against himself. Philip had ever looked on Malta as his principal bulwark against the invasions of the Turks; and he was sensible that he had now more reason than ever to consider it in that view. Prompted by these motives, he resolved to exert himself with vigour in its defence; and having writ to his ministers and allies in Italy, to form an army of twenty thousand men, which should be ready to embark on the shortest notice, he assembled a numerous fleet at Messina, and sent instructions to Don Garcia de Toledo, the viceroy of Sicily, to watch over the preservation of Malta with the same solicitude as if Sicily itself were to be attacked.

THE zeal with which Philip espoused the cause of the knights, delivered them from their anxiety with regard to the final issue of the war, but did not prevent the grand-master from exerting his activity and vigilance in preparing for a vigorous defence. The grand-master's activity and vigilance. Besides sending a general summons to the knights dispersed throughout the several provinces in Europe, to repair instantly to Malta; he distributed all the inhabitants of the island capable of bearing arms into companies, and appointed the knights to train them in the several branches of military discipline. He caused two thousand troops to be levied by his agents in Italy, and kept all the ships belonging to the order, perpetually employed in importing arms, military stores, and provisions.

BOOK VI. IN obedience to his summons, all the knights hastened to his assistance, except such as were prevented by age or infirmities; and these supplied their personal services, by sending him all the money which they could raise out of the effects belonging to their convents. Before the arrival of the enemy, he reviewed his forces, and found that they amounted to seven hundred knights and eight thousand five hundred soldiers, including two companies of Spaniards which were sent to him from Sicily. These troops, after a solemn religious procession, and partaking of the holy sacrament, he distributed among the knights; and assigned to all of them their proper stations. In the midst of the multiplicity of affairs which demanded his attention, there was nothing omitted which human prudence could provide. He was continually employed either in visiting the posts, or examining the stores, or strengthening the fortifications, or instructing the officers as to the conduct proper to be observed in case of an attack. The wisdom displayed in his plan of defence, inspired his troops with confidence; and his tranquillity and fortitude communicated to them an elevation of mind, which rendered them superior to every calamity that could befall them.

Arrival of
the Turks
at Malta
under Mus-
tapha and
Piali.

AT length the Turkish fleet having left Constantinople in the end of March, arrived in sight of Malta about the middle of May; consisting of more than two hundred sail, and having on board, besides a great number of Christian slaves, designed to serve as pioneers, above forty thousand land forces, composed chiefly of Janissaries and Spahis, the bravest soldiers of the Ottoman empire. This formidable army landed at some distance from Il Borgo *, and soon afterwards spread themselves over the country;

* The town where the strength of the order was concentrated.

country; setting fire to the villages, putting the peasants to the sword, and carrying off such of the cattle, as, notwithstanding the orders of the grand-master, had not been secured within the forts and towns.

Book VI.
1565.

WHILE the Turks were thus employed, La Valette sent out De Copier, marshal of the order, with two hundred horse and six hundred foot, to watch their motions. De Copier, an officer of great experience, executed his commission with so much prudence and vigour, that by falling unexpectedly on detached parties, he cut off one thousand five hundred of the Turks, with the loss of only about eighty men. But La Valette intended, by permitting these skirmishes, only to make trial of his troops, and to accustom them to the looks and shouts of the enemy. He considered that even so small a loss as was occasioned by these rencounters, was more than he could easily support. He therefore recalled De Copier, and sent the soldiers and knights under his command to their respective posts.

THE Turkish general held a council of war as soon as all his troops were landed, to assist him in resolving where he should begin his attack. Piali, agreeably to what he understood to have been the Sultan's instructions, was of opinion that they ought not to enter upon action till Dragut should arrive. But Mustapha having received information of the king of Spain's preparations, thought that something must be done instantly for the security of the fleet; which lay at present in a creek where it was exposed to the violence of the east wind, and might be attacked with great advantage by the Spaniards. On this account he was of opinion, that they should immediately lay siege to a fort called St. Elmo, which stood on a neck of land near Il Borgo, having the principal harbour on one side of it, and on the

The siege
of St. Elmo.

BOOK VI. the other, another harbour large enough to contain the whole fleet in safety. This proposal was approved by a majority of the council, and Mustapha proceeded without delay to carry it into execution. He vainly expected that he would be able to reduce the fort in a few days. But besides the valour with which it was defended, there were two circumstances which greatly augmented the difficulty of his enterprise: one of these was that the garrison could easily receive supplies from the town, across the great harbour, which was secured by two forts, called St. Angelo and St. Michael, or La Sangle; and the other, that his approaches to the fort were retarded by the nature of the road leading to it, which was either a bare rock, or the rock thinly covered with a stony soil. This last inconvenience he remedied, by substituting in the place of trenches, a parapet formed of planks and beams covered on the side towards the fort with earth, which they brought from a distance, and mixed with straw and rushes. By this invention he was enabled to open a battery mounted with his largest cannon, on the sixth or seventh day after his arrival on the island; and he quickly convinced the governor, the bailiff of Negropont, that it would be impossible for him to hold out long. Of this the governor gave immediate information to the grand-master, and made choice of a knight of the name of La Cerda for his messenger. This man, greatly disturbed by fear, exaggerated the danger which he had been sent to represent, and had the imprudence to tell the grand-master, in the presence of many of the knights, that he must not expect that the place would sustain the siege above a week longer. "And what loss," said La Valette, "have you received that makes you so soon despair?" "The fort," replied La Cerda, "is to be considered as a sick person, greatly reduced, who must receive continual remedies and supplies." "I myself,"

1565.

Difficulties attending the siege.

St. Elmo thought untenable by the garrison.

myself," answered the grand-master with great indignation, " will be the physician; and will bring others along with me, who, if they cannot cure you of your fear, will at least preserve the fort from falling into the hands of the Infidels."

Book VI.
1565.

LA VALETTE did not expect that a place which was neither strong, nor large enough to admit a numerous garrison, could be defended long, against so great a force as was employed to reduce it; but he thought it necessary that the siege of this fort should be prolonged as much as possible, in order to give the viceroy of Sicily time to come to his relief. With this view he resolved to throw himself into St. Elmo with a select body of troops; and he was preparing to set out when the whole body of knights remonstrated with such earnest importunity against his leaving the town, that he at last consented to suffer the reinforcement which he had prepared, to be conducted to the fort by a knight called De Medran, upon whose conduct and intrepidity he could rely with the most assured confidence.

The grand-master's reason for defending it to the last.

Nor long after De Medran's arrival in the fort the garrison made a vigorous sally, in which they drove the enemy from their intrenchments, and put a number of them to the sword. But the rest soon recovered from their surprise, and having returned to the charge, they compelled the Christians to retire. In this rencounter, the vigorous efforts of the Janissaries were favoured by the wind, which blew the smoke of the guns upon the fort, and covered the besieged with a thick cloud, through which it was impossible to discern the operations of the enemy. This incident the Turks had the presence of mind to improve to great advantage. They seized, unperceived, upon the counterescarp, made a lodgment there with beams, wool-

Progress of the siege.

Book VI. wool-sacks, and gabions; and raised a battery upon it with incredible expedition. After the smoke was dispersed, the besieged beheld what had been done with much astonishment; and they were the more disquieted as the fortification which the Turks had raised upon the counterscarp, overtopped a ravelin which lay near it, in which the besieged could no longer appear with safety. They resolved however to defend this ravelin as long as possible, whatever it should cost them.

**Arrival of
Dragut.**

IN the mean time Dragut and another noted corsair called Ulucialli arrived with twenty galleys, having, besides slaves and seamen, two thousand five hundred troops on board. This reinforcement and the presence of Dragut added fresh vigour to the operations of the siege. This gallant corsair exposed himself on all occasions with the utmost intrepidity; spent whole days in the trenches; and as, besides his other extraordinary talents, he was particularly skilful in the management of artillery, he caused some new batteries to be raised in more advantageous situations than had hitherto been made choice of; and kept up a continual fire both upon the ravelin above mentioned, and a cavalier that covered the fort, and was one of its principal defences.

**Progress of
the siege.**

THIS cavalier soon became the only defence which could prevent the besiegers from coming up to the very foot of the walls. Some Turkish engineers having approached the ravelin at day-break, to examine the effects of their artillery, they observed a gun-port so low, that one of them, when mounted on the shoulders of another, looked into it, and saw the Christian soldiers lying on the ground asleep. Of this they gave immediate information to the troops; who, advancing as quickly and silently as possible, and clapping ladders to the gun-hole, got up into the ravelin, and cut most of the Christians to pieces,

BETWEEN

BETWEEN this ravelin and the cavalier lay the ditch, over which the besieged had thrown a temporary bridge of planks, leading up to the cavalier. Book VI.
1565.

The Turks perceiving this, leapt instantly upon the bridge, and attempted to make themselves masters of the cavalier, as they had already done of the ravelin. But the garrison was now alarmed; the bravest of the knights hastened from different quarters to the post of danger; and, after an obstinate engagement, they compelled the Turks to retire into the ravelin. There observing another way of reaching the cavalier, by a path from the bottom of the ditch, they threw themselves down without dread or hesitation; and having ascended by this path to the other side, they renewed their attack with greater fury than ever. The combat lasted from sun-rise till noon, when the invincible bravery of the garrison proved at last victorious. About twenty knights and a hundred soldiers were killed, and near three thousand of the enemy.

As the ravelin was open on the side towards the fort, the besieged pointed some cannon against it, and made great havock among the infidels. But Mustapha, sensible of the value of the acquisition which he had made, poured in fresh soldiers without number; and the pioneers coming forward with wool-sacks, planks, and gabions, put the troops at length in safety, and made a lodgment in the ravelin, of which the garrison were never able to dispossess them.

THE grand-master's concern on account of this disaster was greatly augmented, by considering that it could not have happened so soon, without some negligence on the part of the garrison. He sent them however an immediate reinforcement; and both the siege and the defence were carried on with the same vigour as before.

BUT

Book VI. BUT the situation of the besieged was now become much more dangerous than formerly.

1565.
The distress
of the gar-
rison.

The Turks applied themselves with unremitting diligence to heighten the ravelin till it overtopped the wall of the fort; and after this, the garrison could no longer appear upon the parapet with safety. Many were killed by the enemy's artillery. Several breaches were made in different parts of the wall, and the hearts of the bravest knights began to fail within them. They apprehended, that ere long the Turkish general would attempt to take the fort by storm, and they dreaded that it would be impossible for so small a number to resist so numerous an enemy. X

They apply
for liberty
to quit the
fort.

THEY agreed therefore, though with much reluctance, to apply to the grand-master for liberty to quit the fort; and they made choice of the chevalier de Medran for their messenger. De Medran represented that the fort was in reality no longer tenable, and that to continue in it, though only a few days, would infallibly occasion the utter destruction of the garrison. That nothing could be of greater advantage to the Turks than sending the forces of the order to a place where there were no fortifications to defend them; that, by doing so, the troops necessary for the defence of the other fortresses would soon be consumed, and these fortresses become an easy prey to the enemy. But he concluded with saying, that, although this was the opinion of all the garrison, he was commissioned to declare to the grand-master, that whatever resolution he should form, they were determined to yield an implicit obedience to his authority.

Refused by
the grand-
master.

MOST of the knights in council thought that this request of the garrison ought to be immediately granted. But La Valette was of a contrary

trary opinion. The fort, he acknowledged, would not probably hold out much longer; and he lamented the fate of those gallant knights and soldiers who were stationed in so perilous a situation. But there were cases, he said, in which it was necessary to sacrifice some of the members for the preservation of the body; and such he knew to be the present critical state of their affairs. For he was credibly informed that the Sultan viceroy had declared, that if the fort of St. Elmo were lost, (as the consequence would be, that he could not attack the Turks with the same advantage as at present) he would not expose his fleet to the risk of a defeat for the sake of the rest of the island. And on this account La Valette subjoined, that the preservation of the order depended almost entirely on the length of the present siege. This he represented to the chevalier De Medran, and sent him back with instructions to remind the knights of the vow which they took at their entrance into the order, of sacrificing their lives for its defence. He likewise bade him assure them, in his name, that he would not fail to send them such reinforcements as they should stand in need of, and was determined, as soon as it should be necessary, to come himself to their assistance, with a fixed, unalterable purpose to lay down his life, sooner than deliver the fort into the hands of the Infidels.

THIS answer had the desired effect on several of the knights, and particularly on those whose principles of honour and attachment to the order were confirmed by years. But the greater part of them were much dissatisfied. They thought the grand-master's treatment of them harsh and cruel, and wrote him a letter, subscribed by fifty-three, in which, after repeating their former request, they informed him, that if he did not, on the next night, send boats to carry them to the town,

BOOK VI. town, they were determined to fall out into the
 1565. Turkish camp, where they might fall honourably
 by the sword, instead of suffering such an ignominious death as they had reason to expect, if the fort were taken by storm.

To this letter La Valette replied, "That they were much mistaken, if they expected to satisfy their honour by throwing away their lives; since it was no less their duty to submit to his authority, than to sacrifice their lives in defence of the order: that the preservation of the whole depended on their present obedience to his commands: that no aid was to be expected from Spain, if the fort were given up; and that, if he should yield to their request, and bring them to the town, the town itself would then be immediately invested, and they, as well as the rest, soon afterwards reduced to a situation more desperate than that from which they were so solicitous to escape, by deserting an important station which they had undertaken to defend." Besides this letter, he sent three commissioners to examine the state of the fortifications; intending by this measure either to gain time, or to prevent the garrison from sinking into despair.

THESE commissioners differed widely in the accounts which they delivered at their return. Two of them thought it impossible to defend the fort much longer. But the third, named Constantine Castriot, a Greek prince, descended from the famous Albanian hero, Scanderbeg, whether from ignorance, or a consciousness of greater resources in his native courage than the other two possessed, maintained that the garrison was far from being reduced to the last extremity; and to give proof how firmly he was persuaded of the truth of what he said, he offered to enter the fort himself, and to undertake the defence of it with such troops as should be willing to accompany him.

THE grand-master, strongly impressed with a sense of the necessity of procuring the help immediately accepted this offer, and bestowed the highest encomiums on Castriot's zeal and resolution. Nor did Castriot find any difficulty in procuring a sufficient number to attend him, who were no less zealous and resolute than himself. The knights crowded to his standard, and were anxious to have their names inrolled for that dangerous service in which he had engaged.

WHEN La Valette saw the spirit by which these men were animated, and had no longer any doubt of being able, by their means, to prolong the siege of the fort, he sent a letter to the knights, acquainting them, that he was now willing to give them their discharge; and would immediately send another garrison, into whose hands, he desired, they should be ready to deliver up the fort, and come themselves to the town in the boats in which their successors were to be transported. "You, my brethren," continued he, "may be in greater safety here than in your present situation; and I shall then feel less anxiety for the preservation of the fort, although I think it of so great importance, that on the preservation of it, that of our order seems entirely to depend."

THE contents and style of this letter affected the knights in the most sensible manner, and roused within them that delicate sense of honour, by which the order had been so long and so eminently distinguished. They trembled at the thoughts of the reception which they were about to meet with from the grand-master and the other knights. "Should this new garrison," said they to each other, "which is appointed to succeed us, be fortunate enough to hold out till the Spaniards arrive, in what corner of the earth shall we conceal our infamy?" They resolved without hesitation to remain

remain in the fort till every man should perish, rather than either deliver it to the new garrison, or abandon it to the enemy. And they went in a body to the governor, and intreated him to inform the grand-master of their repentance, and to join with them in praying that they might be suffered to wipe out the remembrance of their fault by their future conduct.

THE governor readily complied; and, in order to prevent the new garrison from setting out in the night, he dispatched his letter by a noted swimmer before it was dark. La Valette secretly rejoiced at this application; but sent word to the governor, that he must always prefer even a body of new troops to the most experienced warriors, who had refused to submit to the controul of military discipline. When this answer was reported to the knights, they were overwhelmed with anguish, and had recourse to the most submissive intreaties of forgiveness. The grand-master suffered himself at last to be overcome; and henceforth the garrison, dismissing all thoughts of their own safety, were intent on nothing but how to prolong the defence.

THE grand-master sent them every night fresh troops, to supply the place of the killed and wounded; and kept them well furnished with provisions, ammunition, and fire-works. Of these last he had invented a particular kind, which consisted of hoops of wood, covered with wool, and steeped in boiling oil, and other inflammable liquors, mixed with nitre and gunpowder. To these machines they set fire, and threw them flaming in the midst of the enemy, when they were crowded together at an assault. It happened often that two or three of the Turks were hooked together and scorched to death; and the utmost confusion was produced wherever they were thrown.

THE

THE besieged stood much in need of this, and every other instrument of mischief, that could be devised for their defence. In spite of the most vigorous opposition, the Turks had cast a bridge over the ditch, and begun to sap and undermine the wall. From the 17th of June to the 14th of July, not a single day past without some rencounter; and Mustapha had frequently attempted to scale the wall of the fort, but had been as often repulsed with the loss of some of the bravest of his troops.

Book VI.
1565.
The invincible bravery of the garrison.

ASHAMED at having been detained so long before a place of such inconsiderable strength, he resolved to make one great decisive effort, and to bring to the assault as many of his forces as the situation of the place would permit him to employ. He had already made several breaches; but in order to secure the success of the assault which he now intended, he kept his batteries playing all the 15th without intermission, till the wall on that side where he designed his attack was almost level with the rock. On the 16th the fleet was drawn up before sun-rise as near the fort as the depth of the water would allow; four thousand musketeers and archers were stationed in the trenches; and the rest of the troops, upon a signal given, advanced to the breach. The garrison was prepared to receive them. The breach was lined with several ranks of soldiers, having the knights interspersed among them at certain distances. The Turks attempted often to break through this determined band, and to overpower them with their numbers. But their numbers served only to augment the loss which they sustained. Every shot from the fort did execution. The artillery made dreadful havoc among them, and the burning hoops were employed with astonishing success. The novelty of these machines, and the shrieks of those who were caught in them, added greatly to the terror which they inspired, and made

BOOK VI. made it impossible for the Turkish officers to keep
 1565. their men firm and steady in pursuing the advantages which, had they preserved their ranks, their numbers must have infallibly acquired.

At length Mustapha, after having continued the assault for more than six hours, without gaining a single inch of ground on the besieged, gave orders for founding a retreat.

In this attack the garrison lost about twenty knights and three hundred soldiers; but this loss was immediately supplied by a reinforcement from the town: and Mustapha was at last convinced, that, unless the communication between the fort and the town were cut off, it would be impossible to bring the siege of the former to a period, while any troops remained in any other part of the island. By the advice of Dragut he resolved to extend his trenches and batteries, on the side next to the town, till they should reach to that part of the sea, or great harbour, where those supplies were landed which the grand-master daily sent to the garrison. This undertaking, he knew, must be attended with the utmost difficulty, because all the space between his entrenchments and the point to which it was necessary to extend them, lay exposed to the artillery both of fort St. Elmo and St. Angelo. In viewing the ground, a Sangiac, in whom he put confidence, was killed by his side; and, which was still a more irreparable loss, Dragut received a mortal wound, of which he died in a few days^b. This did not however discourage Mustapha from pursuing his design. By employing his troops and pioneers at the work day and night without intermission, he at length carried it into execution. Then having planted batteries along the shore, and filled his trenches with musketeers, it was impossible for any boat

Dragut killed.

^b He was wounded in the head by the splinters of a stone, which was beat to pieces by a cannon-shot from fort St. Angelo.

boat to pass from the town to the fort, without the most imminent danger of either being sunk or intercepted.

Book VI.
1565.

AFTER this precaution, he resumed with fresh vigour his attempt to take the fort by storm. On the twenty-first, he made four different assaults; all of which the garrison withstood, and, in repulsing so many thousand brave and well-disciplined troops, displayed a degree of prowess and fortitude which almost exceeds belief, and is beyond the power of description. But this heroic garrison was now exceedingly reduced in number; and there was the strongest reason to apprehend, that, in one assault more, they must inevitably be overpowered unless a reinforcement were sent them from the town. Of their desperate situation they gave intelligence to the grand-master, by one who swam across the harbour in the night. The boats were instantly filled with knights and other soldiers, who generously resolved to devote themselves to certain destruction, for the general safety, and the preservation of the fort. They set off from the town with as much alacrity as if they had entertained the most sanguine hopes of victory; but they found the Turks every where so much upon their guard, and the lines so strongly defended, that, after several fruitless attempts to land, they were at last obliged to return, depressed with sorrow for the fate of their brave companions.

The garrison reduced to the last extremity.

THE garrison now despairing of relief, gave themselves up for lost; but instead of either capitulating or attempting to escape, they prepared for death, and passed the night in prayer, and in receiving the sacrament; after which, they embraced one another tenderly, and then repaired to their respective posts; while such of the wounded as had

BOOK VI. been disabled from walking, were, at their own
 1565. earnest desire, carried to the side of the breach,
 where they waited, without dismay, for the approach of the Turkish army.

St. Elmo
 taken by
 assault.

EARLY in the morning of the twenty-third of July, the Turks advanced to the assault, with loud shouts, as to certain victory, which they believed so small a handful of men as now remained in the fort would not dare to dispute with them. In this expectation they were disappointed. The garrison being resolved on death, and despising danger, were more than men, and exerted a degree of prowess and valour that filled their enemies with amazement. The combat lasted upwards of four hours, till not only every knight, but every soldier had fallen, except two or three who saved themselves by swimming. The Turkish colours were then planted on the ramparts; and the fleet entered the harbour which the fort commanded in a kind of triumph. When Mustapha took a view of the fort, and examined its size and fortifications, he could not refrain from saying, "What will not the father cost us, (meaning the town) when the son, who is so small, has cost so many thousands of our bravest troops." But this reflection, far from exciting his admiration of that heroic fortitude which he had found so difficult to overcome, served only to inspire him with a brutal fury. He ordered all such of the garrison as were found lying on the breach alive to be ripped open, and their hearts torn out. And as an insult on the knights and their religion, he caused their dead bodies to be searched for, and large gashes to be made in them, in the form of a cross, after which he tied them on planks, and threw them into the sea, to be carried by the wind and tide to the town, or fort St. Angelo.

THE

* Eight thousand.

THE grand-master was at first melted into tears at this shocking spectacle ; but his grief was soon converted into indignation and revenge ; and these passions betrayed him into an action unworthy of the exalted character which he bore. In order to teach the Basha, as he pretended, to make war with less barbarity, he caused all the Turks whom he had taken prisoners to be massacred ; and then putting their heads into his largest cannon, he shot them into the Turkish camp.

Book VI.

1565.

IN the siege which has been related, the order lost about one thousand five hundred men, including one hundred and thirty of the bravest knights. The grand-master was deeply affected at so great a loss ; but he wisely dissembled his concern, and wearing still the same magnanimous and intrepid aspect as before, he inspired all the troops that remained, with a fixt, unalterable resolution, to defend the town and the other forts to the last extremity.

MUSTAPHA vainly imagined, that being intimidated by the fate of their companions, they would be now inclined to listen to terms of capitulation ; and in this hope he sent an officer with a white flag to one of the gates, attended by a Christian slave, designed to serve for his interpreter. The Turk was not allowed to enter within the town ; but the Christian was admitted, and was led through several ranks of soldiers under arms by an officer, who, after shewing him all the fortifications of the place, desired him to take particular notice of the depth and breadth of the ditch, and said to him, " See there, the only spot we can afford your general ; and there we hope soon to bury him and all his Janissaries."

BOOK VI.

1565.
Siege of St.
Borgo and
fort St. Mi-
chael.

THIS insulting speech being reported by the slave, excited in the fiery mind of the Basha the highest degree of wrath and indignation, and made him resolve to exert himself to the utmost in the prosecution of the siege. His troops, though greatly diminished, were still sufficient to invest at once both the town and the fort of St. Michael^d. He kept a constant fire on both; but he intended first to apply to the reduction of the latter, which he proposed to attack both by land and water, at the extremity of the peninsula^e on which it stands. In order to accomplish this design, it was necessary he should have some shipping introduced into the harbour, for transporting his forces. But the mouth of the harbour having been rendered inaccessible by a great iron chain, and the cannon of St. Angelo, his design must have been relinquished, if Piali had not suggested an expedient against which the grand-master had not provided. This was to make the Christian slaves and the crews of the ships draw a number of boats, by the strength of their arms, over the neck of land on which stood fort St. Elmo. Of this proposal, which Mustapha immediately adopted, information was carried to the grand-master by a Turkish officer, who, being by birth a Greek, was touched suddenly with remorse, and deserted to the Christians. In consequence of this intelligence, La Valette set a great number of hands to work in framing a stacado along that part of the promontory where the Turks intended their attack; and at another part, where the depth of the water or the hardness of the bottom would not admit of the stacado, he caused strong intrenchments to be made

^d They are situated on two promontories that run out into the great harbour, and are separated from each other by a channel, where the gallies belonging to the Order lay, and the mouth of which was strongly secured on each side by batteries.

^e Called the Spur.

made upon the beach. Mustapha in the mean Book VI.
time fired incessantly upon the fort, while the slaves 1565.
and crews were employed in transporting the boats
over land into the harbour. At length the Basha,
judging that the number of boats which he had
transported would be sufficient, and that the breach-
es which his artillery had made were practicable,
resolved without further delay to make an attack
both by sea and land. He was the more confident
of success, as, since the taking of St. Eimo, he had
received a considerable reinforcement, by the ar- Arrival of
rival of Hascem, son of Barbarossa, with two thou- H. from son
sand five hundred select soldiers, commonly called of Barba-
the bravoës of Algiers. Hascem, who possessed a rossa.
considerable share of his father's fire, and was am-
bitious to distinguish himself in the Sultan's service,
begged of Mustapha to intrust him with the assault
of fort St. Michael; and vaunted, with his natural
arrogance, that he would soon make himself master
of it sword in hand. The Basha, whether from an
opinion of his valour, or an intention to make him
learn at his own expence the folly of his presump-
tion, readily complied with his request; and having
added six thousand men to his Algerines, he pro-
mised to support him with the rest of his army.

HASCHEM divided his forces with Candeliſſa, an
old corsair, his lieutenant; to whom he committed
the attack by sea, whilst he reserved that on the land
side to himself.

CANDELISSA having put his troops on board Candeliſſa
the boats, set out with drums beating, and hautboys repulsed
and other musical instruments playing, preceded with great
by a boat filled with Mahometan priests, some of slaughter.
whom were employed in offering prayers to Hea-
ven for his success, or in singing hymns; while
others had books in their hands out of which they
read imprecations against the Christians. Candeliſſa
attempted first to break down the stacado which had
been

Book VI.

1565.

been formed to obstruct his landing; but finding it much stronger than he expected, and that, while he was employed in demolishing it, his troops must suffer greatly from the enemy's fire, he thought it would be easier to make a descent on that part of the shore which the grand-master had strengthened with intrenchments. At this important post, the Christian troops were commanded by an ancient knight of the name of Guimeran. This experienced officer reserved his fire till the Turks had advanced within a little distance of the shore, when by a single discharge he killed about four hundred men. This did not prevent the rest from approaching. Candelissa pushed forwards while the Christians were loading their cannon, and landed at the head of his Algerines. But Guimeran having reserved some cannon charged with grape shot, did dreadful execution among them after they had landed, and many of them began to fly to their boats; which Candelissa observing, he commanded the boats to be put off to a little distance from the shore. His troops, perceiving then that they must either die or conquer, took courage from despair, and advanced boldly to the intrenchment, with ladders for scaling it in one hand, and their sabres in the other. The combatants on both sides displayed the most intrepid valour. Great numbers fell, and the ditch was choaked with blood, and with the bodies of the dead and wounded. The Turks at last, after an engagement of five hours, reached the top of the intrenchment, and there planted their ensigns. The knights, stung with shame on account of their retreat, returned with redoubled ardour. But they would probably have been overpowered by the superior number of the enemy, had not the grand-master sent them a seasonable reinforcement, under the admiral de Giou, and the chevalier de Quiney; who fell upon
the

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

151

the Algerines and Turks with a degree of fury Book VI. that struck terror into Candeliſſa himſelf, who was 1565. noted for his intrepidity. Having ordered the boats to be brought nearer the ſhore, he was among the firſt who fled. His bravoës fought deſperately for ſome time after he had left them; but were at length thrown down from the intrenchments, and compelled to fly to their boats with the utmoſt precipitation. The Chriſtians purſued them, and the batteries continued firing on them without intermiſſion. Many of the boats were ſunk; the water was covered with dead bodies, mangled limbs, ſhields and helmets. Of the four thouſand who had been ſent on this enterpriſe, ſcarcely five hundred remained, and many of theſe were dangerously wounded.

HASCER was not more fortunate in his aſſault Hacer and by land, than Candeliſſa was by ſea. After having been repulſed at one breach with great ſlaughter, he rallied his troops, and led them on to another, where he fought long and deſperately, till moſt of the bravoës having fallen by his ſide, he was obliged, with much reluctance and ſorrow, to ſound a retreat.

MUSTAFA, not unmindful of his promiſe to Mustapha ſupport him, no ſooner perceived him beginning repulſed. to retire, than he ordered the Janiſſaries, whom he kept under arms, to advance. The gariſon had maintained an engagement with Hacer for five hours, in the middle of the day, and in the hotteſt ſeaſon of the year; yet, as if they had not been ſubject to the wants and weakneſſes of humanity, they advanced beyond the breach to meet the Janiſſaries, and fought apparently with as much vigour and fortitude as before. By the power of ſuperior numbers, they were compelled to fall back within the breach. But there they made the moſt

Book VI.

1565.

most desperate resistance; and, being reinforced by de Giou and de Quiney, with the troops which had triumphed over Candelissa, they at last repulsed the Janissaries with dreadful slaughter; after having lost more than forty knights, and two hundred of the bravest of the common men.

The siege of
St. Borgo
and St. Michael
carried on at the
same time.

MUSTAPHA, enraged by this invincible obstinacy which the Christians displayed in their defence, and dreading that the Spanish succours, which had been already delayed much longer than he expected, might soon arrive, resolved now to employ his whole force at once, and while he himself prosecuted the siege of fort St. Michael with one half of his troops, to employ the other, under Piali, against the town. More batteries were raised. The trenches were advanced still nearer than before. Bridges of sail-yards and masts were thrown over the ditches. Mines, notwithstanding the hard and rocky soil, were sprung. Assaults were repeated without number; and the two bashas, emulous of one another, and each of them agitated with continual anxiety lest victory should declare first for his competitor, exhibited the most shining proofs of personal courage, and exhausted all the art of war then known in the world. Yet, through the determined bravery of the knights, conducted by the grand-master with consummate prudence and indefatigable vigilance, the Turks were baffled in every attempt, and repulsed with slaughter. Mustapha flattered himself once with the most sanguine hopes of success on his part, from a machine invented by his principal engineer, in the form of a huge cask bound strongly with iron hoops, and filled with gun-powder, nails, chains, bullets, and such other instruments of death. After setting fire to a train which was fastened to this machine, it was thrown by the force of an engine, upon a ravelin that was the principal defence
of

of the fort. But the garrison undismayed, found means, before it caught fire, to cast it out again into the midst of the assailants. In a moment afterwards it burst with dreadful fury, and filled the Turks with consternation. The knights then sallied out upon them sword in hand, and taking advantage of their confusion, killed many of them, and put the rest to flight.

BOOK VI.
1565.

PIALI had, on some occasions, still more reason than Mustapha to entertain the hopes of victory, although the town was much stronger than the fort, and La Valette commanded there in person. By his batteries he had demolished all the out-works of the place, and had made an immense breach in the wall. While his troops were engaged in a furious assault, that engrossed the whole attention of the besieged from morning till night, he employed a great number of pioneers in raising a cavalier or platform of earth and stones, close by the breach, and so high as to overlook the parapet. Night, in the mean time, came on, and prevented him from carrying any further this great advantage; but he doubted not that next day he should be able to make himself master of the place.

Success of
Piali against
Il Borgo.

As soon as he had drawn off his forces, a council of the Order was convened, and most of the knights were of opinion that the town was no longer tenable; that the fortifications which still remained should be blown up, and that the garrison and inhabitants should retire into the castle of St. Angelo. But the grand-master received this proposal with horror and indignation. "This would be in effect," said he, "to deliver the whole island into the hands of the infidels. Fort St. Michael, which has been so gallantly defended, and which is preserved by its communication with the town, would thus be soon reduced to the necessity of surrendering. There is no room in the castle of St. Angelo for the

The wisdom
and intrepidity
of the
grand-
master.

Book VI. the inhabitants and troops ; nor, if there were
 1565. room, is there water in that fort for so great a number." It was then proposed that at least the relics of the saints and the ornaments of the churches should be carried into the castle ; and the knights earnestly intreated the grand-master to retire into it himself, assuring him that they would conduct the defence with the utmost vigour and vigilance. " No, my brethren," he replied, " what you propose as to the sacred things would serve only to intimidate the soldiers. We must conceal our apprehensions. It is here we must either die or conquer. And is it possible that I, at the age of seventy-one, can end my life so honourably, as in fighting, together with my friends and brethren, against the implacable enemies of our holy faith ?" He then told them what he thought proper to be done, and proceeded instantly to put it in execution. Having called all the soldiers from fort St. Angelo, except a few who were necessary for managing the artillery, he employed *them* and the inhabitants all night, in throwing up intrenchments within the breach ; after which he sent out some of the bravest knights, with a select body of troops, to make an attempt on the cavalier. These men stole softly along the foot of the wall till they arrived at the place appointed ; when they set up a loud shout, and attacked the guards whom Piali had left there with so much fury, that the Turks, believing the whole garrison had fallen upon them, abandoned their post, and fled precipitately to their camp.

THE cavalier was immediately fortified, a battery of cannon planted on it, and a parapet raised on the side towards the enemy. And thus the breach was rendered impracticable ; the town put in greater security than before ; and a work, which had been devised for its destruction, converted into a bulwark for its defence.

THE grand-master had now greater confidence than ever of being able to hold out till the Spaniards should come to his relief. In consequence of the assurances given by Philip and the Sicilian viceroy, he had, long before this time, entertained the hopes of their arrival; and had often earnestly solicited the viceroy to hasten his departure from Messina. The conduct of this nobleman was long exceedingly mysterious. The patience of the knights was worn out by his delays; and they, and many others, suspected that the real motive of his conduct was the dread of encountering with an admiral of so considerable reputation as Piali. But it afterwards appeared that the viceroy had acted agreeably to his instructions from the court of Spain. For although Philip was, for the reasons above mentioned, sincerely interested in the preservation of the knights; and had amused them with the most flattering promises of assistance, yet he seems from the first to have resolved not to expose himself to danger on that account, and to avoid, if possible, a general engagement.

1565.
Ungenerous
conduct of
Philip.
Aug. 24.

A GENEROUS and grateful prince would have acted very differently towards an ally so deserving of his support; and if either generosity or gratitude had been the leading principle of Philip's conduct, it is probable he would, on this occasion, have regarded the knights as his own subjects; and have thought it no less incumbent on him to exert himself in their defence, than if they had acknowledged him as their sovereign.

BUT Philip was affected by their danger only so far as it threatened the tranquillity of his own dominions. He had resolved to interpose in their behalf, rather than to suffer them to be overpowered; but he appears to have been very little touched with their calamities; and to have intended to leave them to themselves, as long as there was any prospect

spect of their being able to make resistance doing which he considered, that he would not preserve his own strength entire, but might afterwards engage with the Turks, when they exhausted by the operations of the siege.

PHILIP adhered inflexibly to this plan, notwithstanding the grand-master's repeated importunity much longer than was consistent even with his selfish views. For, without a degree of fortitude and prowess on the part of the garrison, and a degree of wisdom, vigilance, and magnanimity, that of the grand-master, infinitely higher than there could be reason to expect, it must have been impossible for such a handful of men to have withstood, for so long a time, so great a force, and such mighty efforts as were employed to reduce them. Even the death of the grand-master, whose person was exposed to perpetual danger, would have proved fatal to the knights, long before Philip sent orders to his viceroy to give them any effectual support; and in this case, as his dominions or his fleet would have been immediately attacked, he would probably have had no reason to be satisfied with the timid, ungenerous counsels which he pursued.

WHATEVER judgment may be formed on this head, the viceroy did not think himself at liberty to yield to the repeated applications of the grand-master, till the operations of the siege began to relax, and the Turkish forces were reduced from forty-five thousand to fifteen or sixteen thousand, of whom many were worn out with the fatigue which they had undergone, and others rendered unfit for action by a bloody flux, which for several weeks had raged amongst them.

In this situation of affairs, when it was probable that the knights would, without assistance, be compelled the Turks to raise the siege, the viceroy

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

157

let the grand-master know that he had now received such instructions from the king, as put it in his power to shew his attachment to the Order; that he was not indeed permitted to attack the Turkish fleet; but that he would immediately bring him a strong body of troops, whose commanders (as he himself must return to Sicily) were to be entirely subject to the grand-master's authority, till the enemy should be expelled.

Book VI.

1565.

THE viceroy, although still suspected of interposing unnecessary delays, at length fulfilled his promise; and on the seventh of September landed six thousand men, under Don Alvaro de Sande and Ascanio della Corna, in that part of the island which lay at the greatest distance from the Turks; after which he immediately carried back the fleet to Sicily.

Arrival of
6000 Spaniards.

THE Turkish bashas had been persuaded by their spies, that the viceroy's intention was to land his troops at the castle of St. Angelo; and to prevent this, Piali had lain several days at anchor before the great port, after having blocked up the entrance into it by a chain of sail-yards, piles and boats.

IN the mean time, intelligence being brought to Mustapha that the Spaniards were landed, and marching towards him, he was thrown into the most dreadful consternation. Sensible that his soldiers were much disheartened by their ill success, he imagined that he was about to be attacked by a superior army, consisting of the bravest and best disciplined troops in Spain. Without waiting for information of their number, he forthwith raised the siege, drew his garrison out of St. Elmo, and leaving all his heavy cannon behind him, embarked his troops with as much precipitation as if the Spaniards with superior forces had been in sight. He had scarcely got on board when a deserter arrived from

The siege
raised, and
the departure
of the
Turks.

Book VI. from the Spanish camp, and informed him that
 1565. with fifteen or sixteen thousand men, he had fled
 before an army that did not exceed six thousand
 having no general at their head, and commanded
 by officers who were independent of one another.
 The basha was overwhelmed with shame and vex-
 ation by this intelligence, and would have imme-
 diately disembarked; but this, he knew, he durst
 not attempt without consulting Piali, Hascem, and
 his other principal officers.

WHILE he was deliberating upon it, the grand-
 master improved to the best advantage the leisure
 that was afforded him. He employed all the inha-
 bitants, men, women, and children, as well as the
 soldiers, in filling up the enemy's trenches, and
 demolishing their works; and put a garrison with-
 out delay into fort St. Elmo; in which the Turks
 now beheld from their ships the standard of St. John
 erected where that of Mahomet had lately stood.

THIS demonstrated to Mustapha how much new
 labour awaited him in case he should return to the
 siege; but being enraged against himself on ac-
 count of the precipitancy of his retreat, and dis-
 quieted at the thoughts of the reception which he
 had reason to expect from Solyman, he wished to
 atone for his imprudence, and to wipe off the re-
 proach in which it had involved him, by victory or
 death. Piali, who from his jealousy of the basha's
 credit with the Sultan, was not sorry for the failure
 of his enterprize, represented in a council of war
 convened on this occasion, that as the troops were
 much dispirited and worn out, it would be exposing
 them to certain destruction, either to lead them
 against the enemy, or to resume the operations of
 the siege. But a majority of the council were of a
 different opinion; and it was resolved to land the
 forces again without delay, and to march directly
 against the Spaniards.

THE Turkish soldiers complained bitterly of Book VI.
 this unexpected resolution, and obeyed the orders
 to disembark with much reluctance. Their officers 1565.
 were obliged to employ threats with some, and The Turks
 force with others. At length the number intended again land-
 was put on shore, and Mustapha set out at their
 head in search of the enemy.

THE grand-master had not neglected to give and de-
 early notice of their march to the Spanish com- feated by
 manders, who had intrenched their little army on the Spa-
 a steep hill, which the Turks would have found niards.
 almost inaccessible; and it was the opinion of some
 of the principal officers, that they should avail
 themselves of the advantage of their situation, and
 stand on their defence. But this proposal was re-
 jected with disdain by the bold adventurous De
 Lande, and the greatest part of the Spanish officers;
 and the troops were led out of their encampment,
 to meet the enemy in the open field. This con-
 duct, more fortunate perhaps than prudent, con-
 tributed to increase the dejection of the Turkish
 soldiers, and to facilitate their defeat. Having been
 dragged against their inclination to the field of
 battle; and being attacked by the Spaniards with
 great fury, both in front and flank, they scarcely
 fought; but, being struck with a sudden panic,
 they fled with the utmost precipitation.

MUSTAPHA, confounded and enraged by this
 pusillanimous behaviour of his troops, was hurried
 along by the violent tide of the fugitives. He fell
 twice from his horse, and would have been taken
 prisoner, if his officers had not rescued him. The
 Spaniards pursued briskly till they came to the sea-
 shore. There Piali had his boats ready to receive
 the Turks, and a number of shallops filled with
 musketeers drawn up to favour their escape. With-
 out this precaution, they must all have perished;
 and even notwithstanding the protection which it
 afforded

Book VI. afforded them, the number of their killed amount—
 1565. ed to two thousand men, while the victors lost only
 thirteen or fourteen at most.

Conclusion. SUCH, after four months continuance, was the conclusion of the siege of Malta, which will be for ever memorable on account of that extraordinary display of the most generous and heroic valour by which the knights, so few in number, were enabled to baffle the most vigorous effort which could be made, to subdue them by the most powerful monarch in the world. The news of their deliverance gave universal joy to the Christian powers; and the name of the grand-master excited every where the highest admiration and applause. Congratulations were sent him from every quarter; and in many States public rejoicings were celebrated on account of his success. The king of Spain, who derived greater advantage than any other from that glorious defence to which La Valette had so highly contributed, sent an ambassador to present him with a sword and dagger of which the hilts were solid gold, adorned with diamonds, as a testimony of his respect; and engaged to pay him annually a sum of money to assist him in repairing his ruined fortifications ^f.

^f Thuanus, lib. xxxviii. Herrera, historia general. lib. vii. Cabrera, lib. vi. Vertot. Hist. des Cheval. de Malthe.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VII.

PHILIP, being now delivered from his apprehensions of a Turkish invasion, applied with zeal to his favourite objects, the extirpation of heresy, and the enforcing of obedience to the council of Trent. Nor in these points did he meet with much opposition, in any part of his dominions except the Netherlands; where the seeds of discord, which had been sown in the beginning of his reign, were approaching fast towards maturity. The dutchess of Parma had, soon after his departure, experienced what a difficult charge she had undertaken. The regular clergy still continued to complain as loudly as ever of the new erection of bishoprics; and contributed to the utmost of their power to foment the spirit of discontent among the people. No change, they said, could be legally made in the constitution of the church, without the consent of the States. The new erections were

BOOK VII.
1565.
The affairs
of the Ne-
therlands.

VOL. I. M therefore

BOOK VII.

1565.

therefore a violation of a fundamental law ; which was the more intolerable as the abbots, on whose ruins the bishoprics were raised, were natives of the country, and deeply interested in the public welfare ; whereas the bishops would be entirely devoted to the courts of Rome and Spain. But the regent was obliged to pay a greater regard to the orders of the king, than to the complaints or remonstrances of the people. Nor did she yield to the importunities of any of the cities, into which it had been resolved that the new bishops should be introduced, except Antwerp ; the citizens whereof sent deputies to Madrid, and found means to convince Philip, that this new institution, through the dread with which it would inspire foreigners that the inquisition was about to be established, would prove destructive of their commerce ^a.

WHILE the regent was employed in settling the new bishops, she was not unmindful of the king's injunctions with respect to the execution of the edicts. They were executed with the utmost rigour, against persons of all ages and of both sexes, without distinction. And no greater regard was shewn, on many occasions, to the laws of nature and humanity, than to the constitution of the provinces. The regent was not of herself inclined to those cruel measures that were pursued ; but she was directed in every thing by Granvelle^b, whose views, she knew, were perfectly conformable to those of the king ; and whose judgment, for that reason, she often followed in contradiction to her own.

The nobility
disgusted.

IT was seldom that any matters relative to the edicts or the new bishoprics were laid before the council, and when they were brought thither, they were proposed as points already fixed, and
not

^a Meteren, lib. ii. p. 37. Bentivoglio. Grotius, &c.

^b Now archbishop of Mechlin, and advanced to the dignity of cardinal.

not as subjects on which there was room to deliberate. The regent formed her resolutions privately, with the assistance of Granvelle, and there was nothing left to the council, but to give their sanction to the measures which had been resolved upon before.

Book VII.
1565.

It is not surprising that a conduct so extremely partial should have given umbrage to the other counsellors. The prince of Orange and the counts Egmont and Horn^c were more particularly offended with it. Their high stations, their merit and services, and the trust which had ever been reposed in them by the late emperor, entitled them to a principal share in the regent's most secret councils; and they were filled with indignation when they saw that, on every occasion, a preference was given to the cardinal. "In this," they said, "consisted the recompence of all their services, to be reduced by the king, to whose person and interest they had ever shewn the most inviolable attachment, under the dominion of an arrogant and haughty ecclesiastic. The dutchess of Parma had the name of regent, but the power was lodged in the hands of Granvelle. The most important affairs of the state were all determined in private by him, without the consent, or even the knowledge of the other counsellors. Their seats in the council, and their government of the provinces, were only high-sounding, empty names, which gave them the appearance of authority, whilst they did not possess any real power; but were equally subjected with others to the arbitrary will of Granvelle."

While the prince of Orange and the other discontented lords had so much reason to be dissatisfied, it could not be expected that they would be extremely active in executing the orders of the

M 2

court.

^c Admiral of the Netherlands.

BOOK VII.

1565.

court. Notwithstanding all that had been done to suppress the new opinions in religion, these opinions were diffused wider and wider every day throughout the provinces. This Granvelle ascribed to the negligence of the magistrates in executing the edicts. The prince of Orange, on the other hand, and count Egmont, threw the blame of it on him; and said, that by pursuing measures to which the people of the Netherlands had never been accustomed, he had soured their minds, and brought the regent's government into hatred and contempt. Those complaints were often made in the presence of the regent herself; who, being pressed on the one hand by the positive orders of the king, inculcated by Granvelle, and on the other, distressed by her apprehension of the consequences to be dreaded from so much ill-humour and discontent, could only give soothing answers to the complainers, and flatter them with some general hopes that the grounds of their complaints would be removed.

Their animosity against cardinal Granvelle.

SHE was still more embarrassed, when the prince of Orange proposed in the council, that, in order to remedy the present evils, she should summon a convention of the States. It could not be expected that Granvelle would relish this proposal. For he was not ignorant how ill the people stood affected to his person, and his measures of government; nor how much superior the influence of the prince of Orange would be to his, if the States were assembled. But he did not neglect the present opportunity of ingratiating himself with the king. When the regent gave Philip information of the proposal which had been made to her, and desired to receive his instructions on the subject, Granvelle took that occasion to represent to him, "That nothing could be more prejudicial to his authority than the assembling of the States: a measure which ought at all times to be avoided, as it usually produced

produced an inclination in the people to encroach upon the prerogatives of the crown; but which there was never so much ground to dread as at present, when persons of all conditions were so deeply infected with a spirit of sedition and discontent. The abbots would come to the convention, inflamed with indignation on account of the late diminution of their revenues. The lower nobility and the deputies of the towns would be gained over by the prince of Orange, and the other discontented lords; and the people, ever fond of innovations, would be much more inclined to regard the opinion of their deputies than that of the regent, or the ministers of the king.”

Book VII.
1565.

THIS representation was perfectly agreeable to Philip's views and sentiments; nor did he hesitate in complying with the counsel which was offered him. He immediately renewed his orders to the regent with respect to the rigorous execution of the edicts; and thereby let the prince of Orange and the other nobles see that there was nothing farther from his intention than to convene the States, in order to consider of more gentle expedients for preventing the growth of heresy ^d.

THE persecutions, therefore, were carried on as formerly. The compassion which all men felt for the unhappy sufferers, excited a general odium against the government. The magistrates encountered insurmountable difficulties in executing the orders of the court; and the number of protestants increased daily, while the most vigorous efforts were made to extirpate them by the regent and her ministers. Granvelle endeavoured to convince the king, that this was chiefly owing to the remissness of the governors of the provinces. They were

They apply
to Philip
for his re-
moval.

^d Bentivoglio, lib. ii. p. 15.

Book VII.

1565.

were not ignorant of his accusation; and being now incensed against him more than ever, they resolved to make him feel the effects of their resentment. Agreeably to this resolution, the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, wrote a letter to the king, in which they laid the blame of all the disturbances in the Netherlands upon the cardinal; who, they represented, had assumed the sole direction of affairs, and, by his imperious conduct, had rendered himself the object of universal hatred. "It was impossible for them to serve either the king or the people, whilst a person so exceedingly obnoxious possessed such unlimited influence. But the government would proceed smoothly, if Granvelle were removed; and in case the king would grant their request, there should be nothing wanting on their part, either to support his authority, or to maintain the purity of the catholic faith, to which they were not less sincerely attached than cardinal Granvelle."

Philip's reluctance.

To this letter Philip, after a delay of some months, made as mild a reply as could justly have been expected; but he concluded with observing, "That it was not his practice to dismiss his ministers upon the complaints of their enemies, till he had given them an opportunity of vindicating their conduct. Justice too required, that, from general accusations, they should descend to mention particular crimes or misdemeanours; and, if they did not incline to do this in writing, one of them might come to Madrid, where he would be received with every mark of distinction and respect."

WITH this answer the prince of Orange and the other lords were much dissatisfied; and they had the courage to reply, "That they were greatly disappointed to find so little regard paid to their remonstrance.

remonſtrance. For they had not writ their former letter, as cardinal Granvelle's accuſers, but as the king's counſellors; who, by virtue of their office, were bound to inform him of whatever appeared to be of conſequence to the welfare of his dominions. They did not deſire that the cardinal ſhould ſuffer harm; and, in any place except the Netherlands, they ſhould be glad to hear of his proſperity; but his continuance there, they thought, was incompatible with the public peace." They added, " That they did not eſteem the cardinal ſo highly as to undertake a journey to Spain on his account; and that ſince the king was pleaſed to repoſe ſo little confidence in their opinion, they hoped he would diſpenſe with their further attendance in the council; where, as they could not be preſent without a diminution of their dignity, it was impoſſible for them, while the cardinal retained his influence, to be of the ſmalleſt uſe."

Book VII.

1565.

To this ſecond letter, Philip made no other answer, but that he would conſider of what they had ſaid, and that in the mean time he expected they would continue to give their aſſiſtance as formerly in the council.

1564.

THEY now ſaw that he had no intention to comply with their requeſt. Still however they obeyed his orders, and at times they went to the council; but there, and every where elſe, they treated the cardinal with ſo much ridicule and contempt, that being at length diſguſted with his ſituation, he applied for liberty to retire. The king conſented, but with great reluctance: and could never forgive the prince of Orange, and the other lords, who had reduced him to this neceſſity.

Departure of
Granvelle.

GRANVELLE'S

• Bentivoglio. Grotius.

BOOK VII. GRANVELLE's departure was not attended with those advantages which his enemies expected to derive from it. They had flattered themselves with the hopes of obtaining, after his removal, their just share in the administration; but Viglius^f, and count Barlaimont, two zealous catholics, who had concurred with Granvelle in all his arbitrary measures, were soon received by the regent into the same degree of favour which he had possessed, and were allowed to exercise the same unlimited influence in the government.

1565.
His measures adopted by Viglius and Barlaimont.

Publication of the decrees of the council of Trent.

A LITTLE before this time the council of Trent had published its decrees, and Philip, as mentioned above, had resolved to have them obeyed throughout all his dominions. The disturbances which subsisted in the Low Countries, ought to have deterred him from adding fuel to a flame which already burnt with so much violence. But his bigotry, together with his arbitrary maxims of government, rendered him averse to every mild expedient, and determined him to enforce obedience to the decrees in the Netherlands, as well as in Spain and Italy. When the regent laid his instructions on this head before the council of state, she found the counsellors much divided in their opinions. The prince of Orange maintained, "That the regent could not require the people of the Netherlands to receive the decrees, because several of them were contrary to the fundamental laws of the constitution. He represented that some catholic princes had thought proper to reject them; and proposed that a remonstrance should be made to the king on the necessity of recalling his instructions." Several other lords were of the same opinion. But Viglius, on the other hand, urged with great earnestness, the necessity of complying

^f President of the privy-council, and esteemed the greatest lawyer in the Netherlands.

complying immediately with the king's commands. BOOK VII.
1565.
 "By general councils," he said, "the church had in all ages secured the purity of its discipline and doctrines. No remedies for the disorders in the Netherlands could be devised more likely to prove effectual, than the decrees in question. If they should be found in any respect incompatible with the laws or privileges of the Netherlands, the inconveniences dreaded from thence might be prevented, by executing them with prudence and moderation. He subjoined, that it was the peculiar glory and happiness of their sovereign, that either he did not entertain the same erroneous sentiments, or lie under the same disagreeable necessity as those other catholic princes who had rejected the decrees; but held opinions, and could follow measures, which, while they were conducive to the welfare of the church, were necessary in order to secure the peace and prosperity of his subjects &c."

THIS speech of Viglius had the desired effect upon the regent; who immediately resolved, without regard to what had been offered by the prince of Orange, to publish the decrees. But from different causes, both the number and courage of the reformers was now greatly augmented. In consequence of the civil wars in France, many protestants of that kingdom had retired into the southern provinces. And through the constant intercourse which subsisted in the way of trade between the more northern provinces and England and Germany, these provinces were filled with protestant ministers, who, being prompted by that ardent zeal which the knowledge of important truth lately discovered is calculated to inspire, exerted themselves with unceasing industry in propagating their religious tenets. The country abounded at the same time with books written against the popish rites and doctrines. Several of the nobility, and many of the

Progress of
the reform-
ation.

Book VII. the magistrates, had imbibed the new opinions.

1565.

The governors of the provinces were either not inclined to execute those edicts to which they had from the beginning shewn themselves averse; or, as they often declared, they found it impracticable to carry them into execution, without laying the country waste, by forcing into exile great numbers of its most industrious inhabitants. In many places the edicts were not executed at all; and in others, the protestants were rescued by the people from the hands of the inquisitors, and the inquisitors themselves obliged to fly from the enraged multitude.

Count Egmont sent to Spain.

THE regent discovered at this time great perplexity and hesitation. She was exceedingly desirous to have her administration approved by the king, and would have gladly complied with his instructions; but she could not help being alarmed by the repeated representations which were made to her of the consequences that might arise from driving the people to despair. She therefore judged it expedient to send one of the principal nobility to Spain, to inform the king more fully than she could do by writing, of the real state of the provinces: and having made choice of count Egmont for her ambassador, as one who was equally acceptable to all parties, she employed Viglius the president to give him her instructions, in presence of the other counsellors. The prince of Orange was highly dissatisfied with the terms in which these instructions were expressed: "This representation," said he, "of the state of our affairs, is not calculated to inform the king, but to deceive him. The relation which the president has given of our calamities falls infinitely short of the truth. We must lay open from the bottom those wounds under which the country bleeds, else the king can never apply the proper cures. Let us not, by our misrepresentations, make him believe the number of heretics to be smaller than it is. Let us acquaint him,

him, that every province, every town, every vil- Book VII.
lage is full of them. Let us not conceal from him 1565.
how much they despise the edicts, and how little
they respect the magistrates; that he may see how
impracticable it is to introduce the inquisition, and
be convinced that the remedy which he would have
us to apply, would be infinitely worse than the
disease." He added, " That although he was a
true catholic, and a faithful subject of the king,
yet he thought the calamities which had been lately
experienced in France and Germany, afforded a
sufficient proof that the consciences of men were
not to be compelled, and that heresy was not to
be extirpated by fire and sword, but by reasoning
and persuasion; to which it was in vain to expect
that men would be brought to listen, until the pre-
sent practice of butchering them like beasts was
laid aside." He represented likewise the absurdity of
publishing, on this occasion, the decrees of the
council of Trent, and proposed that count Egmont
should be instructed to request the king to suspend
the publication of them till the present tumults
were allayed. But the regent was either not in-
clined or not at liberty to follow the opinion of the
prince of Orange in preference to that of Viglius.
She called count Egmont apart from the council,
and having given him such instructions as she
thought proper, she made him set out immediately
for Spain; after having flattered him with hopes
that his journey thither, if he improved the oppor-
tunity afforded him, would secure him the full
possession of his master's favour ^b.

THE king received him at Madrid, and enter- His recep-
tion there.
tained him, during his stay there, with every testi-
mony of regard. When he was about to return,
he made him a present of fifty thousand florins;
and, as the count had several daughters, Philip
promised to dispose of them in marriages suitable
to

^b Bentivoglio, lib. ii. Grotius, lib. i.

Book VII.

1565.

His return.

to their father's rank. The cotemporary historians differ widely in their relations of what passed with respect to the subject of his embassy. The most probable account is, that although Philip's answer was not clear and explicit, yet that he expressed himself with so much softness in speaking of the edicts, and uttered so many strong professions of affection for the people of the Netherlands, that the count, who was in the highest degree candid and sincere, was induced to believe that the king did in reality intend to alter his measures of government. It is certain ⁱ, that he returned to the Low Countries highly satisfied with the court of Spain; and extolled the goodness of the king, and the love which he bore to his Flemish subjects. The prince of Orange was not so easily deceived. Count Egmont had been imposed upon, he said, by Spanish artifice. His private interest had blinded his penetration, and created in him an ill-grounded security with regard to the public good ^k.

In consequence of his report, a conference appointed.

BUT although count Egmont was not able to satisfy the prince of Orange, it should seem that his report was credited by most of the other counsellors, and even by the regent herself; who would not otherwise have agreed to a measure which, immediately after the count's arrival, was suggested in the council. It was there proposed that a certain number of divines and lawyers should meet together in Brussels, to consider of the most effectual methods of putting a stop to the growth of heresy; and the regent readily consented to this proposal, without inquiring, as she used to do on other occasions, whether it would be agreeable to the king. To this conference she called the bishops of Arras, Ipres, and Namur; Ravenstenius and Jansenius, two eminent divines; the two presidents of the provincial councils of Flanders and Utrecht, and two eminent lawyers from Mechlin and Brabant.

THE

ⁱ Grotius.^k Vid. William's Apology, p. 485.

Book VII. **1565.** EVEN Viglius ^a hesitated as to the expediency of this measure at the present juncture; and it excited in the minds of the people universal indignation and astonishment. Those hopes of deliverance from their grievances, which they had conceived from count Egmont's journey to Spain, had, by his report of the king's disposition towards them, been raised to the greatest height. Their disappointment now was proportionably great. They did not blame count Egmont; for they were persuaded that he had been deceived; but they detested the duplicity and artifice of Philip and his ministers.

THE count had too much sensibility not to be deeply affected on this occasion; and he complained bitterly that the king had acted with no other design in the studied kindness which he had shewn him, but to expose him to the contempt or hatred of his countrymen, and thereby to ruin his credit and influence. °

The prince
of Orange
remon-
strates.

THE prince of Orange was almost the only person in whom this unexpected measure created no surprise. When the new edict was transmitted to him, he wrote to the regent a letter; in which he represented, "That in the present temper of the people, it was impossible for the king's servants to execute the orders imposed upon them, without involving the provinces in a civil war." "But if still," he added, "your highness be determined to have the edicts carried into immediate execution, then I must desire that some more proper person may be appointed in my place, who, possessing greater authority, may be better qualified to fulfil your intention. The king is not ignorant, that on other occasions I have spared neither my person nor my fortune in his service. My present conduct proceeds not from the want of loyalty or zeal,

^a Meursius Gul. Auriac. p. 4, 5.

• Strada, lib. iv. p. 118.

zeal, but from a persuasion that I cannot yield the Book VII.
obedience required from me, without dishonour 1555.
to myself, and infinite prejudice to the Netherlands P."

NEITHER the prince of Orange, nor the counts Egmont and Horn, expressed their dissatisfaction with the present measures of government in any other way than by making remonstrances and complaints. As it was greatly their interest, so it appears to have been their sincere desire, to avoid incurring the king's displeasure. And they studied to give him every proof of fidelity that could be reasonably expected from those who were members of a free state, and had sworn to maintain the fundamental laws of the constitution.

THE conduct of many of the other nobles was The compromise.
not so scrupulous and reserved. They set on foot, at this time, a confederacy, by which they bound themselves to support one another, in preventing the inquisition from being established in the Netherlands. The prime mover of this expedient St. Aldegonde.
was Philip de Marnix, lord of St. Aldegonde, a nobleman highly distinguished for his eloquence, his address, and his political abilities, who had the merit of contributing more than any other person 1566.
(the prince of Orange alone excepted) towards accomplishing that happy revolution, by which the northern provinces were rescued from the Spanish yoke. By his advice, and according to his direction, a writing was drawn up, termed the Compromise, which is here inserted, as it marks strongly the spirit by which the people of the Netherlands were at present animated.

" WHEREAS certain malicious persons, under the cloak of zeal for the catholic religion, but in reality prompted by ambition, pride, and avarice, have, by their misrepresentations, persuaded our
lord

Book VII.

1566.

lord the king to introduce into these provinces that most pernicious tribunal the inquisition ; which is not only contrary to all human and divine laws, but exceeds in cruelty the most barbarous institutions of the most savage tyrants in the heathen world ; which subjects all authority to that of the inquisitors, reduces all men to a perpetual state of miserable slavery, and by the visitations which it appoints, exposes the best men to continual apprehensions ; so that if a priest, a Spaniard, or wicked minion of power shall incline, he may, by means of this institution, accuse any man, however innocent, and cause him to be imprisoned, condemned, and put to death, without being confronted with his accusers, and without being allowed to bring evidence of his innocence, or to speak in his defence : for these reasons we whose names are here subscribed have resolved to provide for the security of our families, goods, and persons ; and for this purpose we hereby enter into a sacred league with one another, promising with a solemn oath, to oppose, with all our power, the introduction of the above mentioned inquisition into these provinces ; whether it shall be attempted openly or secretly, and by whatever name it shall be called, whether that of Inquisition, Visitation, Commission, or Edict : declaring at the same time, that we are far from entertaining the design of attempting any thing prejudicial to the interest of our sovereign the king ; but on the contrary, that our fixed intention is, to support and defend his government, to maintain peace, and to resist, to the utmost of our power, all seditions, tumults, and revolts. To this agreement we have sworn ; and we hereby promise and swear to maintain it for ever sacred ; and we call Almighty God to witness, that neither in word nor deed shall we ever weaken or counteract it.

“ WE

“ WE likewise promise and swear, mutually Book VII.
to defend one another, in all places, and on all 1565.
occasions, against every attack that shall be made,
or persecution that shall be raised, against any
individual amongst us, on account of his concern
in this confederacy. And we declare, that no
pretence of the persecutors, who may allege re-
bellion, insurrection, or any other plea, shall ex-
empt us from this our oath and promise. No ac-
tion can deserve the name of rebellion, that pro-
ceeds from opposition to the iniquitous decrees
of the inquisition ; and therefore whether any
of us be attacked directly on account of opposi-
ing these decrees, or under pretence of punish-
ing rebellion or insurrection, we hereby swear
to endeavour by all lawful means to procure his
deliverance.

“ IN this and every part of our conduct re-
garding the inquisition, our meaning is, to sub-
mit to the general opinion of our confederates, or
to that of those who shall be appointed by the
rest to assist us with their counsel.

“ IN witness of this our league, we invoke
the holy name of the living God, as the searcher
of our hearts ; humbly beseeching him to grant
us the grace of his holy spirit, that all our enter-
prises may be attended with success, may pro-
mote the honour of his name, contribute to the
welfare of our souls, and advance the peace and
true interest of the Netherlands.”

SUCH were the terms of the compromise, which
was quickly circulated through the provinces, and
subscribed by persons of all ranks, whether ca-
tholics or protestants. Books were at the same
time multiplied, in which liberty of conscience

Book VII. was pleaded, the absurdities in the popish doctrines and worship exposed, and hideous pictures drawn of the inquisition.

1565.

THE regent felt great anxiety with regard to the consequences with which so much ill-humour and discontent were likely to be attended. She had never fully credited the representations which the prince of Orange and some of her other counsellors had often made to her. And she now complained bitterly of the situation to which she was reduced by the orders sent from Spain. "For to what purpose was it (she said) to publish edicts, when I wanted power to enforce their execution? They have served only to increase the people's audacity, and to bring my authority into contempt."

Speech of
the prince
of Orange
in the coun-
cil.

THE prince of Orange, and the counts Horn and Egmont, had, ever since the last republication of the edicts, absented themselves from the council. The regent now wrote to them in the most urgent manner, requiring their attendance. They readily complied; and the regent, after having informed them of her design in calling them together, desired they would deliver their opinions without reserve. The prince of Orange was among the last who rose, and he spoke as follows:

"WOULD to Heaven I had been so fortunate as to gain belief, when I ventured to foretell what has now happened. Desperate remedies would not in that case have been first applied, nor persons who had fallen into error been confirmed in it, by the means employed to reclaim them.

We

† Bentivoglio and Strada.

* This speech is recorded by Nicolas Burgundius, who compiled his history from the papers of the president Viglius. Vide Brandt's history of the reformation in the Netherlands.

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN.

179

We should not certainly think favourably of a physician's prudence, who, in the beginning of a disease, when gentle remedies were likely to prove effectual, should propose the burning or cutting off the part infected.

Book VIII.
1553

“THERE are two species of inquisition. The one is exercised in the name of the pope, and the other has been long practised by the bishops. To the latter, men are in some measure reconciled by the power of custom; and considering how well we are now provided with bishops in all the provinces, it may be reasonably expected that this sort will alone be found sufficient. The former has been, and will for ever be, an object of abhorrence, and ought to be abolished without delay.

“WITH respect to those edicts which have been so often published against the innovators in religion, hearken not to me, but to your own experience, which will inform you, that the persecutions to which they have given rise, have served only to increase and propagate the errors against which they have been exercised. The Netherlands have for several years been a school, in which, if we have not been extremely inattentive, we may have learned the folly of persecution. Men do not for nothing forego the advantages of life; much less do they expose themselves to torture and death for nothing. The contempt of death and pain, exhibited by heretics in suffering for their religion, is calculated to produce the most powerful effects on the minds of spectators. It works on their compassion, it excites their admiration of the sufferers, and creates in them a suspicion, that truth must certainly be found where they observe so much constancy and fortitude. Heretics have been treated with the same severity in France and England as in the Low Countries. But has it been attended there with

Book VII.

1565.

better success? On the contrary, is there not reason, there as well as here, to say what was said of the Christians of old, That the blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church. The emperor Julian, the most formidable enemy whom Christianity ever saw, was fully sensible of the truth of this. Harassing and tormenting could only serve, he knew, to inflame that ardent zeal which he wanted to extinguish. He had recourse therefore to the expedient of ridicule and contempt; and this he found to be more effectual. The Grecian empire was at different periods infected with heresies of various kinds. *Ætius* taught errors in the reign of *Constance*; *Nestorius* in that of *Theodosius*; *Arius* in that of *Constantine*. No such punishments were inflicted, either on the heresiarchs themselves or on their disciples, as are now practised in the Netherlands; and yet where are all those false opinions now, which the first broachers were at so much pains to propagate? Such is the nature of heresy, if it rests, it rusts; but he who rubs it, whets it. Let it be neglected and overlooked, it will soon lose the charm of novelty; and with that, it will lose the greatest part of its attractive power. But they are not the examples only of heathen princes which I would recommend to the regent's imitation. In complying with my advice, she will tread in the steps of our late glorious emperor, her father; who from experience was convinced, that gentle measures were more likely to prove effectual than severe ones; and therefore adopted the former, in preference to the latter, for several years before his resignation.

“THE king himself appeared, at a certain period, inclined to make trial of mild expedients. But, through the influence of the bishops and other ecclesiastics, he has changed his views. Let these men answer for their conduct if they can. For my own part, I am entirely satisfied that it is impossible to
root

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

181

root out the present evils in the Netherlands by force, without shaking the state from its foundation. I conclude with reminding you of what we have all heard frequently, That the protestants in the Low Countries have opened a correspondence with those in France. Let us beware of irritating them more than we have already done, lest, by imitating the French catholics in their severity, we, like them, involve our country in the dreadful miseries of a civil war."

Book VII.

1565.

THIS speech was not entirely without effect. It convinced the regent, that she must either make some concessions to the confederates, or have recourse to arms. She was inclined to follow the latter of these measures, because she knew it would be more agreeable to the king; and she desired count Egmont to undertake the command of some forces which she proposed to raise in order to carry her design into execution; but the count declined accepting of it, saying, That he could not fight with honour in defence of the inquisition. The dutchets found it necessary, therefore, to embrace the other alternative, and to attempt to soothe the malcontents, by making some abatement in the rigour of the edicts *.

1566.

MEANWHILE the number of those who had acceded to the compromise was become so considerable, that they thought it was now time to take some step towards fulfilling their engagements. With this view they set out for Brussels, where the court resided, and sent some of their number to desire leave of the regent, to lay before her their sentiments concerning a subject in which the interest of the king and their personal security were equally concerned. The counsellors were divided in their opinions with regard to

* Brandt, p. 165. vol. i.

Book VII. to the answer proper to be made to this request. Some of them were for rejecting it utterly; others advised to admit two or three of the confederates and no more; but the opinion of those prevailed who thought that, at present, it would be imprudent to furnish them with any just ground of offence, by denying them a privilege to which every inhabitant of the Netherlands was intitled; especially as they were without arms, and no danger could be apprehended from admitting them.

1566.

THEY entered Brussels in the beginning of April one thousand five hundred and sixty-six, in number between three and four hundred, on horseback. Besides count Brederode, who was descended from the ancient earls of Holland, there were the counts Colenberg and Tresenberg, the marquis of Mons, the baron of Montigny, and count Lewis of Nassau, brother to the prince of Orange; all of them persons of considerable influence in the provinces.

THEY went in a body, walking two by two, from the house of count Colenberg to the palace, and were received there by the regent, attended by the council of state.

Petition of
the nobles.

THEY began their petition with declaring, "That as hitherto they had never failed in loyalty to the king, so they were still as much as ever determined to hold fast their allegiance. They were sensible that their present conduct might be misconstrued; but they chose rather to expose themselves to this risk, than not inform the regent of what they were convinced was of the highest consequence to the interest both of the king and the provinces. The solicitude which the king had discovered to preserve religion pure in the Netherlands, deserved the highest praise; but experience had shewn, that the remedies employed for this purpose contributed

contributed only to increase the disease. They had long flattered themselves with hopes, that the States would have been assembled, to devise means more likely to prove successful; but since this desirable event had not taken place, they thought it their duty to inform her, that if the measures of government respecting religion were not quickly altered, they were persuaded it would be impossible to prevent a general insurrection. It was therefore their earnest desire, that she would send some proper persons to the king, to acquaint him with the necessity of softening the rigour of the edicts; and they intreated her to suspend the execution of them till his pleasure should be known. But if no regard, they added, shall be paid to this our humble and most earnest prayer, we call God and the king, your highness, and these your illustrious counsellors, to witness, that we have given warning of the impending danger, and shall not be accountable for the calamities that may ensue[†].

Book VII.
1566.

To this petition the regent gave the following answer in writing: "That she was not invested by the king with power to suspend the execution of the edicts; but that she was not averse from sending some proper person to Spain, where she would willingly employ her good offices to procure them satisfaction. That, in the mean time, she would issue orders to the inquisitors to proceed in the exercise of their office with moderation; and that, in return for her concessions, she expected that the petitioners would study carefully to avoid all occasion of offence."

Answer of
the regent.

THE confederates, much dissatisfied with this answer, insisted earnestly upon receiving one that was more explicit; and the regent, dreading the consequences of sending them away in ill-humour, ordered

[†] Bentivoglio and Brandt.

BOOK VII. ordered her secretary to communicate to them the instructions which, after considering the matter more maturely, she had resolved to transmit to the inquisitors. These were, that henceforth they should proceed against offenders in the article of religion with the utmost gentleness; and should not punish any of them with banishment, imprisonment, or confiscation, unless they were found guilty of seditious practices. And these instructions, it was added, were to remain in force till the king's pleasure should be known. The confederates, on the other hand, engaged, not to attempt to make any innovation in religious matters, but to wait patiently for the determination of the assembly of the States; which they fondly flattered themselves would be held soon, in order to put an end to all their grievances.

The mar-
quis of Mons
and the ba-
ron of Mon-
tigny sent
to Spain.

AGREEABLY to her first declarations, the regent immediately dispatched the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny, to lay the petition before the king. And these two noblemen gladly undertook the task assigned them; little suspecting either how fruitless their journey was to prove, as to the intention of it, or how fatal to themselves. For, as will appear in the sequel, Philip did not consider them as the regent's ambassadors, but as persons who had brought her under the disagreeable necessity of cloathing them with that character, and as the heads of a confederacy which had been formed against his government.

The intem-
perate zeal
of the re-
formers.

In the mean time a report was propagated in the Netherlands, that the regent had consented to the public profession of the reformed religion. In the belief of this, the people threw off the reserve which they had hitherto maintained; and the protestant ministers preached in many places to numerous assemblies of persons, who came together in arms, with a resolution to defend themselves,

themselves, in case the inquisitors should attempt to interrupt them. From these assemblies they soon passed to open violence against the churches, and despoiled them of all their costly ornaments.

BOOK VII.
1566.

THESE outrages were first committed in the province of Flanders; and the example of the Flemings was quickly diffused throughout all the provinces. In a little time afterwards the same tumultuous spirit appeared in the great commercial towns; in which, from their frequent intercourse with foreign protestants, and from the spirit of liberty that naturally grows up in large communities, almost the whole body of the people had embraced the new opinions.

IN Antwerp the reformers indulged themselves in the most unjustifiable extravagancies. They insulted the catholics when employed in the functions of their religion. They broke furiously into the great church, which was one of the richest edifices in Europe, overturned the altars, defaced the paintings, and destroyed all the images of the saints.

FROM the cathedral they flew with the same un-governable fury to the monasteries and convents; and there, after forcing open the gates, and obliging the monks and nuns to fly into the city for shelter, it appeared that, under the cover of religious zeal, many of the most abandoned of the people had joined with the reformers, and embraced the present opportunity of gratifying their rancour. The same riotous spirit appeared in numerous other places. It spread like a conflagration over all the provinces; meeting everywhere with the same combustible materials, and everywhere producing the same pernicious effects.

Book VII.

1566.

IN Brussels they were overawed by the presence of the court: yet even there, they had, in some measure, thrown off their wonted reserve; and the regent, apprehensive that her person was in danger, resolved to reside in Mons. This resolution gave much uneasiness to the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn; who saw how much dishonour it would reflect on them, to have it believed that the person of the princess was insecure, where *they* were invested with such high command, and possessed such extensive influence. They employed every argument that could prevail upon her to alter her intention. They pledged their lives and fortunes for her safety; and promised to exert their utmost power in quelling those disorders which were the cause of her inquietude. At length she yielded to their intreaties, and consented still to remain at Brussels. ^u

The success
and zeal of
the prince
of Orange
in quelling
the tumults.

THE several governors soon after set out for their respective provinces. The prince of Orange, besides being governor of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, and Burgundy, was viscount and governor of Antwerp. And even the popish historians acknowledge, that, having often gone thither, he had exerted himself strenuously in quieting the tumults occasioned by the intemperate zeal of the reformers. At this time he ordered three of the rioters to be executed, and fined and banished several of the rest. He again opened the great church, and restored the exercise of the catholic religion.

August.

BUT finding it impossible to prevent the protestants from holding their religious meetings, he entered into an agreement with the persons of greatest influence among them, by which they were allowed to exercise their religion in churches within

^u Bentivoglio, Brandt, &c.

within the city, provided that they should come together without arms; that they should give no annoyance to the catholics; and that their preachers should refrain from all invectives against the established church. And he consented that this agreement should remain in force till he should know the pleasure of the king; to whom the protestants engaged to submit, or immediately to leave the Netherlands.

BOOK VII.

1566.

THE regent approved of every part of William's conduct on this occasion, except his allowing the reformers to hold their meetings within the town. In order to satisfy her on this head, he represented, that he had granted them this indulgence from a conviction which experience had already confirmed, that by means of it he could more easily prevent the pernicious effects of their extravagance; that when they were under his own eye, or that of the magistrates, their assemblies were not near so numerous as formerly; their preachers were not so apt to indulge their enthusiasm, or to use indecent freedoms with the government; nor the people so apt to be inflamed, as when they assembled without restraint in the open fields. This measure, he added, was not only expedient, but necessary. There was no room for authority or persuasion. The reformers had shewn themselves unalterably determined to set up their worship within the city, whether he had permitted them or not. Their assemblies in the country had generally amounted to twenty-four or twenty-five thousand. Even in the town they were seldom less than ten thousand. He had no army to reduce so great a number to obedience; and not a single person among the catholic inhabitants could be persuaded to take up arms against them.

AFTER

' Brandt. Van Meteren, lib. ii.

BOOK VII. **1566.** AFTER quieting the disturbances in Antwerp, the prince set out for the provinces of Holland and Zealand, where his presence was equally necessary. There too, as in Antwerp, he employed all his power and influence; and did more towards quelling the tumultuous spirit of the reformers, than any other person could have done, without an armed force to overawe them. He persuaded them to restore the churches which they had usurped; and, except in one or two places, they were satisfied with the liberty which the regent was willing to allow, of holding their assemblies for religious worship in the suburbs of the town, or in the country.

Count Egmont's success.

COUNT Egmont was no less active in his department. From natural temper, as well as from political principles, no man was more averse from harshness and severity; yet being strongly prompted on this occasion by his desire of gratifying the king, he was at the utmost pains to discover the rioters, and punished many of them with rigour. He restored the priests to their functions, opened the churches which had been shut, and reduced all the protestants within his government to the necessity of acquiescing in the conditions which the regent had prescribed.

Count Horn's success.

COUNT Horn likewise acted with uncommon spirit and vigour in the city of Tournay, where the disorders had risen to a greater height than in other places. The inhabitants of that city, to the number of six thousand, having taken arms, laid siege to the garrison. They soon reduced it to such extremity, as obliged the commander to inform the regent, that if she did not send him immediate relief, he could not hold out longer than one day. She had not troops sufficient to oppose so great a force: nor was there any other expedient in

in her power, by which she could preserve the ^{Book VII.} ^{1566.} garrison from surrendering, but that of sending count Horn, their governor's ^v brother, to intercede with the inhabitants. The count forced his way, at the hazard of his life, into the midst of them; and with great address persuaded them not only to desist from the blockade, but to lay down their arms, to yield up the churches which they had usurped, and to rest satisfied with certain places of worship which he assigned them without the city ^x.

FROM this representation of the conduct of the prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont, they had very little reason, it should seem, to dread the king's displeasure. For they were not less active, nor less successful than the other governors ^v, with whom Philip is said to have been entirely satisfied. But the disapprobation which they had discovered of his measures of government some years before; the objections which they had urged against his retaining the Spanish forces in the Low Countries; the necessity to which they had reduced him, of removing Granvelle; their frequent remonstrances in the council against the inquisition and edicts; and the attachment which they had ever shewn to the liberty and constitutional privileges of the provinces; all these causes had alienated him entirely from them, and had begotten in his dark revengeful mind, a degree of hatred and resentment, which neither time, repentance, nor faithful services, could erase.

Grounds of Philip's aversion from these noblemen.

THESE noblemen had been disappointed of the private, as well as public advantages which they expected to derive from the removal of Granvelle.

Viglius

^v The Baron de Montigny, at this time in Spain.

^x Brandt, Meteren, &c.

^v The counts Arceberg and Megen.

BOOK VII. Viglius and count Barliamont were equally their enemies as the cardinal, and equally disposed to put malicious interpretations on their conduct. In these they were powerfully seconded by Granvelle; who, some time after his leaving the Netherlands, had been called to Madrid, where he enjoyed his wonted influence. This he did not fail to employ against his enemies in the Netherlands; and he found it easy to persuade the king, that in secret they had been abettors of all the disturbances which had arisen. Philip was therefore fired with indignation against them, and resolved sooner or later to make them feel the weight of his resentment. At present, however, he thought it necessary to conceal his sentiments: and in his answer to the account of the late transactions transmitted to him by the regent, he expressed his gratitude for the zeal that had been discovered in his service, and exhorted her, and the governors of the provinces, to continue their endeavours to allay the tumults in the best manner which the present circumstances would permit.

Forces levied.

WITH this answer he sent money, and an order for raising a body of catholic troops, upon whose fidelity he could depend for an absolute compliance with his will.

THE regent was not remiss in executing this order. She immediately levied a body of cavalry, and five regiments of infantry; of which she gave the command to the counts Erbestain, Charles of Mansfelt, Reuls, baron Schomberg, and the Sieur de Hierges, son of count Barlaimont.

THE prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont could easily discern the design of this armament; and they declared their disapprobation of it in the council, as a measure calculated to rekindle the flames of discord and sedition.

THEY

THEY were at the same time informed by letters from the marquis of Mons, and the baron of Montigny, that whatever public answer had been sent from the court of Spain to the dutchefs of Parma, it was known to every person at Madrid, that the king was highly offended at the concessions which *they* had made lately to the protestants. That they were considered as fomenters of the tumults, and encouragers of heresy. That the king and his ministers talked now more explicitly than they had hitherto done. The compromise had no other name given it but that of a conspiracy ; and the popular insurrections were never mentioned but as an open rebellion. There was no longer any room to doubt that the king, by the advice of Granvelle and Alva, was determined to wreck his resentment on all concerned, and particularly on them, whom he considered as the most guilty. And although at first domestic forces only were to be employed, yet their operations would soon be seconded by those of Spain.

Book VII.
1566.
Discovery
of Philip's
designs.

THE prince of Orange had several times desired leave of the regent to resign his employments ; alleging, that it was impossible for him at once to discharge his duty to his country, and to satisfy the king. The regent had as often refused to consent to his request ; and had accompanied her refusal with expressions of high regard, and with intreaties that he would not forsake her at a time when his assistance was more than ever necessary. On the present occasion he made the same application to the king, who gave him the same answer, and employed the same expressions of regard and confidence. *

BUT

* Bentivoglio. See the letter annexed to William's Apology.

Book VII. But the prince had received intelligence of Philip's most secret councils ; and knew that his real sentiments were entirely different from those which he professed. Through a correspondence which he held in France, he had procured a copy of a letter to the regent, from Alava the Spanish minister at Paris, which confirmed the information that had been transmitted by the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny. In this letter, Alava particularly insisted on the present favourable opportunity of establishing in the Low Countries that unlimited authority which the king had long so earnestly desired. He advised the regent, as matters were not yet ripe for execution, to meet the smooth faces of Orange, Horn, and Egmont, with the same artifice which they had employed ; and concluded with informing her, that the king, who knew them to be fomenters of all the disturbances which had happened, would soon pay them the wages of their iniquity ; and had sworn to punish *them* and the other inhabitants of the Netherlands in the most exemplary manner ^a.

1567.
Conference
at Dendre-
monde.

THIS letter the prince of Orange communicated to his brother count Lewis, and to the counts Egmont, Horn, Hoogstraten, and several others of the nobility ; who met together in Dendremonde, to deliberate concerning the measures which it would be proper to pursue. Count Lewis, who was naturally bold and ardent, urged that they should immediately incite the people to take up arms ; but his brother the prince of Orange disapproved of this proposal, and observed, that if they should begin to wage war in

^a The concluding words of the letter are, " in a manner, " that would make the ears of all Christendom tingle, even " though it should put in danger all the rest of his dominions." Brandt, 216. Reidanus, p. 3. Meterén, lib. ii.

in the present situation of affairs, they would neither be able to carry it on with success, nor to justify their conduct in undertaking it. That the inquisition and edicts were in effect abolished; and a reasonable liberty allowed in matters of religion. That, considering the tumults which had been excited, the regent could not be greatly blamed for raising forces; especially since she had levied none but such as were natives of the Netherlands. At present they could not allege any good reason for having recourse to arms; but he believed that ere long the best and strongest reasons would not be wanting. And in the mean time his advice was, not only to be on their guard themselves, but likewise to awaken in the people a sense of the danger with which they were threatened, that they might be prepared for entering upon action when the proper season should arrive.

Book VII.
1567.

HAD count Egmont been of the same opinion with the prince of Orange on this occasion, it is not to be doubted that all who were present would have concurred in the measures which he advised; and considering the greatness of their power and popularity, they might have induced the king to drop his plan, by making him sensible of the difficulty of carrying it into execution.

BUT they were all exceedingly disappointed when they heard count Egmont declare, "That far from taking part in any measure that might be offensive to the king, he looked upon every such measure as equally imprudent and undutiful. That from the enormities which had been committed, the king had some reason to entertain suspicions of their vigilance. That, for his own part, he was resolved, if possible, to wipe out these suspicions, by

BOOK VII.

1567.

exerting himself strenuously to reduce the people to a state of perfect tranquillity and obedience; which if he and the other governors could accomplish in their respective provinces, he believed they should hear no more of the Spanish forces; for after what the king had repeatedly told him when in Spain, he could not regard what he had heard of his intention to rob the Netherlands of their liberty."

THE prince of Orange and the other discontented lords spent several hours in attempting to bring him over to their opinion, but in vain. Although, as is above related, the count had received sufficient proof of Philip's insincerity in his discourse with him at Madrid, yet the concern which he had appeared to take in the interest of his family, joined to his professions of personal attachment, had imposed upon him so far as to prevent him from perceiving the danger to which he was exposed ^b.

The nobility concur with the regent.

THUS disappointed of the assistance of a person of so great influence, the other lords saw that nothing remained for them, but to conciliate Philip's favour, by an active concurrence with the regent in the measures which she was about to employ for the perfect settlement of the country.

Her success in suppressing the reformers.

A GREAT deal had been already done for this end by the governors of the provinces; but matters were not yet entirely upon the footing on which the regent desired to have them placed. The zeal of the reformers burnt with too much violence to be restrained by the authority of the magistrates, and still continued to discover itself in the most unjustifiable irregularities; particularly in the city of Valenciennes, where the common people had almost universally embraced the reformation. The strength and

^b Bentivoglio.

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN

155

and populousness of the city, its neighbourhood to France, and the correspondence which the people held with the protestants in the kingdom, were powerful motives with the regent for desiring to have a garrison placed in it composed of those troops which had been lately raised. She wished to have had them admitted with the consent of the inhabitants; but finding that it could not be obtained, she declared them rebels to the king, and ordered the lord of Noircarmes to besiege the town. The citizens seemed at first resolved to defend themselves; but when they saw the batteries ready to play, their courage failed, and they surrendered the city at discretion. Noircarmes no sooner entered it, than he ordered the governor and his son, the protestant ministers, and several of the inhabitants who had been the most active in the late disturbances, to be put to death; after which, having prohibited the public exercise of the reformed religion, he left a strong garrison in the place, under the command of a rigid catholic.

THE success of the regent's arms filled the protestants with terror, and inspired the catholics with fresh courage and resolution. She was not less successful in Tournay, Bois le Duc, and many other places. She even persuaded the city of Antwerp to receive a garrison, by means of which the catholic party acquired so great authority, and the reformers were so much intimidated, that, without opposition, she banished all the protestant preachers, and abolished the exercise of their religion.

COUNT Brederode and some others of the confederated lords had recourse at this time to their first

Count Brederode.

O 2

expedient

BOOK VII. expedient of a petition or remonstrance. But nei-
 1567. ther the regent nor the confederates were now in
 the same situation as formerly. She had no longer
 any reason to be afraid of them, since she was so
 well provided with an armed force; and many of
 them having before this time become sensible of
 their weakness, had studied to convince her that
 they were now entirely devoted to her service.

COUNT Brederode desired to be admitted into
 her presence, but this she refused; and vouchsafed
 no other answer to his petition, but "That he, and
 those who concurred with him, had wrested her
 concessions into a sense which she had never meant;
 and, by encouraging riots and tumults, had broken
 their agreement with her, and thereby forfeited their
 title to complain ^d."

FROM this answer Brederode perceived there was
 no other resource left him but force of arms. Re-
 solved to try his fortune in this way, he went im-
 mediately into Holland, and having drawn together
 a body of troops, he fortified himself in the town
 of Vianen. But the counts Aremborg and Megen
 coming suddenly upon him, he was soon reduced
 to the necessity of retiring into Germany. He re-
 turned to the Low Countries in the year following,
 and died in the town of Harnhoff ^e. He was a per-
 son much respected by the protestants, but appears
 to have possessed more zeal than capacity, and to
 have been in no respect qualified to be the leader
 of a party.

Tranquilli-
 ty establish-
 ed.

AFTER count Brederode was expelled, the re-
 formers had no where courage to lift their heads.
 The storm which had raged with so much fury
 was succeeded by a perfect calm. The churches
 were

^d Brandt and Bentivoglio.

^e Brandt.

were repaired, the altars restored, the images re-
placed, and the magistrates respected and obeyed, ^{Book VII.}
in the same manner as before the disturbances be- ^{1567.}
gan; while the discontented lords seemed now to
have no other ambition, but to surpass one another
in giving proofs of their attachment to the regent,
and of their zeal in the service of the church and of
the king ^f.

^f Bentivoglio, p, 48.

|

|

|

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VIII.

WHILE the dutchefs of Parma was thus fuc-
cessfully employed in quieting the disturb-
ances in the Netherlands, Philip was only deli-
berating on the subject. The regent had joined
with the confederated lords in representing, that his
presence would prove the most effectual remedy for
the evils which prevailed ; and this was the opinion
too of some of his Spanish ministers. He had long
talked as if he intended to be directed by their coun-
fel. He had even given orders for preparing ships
for his voyage, and all Europe was in expectation
of its taking place. But if he was ever serious in
proposing it, he was easily induced to lay it aside,
by the dread of those inconveniences or dangers
with which he apprehended it might be accompani-
ed. These inconveniences and dangers would have
been disregarded by the late emperor ; who under-
took

BOOK VIII.

1567.
Deliberati-
ons at the
court of
Spain.

Book VIII. took a journey to the Netherlands, and put him-
 1567. self in the power of Francis, his rival and antago-
 nist, in order to quell an insurrection in the city of
 Ghent. But Philip had neither the same personal
 courage and activity as Charles, nor that degree of
 affection for his subjects in the Low Countries,
 which was necessary to make him expose himself
 to danger on their account; and through his whole
 reign he chose rather to issue forth orders from his
 cabinet, than to execute his schemes in person ^a.

Philip re-
 solves to send
 the duke of
 Alva to the
 Nether-
 lands.

HAVING therefore resolved not to go to the Ne-
 therlands himself, it remained for him to determine,
 whether he should send thither an army, to compel
 the people to submit to his will, and to punish them
 for their disobedience; or should listen to their re-
 monstrances and complaints. His counsellors dif-
 fered widely in their opinions from each other. The
 duke of Feria and the prince of Evoli advised him
 to abolish the inquisition and edicts, and to make
 trial of gentler and more indulgent methods of
 dealing with the reformers; since he had sufficiently
 experienced that severe ones were not likely to
 be attended with success. But the duke of Alva,
 on the other hand, and cardinal Granvelle, repre-
 sented, that nothing but too much lenity in the
 treatment of the heretics in the Low Countries had
 been the cause of that insolence, and those enormi-
 ties, in which they had discovered an equal con-
 tempt of the true religion and of the royal autho-
 rity. This was not the proper season, they alleg-
 ed, for the exercise of clemency. The king had
 too long received laws from the Netherlands, in-
 stead of giving them. The people in these pro-
 vinces had long and loudly boasted of their privi-
 leges. If they were not speedily chastised for their in-
 solence and presumption, they would ere long dispute
 the

^a Bentivoglio, ann. 1567. Herrera, lib. ix.

the king's having any right to command them, and form themselves into an independent state, in opposition to *him*, as the Swiss Cantons had done formerly in opposition to his German ancestors; or, which was still more likely, the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, would, under the pretence of defending the liberties of the people, reduce them under their own power, and divide the several provinces as a prey among themselves. Besides, what happier opportunity, said Alva, can be wished for than the present, for introducing an army into the Low Countries, in order to establish the royal authority there on the same desirable footing as in Spain and Italy ^b.

Book VIII.
1567.

No arguments could be better suited to the temper and inclinations of the king; and accordingly, without further hesitation, he resolved to send to the Netherlands a strong and well disciplined army, under the command of the duke of Alva, whom, from long experience, he knew to be qualified in every respect for executing the plan of tyranny and oppression which he was determined to pursue.

In the mean time the dutchess of Parma had reduced the affairs of the Low Countries into the situation which is above described. She sent speedy information to the king of the success with which her endeavours had been accompanied; and represented to him, that there was not now the least occasion for the army which he had begun to prepare, since the tumults were allayed, the rioters punished, the heretics silenced, the church reinstated in its wonted authority, garrisons put into suspected places, and the whole country settled in a state of perfect order and tranquillity.

The regent
remon-
strates a-
gainst it.

HAD

^b Bentivoglio.

Book VIII.

1567.
Philip's
motives.

HAD Philip been in reality influenced by the motives which he pretended, he would, on receiving this intelligence, have countermanded the orders which he had issued for the march of the troops. But in issuing these orders it is impossible to believe, that he was prompted either by zeal for religion, or concern for the welfare of his Flemish subjects; but partly by the ambition of establishing among them a despotic government on the ruins of their ancient constitution, (a measure which the distance of the Netherlands from his seat of empire must have rendered peculiarly desirable to a prince of so imperious a temper) and partly by an implacable resentment against the prince of Orange and the other lords, who had discovered a jealousy of his designs.

REGARDLESS therefore of the change which the affairs in the Netherlands had lately undergone, Philip persisted in his purpose. The duke of Alva went by sea for Italy, and thence, after having assembled the several bodies of troops which were cantoned there, amounting to eight thousand foot and one thousand five hundred horse, he directed his march towards the Low Countries, first through the territories of the duke of Savoy, and then through Burgundy and Lorraine. His army was augmented on its march, by the addition of three hundred Burgundian cavalry, and four thousand German foot, and soon reached the province of Luxemburg, without meeting with any molestation by the way. After putting garrisons in some of the frontier towns, he set out for Brussels, where he arrived in the month of August one thousand five hundred and sixty-seven ^c.

His

^c Herrera, lib. ix. c. 3.

His arrival spread great consternation and astonishment over all the provinces. Many thousand persons had before this time left the Netherlands ; among whom was the prince of Orange, who, having long foreseen the impending storm, had withdrawn with his family and friends to his county of Nassau in Germany. He knew well how inveterate those prejudices were, which the king had for several years entertained against him ; and could not account for his sending to the Low Countries so formidable an army, commanded by a man so tyrannical as Alva, without supposing that he was determined to rule the people with a rod of iron ; and, at the same time, to wreck his vengeance upon him, and all such of the nobility as had ventured to dispute his will.

Book VIII.

1567.

The astonishment excited by the arrival of Alva and the Spaniards.

THE prince would gladly have prevailed upon count Egmont to accompany him, and endeavoured to open his eyes to the approaching danger. He repeated the evidence which he had formerly laid before him of the king's intentions, and he reminded him of the imperious character of Alva ; who, from being their enemy and rival, was become their master, and would not fail to employ his power to accomplish their ruin. But count Egmont was the father of a numerous family, which he could not support with dignity in any other country but the Netherlands. Conscious too of his fidelity, and of the important services which he had performed to the king, he could not be persuaded that Philip was insincere in the professions of friendship which he had made to him in Spain ; nor could he believe that he would indulge his resentment any farther, than to punish those who had been concerned in the late disorders.

The prince of Orange retires to Germany.

THE

Book VIII.

1567.

THE prince of Orange finding the count inflexible, left him, with these words: "You are the bridge, count Egmont, by which the duke of Alva will pass into the Netherlands, and he will no sooner pass it, than he will break it down. You will repent of despising the warning which I have given you, but I dread that your repentance will be too late."

IN the interval between the departure of the prince of Orange in April one thousand five hundred and sixty-seven, and the arrival of the duke of Alva in the month of August following, count Egmont perceived his importance much diminished; but he resolved to submit to his present disagreeable situation, and even humbled himself so far as to receive and welcome Alva in the province of Luxemburg, where he made him a present of two fine horses, as a mark of his desire to live with him on amicable terms. Alva received this present with the haughtiness that was natural to him; but in all his behaviour towards the count, he dissembled his intention, till the time was come when he resolved to put it in execution.

Imprisonment of the counts Egmont and Horn.

September.

ONE of his first acts after he came to Brussels was, to cast both count Egmont and count Horn into prison. As the deed itself was tyrannical, so the manner of it was insidious. Count Egmont, having been first deceived himself, was employed to draw count Horn into the snare^d. When Alva found that their apprehensions were laid asleep, he desired one day that they would come to his house, to give him their opinion with regard to a citadel which he proposed to build in Antwerp; and after the business for which they had been called was over, they were carried on different pretences into separate apartments, count Egmont by Alva himself, and count Horn by his son Frederic de Toledo.

^d Strada, p. 215.

ledo. "Count Egmont," said Alva, "deliver ^{Book VIII.} your sword; it is the will of the king that you ^{1567.} give it up, and go to prison." The count, astonished at this unexpected declaration, would have attempted to escape; but observing himself immediately surrounded by Alva's guards, he delivered his sword, saying, "By this sword the cause of the king has been oftener than once successfully defended." Both he and count Horn protested, that, as knights of the Golden Fleece, they could be judged only by their peers, and imprisoned only by their authority. But no regard was paid to this protestation. They were hurried away to prison, in a place at a distance from Brussels, and out of the confines of the province where they resided; in violation of a sacred privilege, which, by a fundamental law, belonged even to the lowest of the people ^f.

INTELLIGENCE of this event (which was immediately followed by the imprisonment of count Egmont's secretary, the lord of Beckerzal, and several other persons of distinction) was soon conveyed to the remotest corners of the Netherlands, and filled the minds of the catholics as well as protestants with the most disquieting apprehensions. It was no security, they saw, against the king's resentment, to have adhered to the profession of the catholic faith, nor even to have been active in opposing the reformers. None were conscious of so much merit of this kind, and none had distinguished themselves so highly in the service of the king, as those illustrious persons who were now devoted to destruction. Men therefore of all ranks were greatly alarmed, and began to abandon their habitations; and it was computed that, at this time, and a little before Alva's arrival, more than a hundred

The people
fly into foreign parts

^e Strada, p. 215.

^f Grotius and Bentivoglio

Book VIII. hundred thousand persons fled into foreign parts.
 1567. Great numbers of these were the most industrious of the people, who transferred their knowledge of arts and manufactures into the countries which gave them refuge; and thereby enriched the dominions of Philip's enemies whilst they impoverished his own ⁸.

The dutch-
 ess of Parma
 leaves the
 Nether-
 lands,

THE imprisonment of the counts Horn and Egmont was matter of surprise to no person so much as to the regent. Philip had assured her, that although he had conferred on Alva the command of the army, yet the authority of regent was still to remain in her hands; and the royal commission which Alva produced on his first arrival, was agreeable to this declaration. But she could not persuade herself that the duke would have presumed to make so violent an encroachment on her prerogative, by the imprisonment of two of the first persons in the state, unless he had been invested with an authority much superior to that of which she had been informed. The king had not been ingenuous, she suspected, in his conduct towards her, and had conferred powers on Alva by which her authority as regent was impaired. This she considered as a proof that Philip had listened to the calumnies of her enemies, and did not repose in her that trust and confidence which she was conscious her zeal to promote his interest had deserved. She judged that it would be derogatory to her honour, to remain any longer in the Netherlands; and immediately applied for liberty to retire. After repeated solicitations, she at length obtained permission, and left Brussels in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and sixty-eight, much regretted by all the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and particularly by the protestants, to whom her administration appeared mild and

and gentle, when they compared it with that which they had reason to expect under their present governor ^{Alva}.

AFTER the departure of the duke of Parma, the authority of regent remained entire in the hands of Alva; and by the royal commission which he published, it appeared, that Philip had invested him with higher powers than had ever been bestowed on any former governor. They were much higher than as sovereign of the Low Countries he had a right to bestow, and were nearly extensive of all the laws and privileges which in his imagination he had formerly sworn to maintain. But before this time he had had recourse to the method of justifying iniquity, of which the princes of the Romish church have so often availed themselves; he had obtained from the pope a dispensation from his oath, and no longer disguised his intention to establish a despotic government in the Netherlands, on the ruins of the ancient constitution. Besides the absolute command of the army, Alva's commission bore, that the king had conferred upon him the presidency of the three councils of state, of justice, and the finances: with full power to punish or to pardon crimes of every sort, as he should judge to be expedient.

He began his administration with publishing a declaration, that a month should be allowed to the reformers for preparing to leave the country, without receiving during that space any trouble or molestation; and at the same time he issued secret orders to the inquisitors to proceed immediately in the execution of the edicts with the utmost rigour.

To assist and encourage these men in the exercise of their office, he instituted a new council, to which he gave the name of the Council of Tumults, which he appointed to take cognizance of the late disorders,

^a Bentivoglio and Strada.

Book VIII.

1567.

disorders, and to search after and punish all those who had been concerned directly or indirectly in promoting them. This council consisted of twelve persons, the greatest part of whom were Spaniards. The duke was the president himself, and in his absence, Vargas, a Spanish lawyer, distinguished above all his countrymen by his avarice and crueltyⁱ.

First deed
of the coun-
cil.

ONE of the first deeds of this tribunal, which might well be called, as the Flemings termed it, the Council of Blood, was to declare, That to have presented, or subscribed any petition against the late erection of bishoprics, or against the edicts and inquisition, or to have permitted the exercise of the new religion under any pretence whatever; or to insinuate by word of mouth or writing, that the king has no right to abolish those pretended privileges which have been the source of so much impiety, is treason against the king, and justly merits the severest punishment he shall be pleased to inflict^k.

The per-
secutions.

THE governor had already disposed his army in such a manner as he thought would most effectually secure the execution of this cruel, undistinguishing resolution of the council. In Antwerp he built a citadel, and compelled the inhabitants to defray the expence which this instrument of their own slavery had cost him. He began to build citadels in other places; and, in the mean time, he spread his troops over the country in such formidable bodies, that the people, over whom they exercised the most oppressive tyranny, either forsook their habitations, or gave themselves up to despair. Above twenty thousand persons escaped at this time into France, England, and the protestant provinces of Germany^l. Great numbers were prevented from flying, and seized whilst they were meditating flight by the cruel hand of the persecutor. The innocent

were

ⁱ Brandt, p. 260, 265, &c. Van Meteren, lib. iii.

^k Van Meteren, lib. iii. p. 66. ^l Brandt and Bentivoglio.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

111

were overwhelmed with horror at the sight of the ~~last~~ ^{terrible} dreadful punishments inflicted on the guilty, and lamented that this once flourishing country, so much distinguished for the wisdom of its government and the happiness of its people, should now present no other object to view, but criminality, imprisonments, and blood."

THERE WAS NO distinction made of age, sex, or condition. Persons in their earliest years, persons worn out, and ready to die under the influence of age; persons of the highest rank, as well as the lowest of the people, of the highest sciences and sometimes even on bare suspicion, were sacrificed to the rapacity and cruelty of the governor and his associates.

ALTHOUGH in the space of a few months upwards of eighteen hundred persons suffered by the hand of the executioner: yet the dose of human blood was not satisfied. Prisoners were not brought in so fast, nor seized in such considerable numbers, as he desired. The time of Carnival was approaching, when he expected that he should find the reformers off their guard. They would then leave their forsaking-places, be surprised, and visit their families, while the catholics were immersed in mirth and dissipation. On this occasion his soldiers, accompanied by the torturers, like so many wolves, were let loose among the protestants; who were seized in the middle of the night in their beds, and from thence dragged to prisons and dungeons.

MANY who had been only once present at the protestant assemblies, even although they declared their faith in the catholic religion to be firm and unshaken, were hanged or drowned; while those who professed themselves to be protestants, or re-

VOL. I.

P

fulled

BOOK VIII. refused to abjure their religion, were put to the rack, in order to make them discover their associates; they were then dragged by horses to the place of execution, and their bodies being committed to the flames, their sufferings were prolonged with ingenious cruelty.

1567.

To prevent them from bearing testimony, in the midst of their torments, to the truth of their profession, their executioners were not satisfied with barely confining their tongues; they first scorched them with a glowing iron, and then screwed them into a machine, contrived on purpose to produce the most excruciating pain ^a.

It is shocking to recount the numberless instances of inhuman cruelty perpetrated by Alva and his associates, especially when we consider that the unhappy victims were not those hardened wretches, who, by daring and bloody deeds, are guilty of violating the laws of nature and humanity, but were generally persons of the most inoffensive characters; who, having imbibed the new opinions in religion, had too much probity to disguise their sentiments; or at the worst, had been betrayed into indiscretions by their zeal for propagating truths, which they believed to be of the highest importance to the glory of God and the happiness of men.

ALVA communicated a great share of his savage spirit to the inferior magistrates; who knew that they could not recommend themselves more effectually either to the king or to the governor, than by the exercise of rigour and severity. Several of them, however, whose humanity prevailed over the considerations of safety and interest, were induced to give the protestants timely warning to withdraw. Even the members of the bloody council began to feel their hearts revolt against the reiterated

^a Brandt and Van Meteren, p. 69.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

211

ated instances of cruelty, to which their sanction was required. Some of them applied for dismissal; others had the courage to absent themselves; and out of the twelve, of which the council was composed, there were seldom above three or four present °.

Book VIII.

1567.

ABOUT this time the magistrates of Antwerp, whose behaviour from the beginning of Alva's administration had been extremely obsequious, thought they might venture to interpose in favour of certain citizens whom the inquisitors had imprisoned. Their petition was conceived in the humblest terms; and they represented, that although the persons for whom they pleaded, had been present two or three times in the protestant assemblies, yet it was only curiosity that led them thither; they were still true sons of the church, and faithful subjects to the king; and they had remained in the country till the time of their imprisonment, on the faith of the declaration which the governor had made, that they should not receive any disturbance on account of what had passed, till the expiration of a month after his arrival in the Netherlands.

Alva's tyranny and arrogance.

To this petition Alva haughtily replied, That he was amazed at their folly in presuming to apply to him in behalf of heretics; and they should have reason, he added, to repent bitterly of their conduct, if they did not act more prudently in future; for they might rest assured, that he would hang them all, for an example to deter others from the like presumption P.

P 2

NOTWITH-

° This appears from the sentences which they passed. Many of these were subscribed only by two or three; as that, for instance, against Antony Van Stralen, which was signed only by Vargas and two others. Except during the first two or three months, Alva seldom attended, but all the sentences were dictated by him; and his presence was rendered unnecessary by the active and unrelenting cruelty of Vargas. Grimestone.

P Brandt, p. 265.

Book VIII.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, some of the catholic nobility, and Viglius, who had formerly concurred in all the arbitrary measures of Granvelle, but whose heart melted at the present misery of his countrymen, had the courage to remonstrate to the king against the governor's barbarity. Even the pope exhorted him to greater moderation. Philip, however, refused to countermand the orders which he had given, till he should hear from Vargas; who advised him to persevere in the plan which he had adopted, assured him of its success, and at the same time flattered him with the hopes of an inexhaustible fund of wealth that would arise from confiscation. Vargas being seconded by the inquisitors at Madrid, Philip lent a deaf ear to the remonstrance which had been made to him; and the persecutions were continued with the same unrelenting fury as before ⁹.

History of
Don Carlos.

THE people of the Netherlands were confirmed in their despair of obtaining mercy from Philip, by the accounts transmitted to them at this time from Spain, of his cruel treatment of his son Don Carlos. Various relations are given of that tragical and mysterious affair by the contemporary historians; but the following appears the most consistent and probable. This young prince had from his earliest youth been noted for the impetuosity and violence of his temper; and though he never gave reason to think favourably of his understanding, or his capacity for government, he had discovered the most intemperate ambition to be admitted by his father to a share in the administration of his dominions. Philip, whether from jealousy or a conviction of his son's unsuitness for any important trust, refused to gratify his ambition, and behaved towards him with distance and reserve; while he bestowed

⁹ Brandt. Thuanus, c. 43. p. 9.

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN

ed all his confidence in the duke of Alba, and Gomez de Silva, and the emperor's army, against whom Don Juan had been sent to count, and partly because he considered them as spies upon his conduct, and partly from most irreconcilable enmity. In the year 1567 he did not scruple to inflict upon the duke the severe censure the measures of his government merited, and particularly those which had been taken in the Netherlands. But the duke's conduct, and his compassion for the people, who were oppressed the duke of Alba, and a conspiracy was formed to tempt upon his life for a reward of 100,000 ducats; had been discovered, and the duke's interviews with the emperor of Austria, and with de Montigny, and the emperor's design of retiring into the south, and his intention to put himself at the head of the contents.

Of this design intelligence was given to some of the courtiers in the king's chamber, who having confided with the emperor, and the duke as he usually did a number of years, and with difficulty, refused to reveal the plot, from putting his life in danger, and from informing him of his design. The duke, however, went into his chamber in the night, attended by some of his attendants, and guards; and, after a short sleep, he was awakened by his undutiful betrayers, who were sent to come to exercise his paternal authority, and chastisement. Then calling all his attendants, he commanded them to bring him a dark-coloured mourning robe, and ordered his guards to watch over him, and to be ready to go to his chamber. The high-priest of Spain was extremely shocked at this treacherous conduct, and prayed his father and the emperor,

Book VIII.

1568.

to put an immediate end to his life. He threw himself headlong into the fire, and would have destroyed himself, had he not been prevented by the guards. During his confinement, his despair and anguish rose to a degree of frenzy. He would fast sometimes for whole days together, then eat voraciously, and endeavour to choke himself by swallowing his victuals without chewing. Several princes interceded for his release, as did many of the principal Spanish nobles. But the father was relentless and inexorable. [After six months imprisonment, he caused the inquisition of Madrid to pass sentence against his son, and, under the cover of that sentence, ordered poison to be given him, which in a few hours put a period to his miserable life, at the age of twenty-three.]

February.

PHILIP had, before this time, given a proof of the cruelty of his disposition; when, as above related, he chose to be present at the execution of his protestant subjects in Spain. His singular conduct on that occasion, and the composure with which he witnessed the torments of the unhappy sufferers, was ascribed by some to the power of superstition; while it was regarded by others, as the most convincing evidence of the sincerity of his zeal for the true religion. But his severity towards his son did not admit of any such interpretation. It was considered by all the world as a proof that his heart was dead to the sentiments of natural affection and humanity; and his subjects were every where filled with astonishment. It struck terror in a particular manner into the inhabitants of the Low Countries; who saw how vain it was to expect mercy from a prince, who had so obstinately refused to exercise

† Compare Thuanus, lib. xliii. c. 8. with Strada, lib. vii. p. 225, &c.

exercise it towards his own son ; whose only crime, they believed, was his attachment to them, and his compassion for their calamities. Book VIII.
1568.

THIS unhappy people had no resource left but in the wisdom, public spirit, and extensive influence of the prince of Orange. Soon after the duke of Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, William had been cited to appear before him ; and a declaration had been published by Alva, in the name of the king, that in case of his appearance, the utmost lenity would be shewn him. But the prince was too sagacious to be caught in this snare. He refused to obey the citation, and assigned the following reasons for his refusal. The prince of Orange cited to stand his trial.

“ THE citation was of such a nature,” he said, “ that the duke of Alva could not expect his compliance with it. It was contrary in several respects to the fundamental laws of the Netherlands ; the time allowed him to make his appearance was not what the laws prescribed ; and was so short, that, considering his distance from the place of trial, it was utterly impossible for him to appear on the day appointed. The duke of Alva was a judge, whose authority he must on every account decline ; since, as a knight of the Golden Fleece, he could be judged only by his peers ; and, as an inhabitant of Brabant, by his fellow-citizens. It was a breach of his privileges to commit the power of judging him to a person who was qualified in neither of these respects ; and when injustice was done him in the very nomination of his judge, he had little reason to hope for justice in the decision of his cause ; especially when he considered, that the duke of Alva had long been his personal enemy, and had lately without hearing what he had to say in his defence, proceeded on the supposition He refused to obey.

Book VIII.

1568.

His son carried to Spain.

sition of his being guilty, and had seized violently, and sent to Spain, his son the count of Buren, who was pursuing his studies in the university of Louvain; trusting for the security of his person, to his unquestionable innocence, and the privileges of the place where he resided."

His estates confiscated.

At the same time with the prince of Orange, the earls of Hoogstraten and Culemborg, and several other noblemen, were cited to answer for their conduct; and, as soon as the short term allowed to them for making their appearance was expired, Alva pronounced sentence against them, and confiscated their effects. He ordered the house of count Culemborg in Brussels to be pulled down, because the confederates had sometimes held their assemblies in it; and he declared all the estates of the prince of Orange, who (besides his principality in the kingdom of France) possessed several in the Low Countries, and some of great extent in Burgundy, to be forfeited to the king; a considerable share of the profits of which, if we may credit some historians, he either applied to his own use, or bestowed on the numerous informers whom he employed.

He employs the intercession of the emperor.

THE prince of Orange was too well acquainted with Philip's inflexible temper, to expect that any consideration or influence would prevail with him to redress his grievances; yet, that he might more clearly evince to the world the necessity which he lay under of having recourse to arms, he sent to the emperor Maximilian, a particular account of the treatment which he himself had received, and of the cruelty which the duke of Alva was exercising against the people of the Netherlands; and intreated him to employ his good offices in *his* and their behalf. Maximilian,

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

217

Maximilian, a prince entirely opposite in character to Philip, readily complied with this request. To give his intercession the greater weight, he made choice of his brother Charles of Austria for his ambassador; and instructed him to represent, that in his opinion, and that of all the princes in Germany, the present conduct of the duke of Alva in the Low Countries was no less impolitic than rigid and severe.

Book VIII.
1568.

Philip's answer to this remonstrance was such as from his well known character there was reason to expect. The severities which had been employed, he said, had not yet been found sufficient to repress the pride and insolence of his Flemish subjects; and he hoped the emperor would take care not to permit any troops to be raised against him in Germany by the prince of Orange and his associates.

Philip's reply to the emperor.

So haughty an answer, given to a prince of the first rank in Europe, who was Philip's near relation, demonstrated that it would be vain and ineffectual to make any further attempt to divert him from his purpose. It contributed likewise to alienate Maximilian from his interest, and thereby facilitated the levies which were soon afterwards made in Germany for carrying on the war.

The prince of Orange, who for several months past had been solicited by the Flemish exiles to take up arms, would willingly have deferred complying with their request, in expectation of a more convenient season, when Philip might be involved in war with some of the neighbouring nations, and have it less in his power to bestow attention on the Netherlands. But the impatience of the exiles to return home, the great additions which the persecutions had

The prince of Orange prepares for an invasion of the Netherlands.

Book VIII. had made to their numbers, and his dread that
 1568. Alva, were he suffered to proceed, would establish his power on too firm a foundation to be shaken by any force which could be brought against it; all these considerations concurred in determining him immediately to begin his preparations.

In order to raise money, he sold his jewels, plate, and furniture. His brother, count John of Nassau, supplied him with a considerable sum, and he received contributions from the Flemish exiles in London, Embden, Cleves, and other places, where they had taken shelter.

His hopes of
assistance

He was aware how unable the inhabitants of the Netherlands were, to resist the arms of Spain, unless supported by some foreign power. Philip was not however near so formidable at this time as during the life of Mary queen of England, who knew no other law but her husband's will, and never scrupled to sacrifice the interests of her people to his ambition. Had Mary been still alive, and Philip in possession of his former influence over the English councils, the inhabitants of the Netherlands would have struggled for their liberties in vain. It was fortunate for them, that the princess who sat now upon the throne of England was led, both by inclination and interest, to adopt a system of politics entirely contrary to that of Mary. For as Elizabeth had established the protestant religion in her own dominions, she had before this time shewn herself determined to support the protestants of the neighbouring kingdoms. She had interested herself deeply in the civil wars of France, in favour of the Calvinists, whilst Philip gave assistance to the opposite party. And the prince of Orange had reason to entertain the most sanguine hopes, that she would not remain an idle spectator of what was passing in the Netherlands.

from the
queen of
England,

He

He had conceived expectations likewise of obtaining succour from the French protestants; and with this view had communicated all his measures to their leaders, the prince of Conde and the admiral de Coligni. But his chief dependence was upon the protestant princes of Germany, whom, ever since he left the Netherlands, he had strenuously endeavoured to persuade, that if they did not exert themselves with vigour, the liberties of the Netherlands would soon be entirely suppressed; and the trading cities, with the prosperity of which the interest of the higher provinces of Germany was inseparably connected, would be changed into strong holds, filled with Spanish troops, which the duke of Alva, as soon as his purposes in the Low Countries were accomplished, would not fail to employ against the neighbouring powers.

Book VIII.
1568.

PROMPTED by these motives, and by zeal for their religion, the count palatine of the Rhine, the duke of Wirtemberg, the landgrave of Hesse, and several other princes, resolved to support William in his intended armament; and accordingly they furnished him with considerable supplies of money, promised him more, and assisted him in levying troops within their respective territories.

and from
the German
princes.

WHILST the prince was employed in making levies in Cleves, Juliers, and other countries adjoining to Brabant and Guelderland, his brother, count Lewis, was no less active in raising forces in the more northern parts of Germany, and in gathering together the Flemish exiles.

Count Lewis

COUNT Lewis was much sooner ready to take the field than his brother, and he began his march in the end of April or beginning of May. He resolved first to make an attempt on Groningen; and

arrives with
an army in
the Nether-
lands;

Book VIII. and for this purpose he pitched his camp in such
 1568. a situation, that whilst he cut off that city from all
 correspondence with the neighbouring country, he
 kept a communication open with his friends in
 Germany.

gains a vic-
 tory over
 the Spani-
 ards.

THE duke of Alva sent count Aremberg, an officer of considerable reputation, to oppose him; and ordered count Megen, governor of Guelderland and Zutphen, to march as soon as possible to count Aremberg's assistance, with a regiment of German infantry that was under his command. Upon Aremberg's approach, Lewis drew off his army to a still more advantageous situation; and encamped on a rising ground with a large morass in front.

THE Spaniards gave at this time a striking proof of that ferocity and insolence which they afterwards discovered on numberless occasions, during the course of the present war. Having conceived the most contemptible opinion of the enemy, they were fired with impatience to engage, and as soon as they came in sight demanded the signal of battle. Aremberg endeavoured to restrain their ardour, by representing that the enemy were so strongly posted, and so much superior in number, that it would be impossible to attack them with success till count Megen should arrive. But the Spaniards were not disposed either to regard his opinion, or to respect his authority. They reproached him with infidelity to the king, and accused him of cowardice and ignorance of the art of war. Aremberg had not sufficient strength of mind to despise their reproaches. Inflamed with indignation at their unworthy treatment of him, "Let us march," said he, "not to conquer, but to be overcome; and not by the arms of the enemy, but by the nature of the place. We shall be buried in the mud and water before we can reach

the enemy : but it will soon appear, whether wanting either in courage or fidelity to the

BOOK VIII.
1568.

Saying this, he gave orders to advance. The
ords were in the front, the Germans in the rear,
ie cavalry was distributed in different places as
ound would permit. Lewis rejoiced when he
em approaching towards him. He had plac-
cavalry, under the command of his brother
Adolphus of Nassau, on the right. On the
his main army was covered by a hill, on
he had planted a strong band of musketeers.
d him there was a little wood and the walls
onvent; and in his front, the morafs above
oned, which was almost impassable. Yet the
ards entered it without hesitation, and conti-
to advance till they were within reach of the
y's fire. They came to be sensible of their
when it was too late. Those who had first
d were prevented from returning by those
ollowed, and the farther they advanced, they
the more exposed to the enemy's shot, and
ore entangled in the mud. When they were
s situation Lewis attacked them vigorously in
while his brother broke in upon their flank
the cavalry. They were cut to pieces almost
ut resistance. Six hundred Spaniards were
l. The Germans surrendered at discretion,
were dismissed, after taking an oath that they
d never more carry arms for the duke of Alva.
t Aremberg, finding no room to act as gene-
was obliged to content himself with performing
uty of a common soldier; and he and count
phus rushing furiously against one another, fell
of them by the other's sword. The Spaniards
their artillery, baggage, and military chest.
battle was scarcely ended when count Megen
ed, with so strong a body of troops as would
been sufficient, if they had advanced in time,
ave changed the fortune of the day. But
they

Book VIII. they were not able alone to face the enemy. And therefore Megen found it necessary to take shelter in Groningen, where he collected the scattered remains of the conquered army ¹.

1568.

Alva's inquietude on this occasion.

The trial of the counts Egmont and Horn.

THE news of this defeat affected the duke of Alva in the most sensible manner. He knew of how much consequence it was to any cause that the first enterprize should be attended with success. He considered that Lewis had but just entered the Low Countries when he had gained a signal victory, and that the prince of Orange was ready to begin his march with a still more formidable army than that of Lewis. The neighbouring powers, he doubted not, would be animated by what had happened, to grant the prince those supplies which they had promised him; and the Flemings would be less afraid of declaring in his favour. On these accounts he would have marched immediately into Friesland with his whole army, in order to cut off or scatter the troops under Lewis before his brother should arrive. But he thought it necessary before he set out, to dispatch the trial of the counts Egmont and Horn, and some other lords, whom at his first coming into the Netherlands he had thrown into prison. Some of his friends endeavoured to divert him from his purpose, by representing that the prisoners were so many pledges in his hands for the peaceable behaviour of their adherents; and that putting them to death would only serve to embitter the resentment of the people, and make them receive the prince of Orange with open arms. But he still persisted in his resolution, prompted, if we may believe some historians, by the apprehension that during his absence the people might take up arms, and release the prisoners. But if we may credit others, he was influenced rather by revenge than prudence,

¹ Bentivoglio, p. 67, &c.

dence, and could no longer restrain his fury, which Book VIII.
 was inflamed at this time by the loss which his army had sustained in the late engagement. 1568.

IN one day he ordered eighteen persons of rank, whom the council of tumults had pronounced guilty of subscribing the compromise, or of presenting remonstrances to the dutchess of Parma, to be put to death. Such of them as died catholics were beheaded, and the rest were committed to the flames. Casembrot, the lord of Beckerzel, count Egmont's secretary, who had been condemned for signing the compromise, was tortured in the most barbarous manner, to make him accuse his friend and master; and when it appeared that his exhausted body was ready to sink under the torments which he suffered, Alva, enraged that nothing had been extorted from him which could justify the condemnation of the count, gave orders that he should be drawn asunder by horses^u. History scarcely furnishes an instance of so cruel a punishment inflicted for so slight an offence.

SUCH was the prelude to the trial of the counts Horn and Egmont, which, followed immediately after what has been just now related.

ALTHOUGH the conduct both of Philip and the duke of Alva, in the Netherlands, and particularly their treatment of these two noblemen, had been an open violation of the laws, yet it was thought necessary to employ the farce of a formal trial before their sentence of condemnation was pronounced. This was intended to lessen the odium which might arise from putting to death two such illustrious persons, who were so exceedingly beloved by the people, and had distinguished themselves
so

^u Grimestone and Bentivoglio.

Book VIII. so highly in the service of the king. But it was accompanied with the contrary effect. It afforded the two counts an opportunity of placing their innocence in the clearest light, and furnished the world with the most convincing evidence of Philip's lawless tyranny and oppression.

**The charge
against
them.**

THE general charge against them was, that in conjunction with the prince of Orange they had formed a plan to abolish the king's authority in the Netherlands; and the proofs of this charge were, first, That by their contumelious treatment of cardinal Granvelle, they had obliged the king, contrary to his inclination, to remove that prelate from the Low Countries.

2. **THAT** they were privy to the confederacy which had been formed to oppose the introduction of the inquisition and edicts; and although count Egmont knew that the lord of Beckerzel had subscribed the compromise, he had still retained him in his service.

3. **THAT** they had met at Dendremonde, with the prince of Orange, count Lewis of Nassau, and several others, to deliberate about opposing the entrance of the king's army into the Netherlands. And,

4. **THAT**, instead of punishing heretics with due severity, they had in some places granted them liberty to hold open their assemblies.

**Their de-
fences.**

IN answer to these accusations, the two lords, after protesting that, as knights of the Golden Fleece, they could not be tried by any other judges but the knights of their order, began with declaring, that they had never entertained a thought to the prejudice of the king's authority; and that when they
urged

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

cardinal Granvelle from the Netherlands, and believed, and were still persuaded that his policy was equally calculated to promote the interests of the king and of the provinces. But the renewal of the confederacy, then the subject of concern in it, nor power sufficient to carry it. Count Egmont had conducted himself with fidelity of Beckerzel, after knowing the terms of the compromise, from a conviction that he was unshaken in his fidelity to his sovereign and king, of which that circumstance gave him the strongest proof. He exerted himself with great activity, in deterring the idolaters of the churches. He was present at a conference of the states, in which count Lewis of Nassau had proposed that they should unite their endeavours to the assistance of the Spanish troops, and that they should give up to that proposal, they had however opposed it. They had done so, not for want of power for the suppression of heresy, but for the diligent search for the means, and the destruction of them with great severity, and they had in some places granted the privilege to hold their religious assemblies, not done so because they could not resist, but because they represented the demolition of the churches, and other mischievous effects, which were the strongest reason to apprehend from the rage of the reformers. As the states had been guilty only of an error, and as they had lived, and would die in the defence of the catholic religion. And as they had not been wanting in their duty to the king, they had lately given incontrovertible evidence of their devotion to the king, by taking up arms for the dutchess of Parma's desire, as was to be seen.

VOL. I. Q

Book VIII.

1568.

the king in every thing; and to regard as enemies to the state, all those whom he should be pleased to condemn.

Intercessions
in their be-
half.

WHILE the prisoners offered these satisfactory reasons for their conduct, the most earnest solicitations were employed in their behalf.

THE emperor Maximilian, agreeably to the humanity of his character, interceded with Philip in their favour, and flattered himself so strongly with the hopes of success, that, a few days before their execution, he sent to inform the countess of Egmont, that her fears for her husband's life would, he now believed, be happily disappointed.

Letter of the
countess of
Egmont.

THE dutchess of Parma too, who had never suspected that the complaints which she had made against the prisoners during her regency, would have been attended with such serious consequences, transmitted to the king, and seconded a petition from the countess of Egmont; in which, after representing that her husband had distinguished himself above his equals, first in the service of the late emperor, and since in that of the king; and that he had often born a principal share in their wars and victories both in Europe and Africa; she concluded with intreating, that if, notwithstanding her husband's defence of his conduct, he should still be found obnoxious to justice; yet, on account of his former services, the king would remember him with mercy, and take into consideration the deplorable situation to which she, and her eleven helpless children, would be reduced, by the ignominious death of her husband.

BUT Philip, cursed with the most unfeeling heart, remained relentless and inflexible; and, conformably to his orders, Alva pronounced sentence of death both against count Egmont and
count

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

227

Book VIII.

count Horn, in the beginning of June one thousand five hundred and sixty-eight, after they had suffered near nine months imprisonment. The sentence was intimated to them in the middle of the night, when they were in bed, by the bishop of Ipres. They received the intelligence with becoming fortitude and resignation. "I am not conscious," said count Egmont, "of having deserved such hard usage from the king, whose glory and interest I have sincerely studied to promote. But I will submit to my fate with patience; although my heart bleeds when I think of my wife and children."

1568.

A FEW hours before his death he wrote to the king, "That although it had pleased him to order sentence of death to be pronounced against him as a traitor, and an abettor of heretics; yet in justice to himself he must declare, that he had never failed, in word or in deed, in his duty either to *him* or to the church. I cannot therefore doubt, continued he, that when you shall receive true information of what has passed in the Low Countries, you will be sensible how unjustly I have been used; having been condemned for doing what I never did or intended; and for the truth of this, I call Almighty God to witness, before whom I shall soon appear. My last and only request is, that on account of my former services, and the integrity of my intentions, you will take compassion on my unhappy wife and children; in the hopes of which I will patiently submit to the execution of the sentence which has been past against me."

Letter of
count Eg-
mont to
Philip.

June 5th,
1568.

BOTH prisoners had, a few days before, been brought from Ghent to Brussels. Count Egmont

The execu-
tion.

Q 2

was

BOOK VIII. was first conducted to the place of execution, with
 {
 #568. Julio Romero, camp marshal, on one hand, and the bishop of Ipres on the other. The scaffold was covered with black cloth, and surrounded by a strong guard, consisting of nineteen companies of soldiers. The count went up to the scaffold accompanied only by the bishop of Ipres; with whom, having discoursed some time, (on what subject we are not told) he kneeled down and prayed; then rose again, and throwing off his robe, he wrapped his head and face in a handkerchief, and again kneeling down, with his hands joined, he in that posture received the stroke of the executioner.

THE head and body, and the blood which flowed from them, were covered with a black cloth, to hide them from the view of count Horn; who was soon after brought thither, accompanied by the same attendants. Having ascended the scaffold, he inquired whether count Egmont was already beheaded; and being told that he was, "We have not seen one another," said he, "since the day when we were cast into prison. But from our fate, my friends," addressing himself to the spectators, "learn to know the measure of obedience required by your superiors. If I have ever offended any of you, I now ask forgiveness, and beseech you to assist me with your prayers." Then having disrobed himself, he submitted to his fate with perfect composure and tranquillity.

THE heads were set up opposite to each other, on two iron poles, fastened to the sides of the scaffold; where they remained till the afternoon, when they were taken down and delivered, together with the bodies, to the friends of the deceased*.

THE

* Strada.

THE unmerited death of these two great men excited universal grief and indignation. Nor could the spectators be deterred, by the numerous troops which surrounded them, from testifying their resentment. Many of them forgetting the danger to which they exposed themselves, rushed forward to the scaffold, dipt their handkerchiefs in the blood, and vowed, in the hearing of the Spaniards, that ere long the governor and his associates should have reason to repent of the cruel murder that had been committed ^{Book VIII.} 1568.

COUNT Egmont was forty-six years of age when he suffered. To the most splendid bodily accomplishments, he joined great gentleness of manners, and the most engaging affability. From his youth he had accompanied the late emperor in his military expeditions, and had on all occasions acquitted himself with the highest honour, while at the same time he rendered himself universally beloved. Of the two victories which Philip's armies gained over the French at St. Quintin and Gravelines, it is allowed that the one was owing in a great measure, and the other entirely, to count Egmont. As all men were acquainted with the advantages which Philip derived from these victories, they were shocked at the ungrateful return which he now made to the person by whose valour and conduct they had been obtained ^{Character of count Egmont.} 2.

AFTER this dismal catastrophe, Alva having nothing to prevent him from turning his whole attention ^{Alva marches against count Lewis,}

3 Bentivoglio.

4 At the same time that what is above related was transacted at Brussels, orders were given at Madrid for putting to death the baron of Montigny, brother to count Horn, who had been sent by the dutchess of Parma along with the marquis of Mons (who died some months before) to present the petition of the confederates. Bentivoglio.

Book VIII.

1568.

tention to the war with count Lewis of Nassau, ordered bridges to be thrown over the Maese, the Rhine, and the Issel, and marched directly to the enemy. He reached Deventer, where he had given orders for several bodies of troops to meet him about the middle of July; and in a few days after, he arrived with his whole army, consisting of twelve thousand foot and three thousand horse, in sight of the enemy's camp.

THE army of count Lewis being much inferior both in discipline and number, that general quickly perceived the necessity of quitting his present situation. He retired, however, in good order, and with very little loss, till he arrived at the town of Gemmingen, where he pitched his camp in a place that appeared almost impregnable. Behind him lay the village of Gemmingen; on his left, the river Ems, by which he could be supplied with provisions from Embden, and other places; and on his right, a plain which he fortified with trenches and redoubts: but that which formed the chief strength of his situation was, that the enemy could not approach him but by marching in defile along the dyke of the river. This dyke was ten miles in length, with the river on the one side, and a morass on the other. Having planted a battery of cannon upon it, Lewis intended to open the dyke and lay the morass under water. And in this encampment, he hoped it would not be difficult for him to keep the enemy at bay, till his brother should begin his operations; when he did not doubt that the duke of Alva would find it necessary to retire.

and defeats
him,

ALVA was aware of Lewis's intention, and of the danger with which any considerable delay must be attended. With the utmost expedition he brought forward his best veteran troops,
and

arrived at the very time when the Flem-^{ish} were beginning to break down the duke ¹⁵⁹⁴ at Lewis and the other nobles were themselves employed at the work. When the enemy ¹⁵⁹⁴ were, they besook themselves ¹⁵⁹⁴ to arms, they were soon obliged to yield to the superior force of the Spaniards, and to retire before the battery above mentioned.

Here Lewis tried to maintain his ground by the help of artillery; but the Germans in his army, a number of seven thousand, having been disappointed of their pay for some weeks, and being that Lewis had money in his possession, which he had delayed giving them from his dread of their desertion, resolved to embrace the first opportunity to exert from him a compliance with their demands. They rose tumultuously, and threatened that they would not fight unless he immediately paid their arrears. Instantly

some of this faction was carried by spies or letters to the duke of Alva, who perceived now was the time to make an attempt upon the battery. He ordered a part of his army to cut the morass through which, as it was the wettest season, and Lewis had been disappointed in his design of laying the ground under water, Spaniards found their way easier than they expected. They arrived in time to attack the army in flank, whilst the rest of the army, without shrinking, marched up to the battery in front, made a furious assault upon it sword in hand.

Flemish exiles, with count Lewis at their head, defended themselves for some time with great bravery; but being defeated by the Germans, they were at length compelled to retreat. Spaniards entered the camp along with them.

Germans, overwhelmed with terror, made no resistance, and, as a just punishment of their treason at so critical a period, great numbers of them

Book VIII.

1568.

them were put to the sword. Almost as many were swallowed up in attempting to swim across the river, as fell by the hands of the enemy. On the side of the Spaniards only eighty men were killed; but of the Germans and the Flemish exiles, between six and seven thousand perished, including those who were drowned in the river. Count Lewis, after having attempted in vain to rally his scattered troops, escaped in a small boat to the opposite side of the river; and soon afterwards set out with the earl of Hoogstraten for Germany, to join the prince of Orange ^a.

THE duke of Alva went from the field of battle to the city of Groningen, and from thence to Utrecht and Amsterdam; carrying on inquiries in these places against the protestants, and punishing with rigour all who were suspected to have been concerned in the late disorders. He would gladly have spent more time in this employment, so agreeable to the native cruelty of his disposition; but he was informed that the prince of Orange had begun to put his troops in motion, and was upon his march from Treves to the province of Guelderland, or Brabant.

BEFORE William left Germany he published a manifesto, in which he explained the motives which induced him to have recourse to arms. "There was no other expedient left," he said, "by which he could save his countrymen from slavery and ruin; and to attempt this, he thought, was the indispensable duty of every citizen; especially of one who, like him, had enjoyed the highest dignities of the state. The king, he hoped, would ere long be delivered from those Spanish counsellors by whom he had been led

^a Strada, Bentivoglio, and Grimestone's General History of the Netherlands.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

ay; but, in the mean time, he did not ~~not~~ ¹⁵⁶⁸
incumbent upon any inhabitant of the
countries to yield obedience to the king
radiation to the laws. For Philip did not
ie same unlimited authority in the Ne-
ls, as in his other dominions. His right
lience subsisted only whilst he maintained
hts of the people; and, by the constitu-
f the provinces, it was expressly provid-
t if the sovereign should attempt to vio-
y of the fundamental laws, the people
in that case be absolved from their alle-

this manifesto the prince thought proper
ke it known, that he had changed his
ents in religion; and was now conform-
ie opinions of the protestants were more
mable than those of the Romish church.
great rule of Christian faith, the sacred
gs.

LIAM's army, including horse and foot, ~~was~~
not exceed twenty thousand, and the ~~army~~
za's, after being joined by a reinforcement
he received at this time from Spain, was
in number, and much better furnished
military stores and provisions. The prince
ensible of the great disadvantage under
he laboured in this respect; but from the
ing invitations which he received from many
principal inhabitants in the Netherlands,
from the repeated representations which were
to him of the universal hatred with which
people were animated against the government,
oped that, as soon as his army should be
there would be an insurrection in his fa-
or that some of the principal cities would
their gates to receive him.

Book VIII.

1568.
Alva in
vain opposes
his passage
over the
Maese.

HE passed the Rhine without opposition in the end of August, a little above Cologne; and then turning to the left, he advanced towards Aix-la-Chapelle. About this time the duke of Alva arrived at Maestricht. The prince directed his march first towards Liege; but being disappointed in the hopes which he had conceived, of that city declaring in his favour, he turned his course northwards, with an intention to pass the Maese wherever he should find it fordable. Alva's whole attention was employed to prevent him from putting his design in execution, and with this view he planted strong guards along the banks of the river, and kept his army as nearly opposite as possible to the enemy.

At last, however, after several marches and countermarches, William effected his passage in the night, opposite to a town called Stochem, where the duke believed it to have been impracticable. But the season had been remarkably dry; and the prince on this occasion imitated the conduct of Julius Cæsar in his passage of the Ligeris, by placing his cavalry a little above the ford, to break the force of the stream.

WHEN Alva was informed next morning of what had happened, he could not at first believe it, and scornfully asked the officer who brought the intelligence, Whether he imagined that the enemy had wings?

THE prince of Orange endeavoured to persuade his troops, as soon as they had crossed the river, to march directly against the Spaniards; who, had this request been complied with, would have been found very ill-prepared for defence; but the Germans, who, unfortunately for themselves, as well as for the cause in which they were engaged, never yielded due obedience

to their commander, refused to advance till they should have a night's rest. and thereby
lost the only opportunity which the Duke of Burgundy
ever gave them, of compelling him to fight.

On the next day, when they were led forward to the Spanish camp in the battle they found it so strongly fortified with entrenchments and redoubts, that no assault could be made upon it with the smallest probability of success. Chiappino Vitelli, an officer of high reputation, was of opinion, that the Duke ought not to have declined an engagement, as the enemy were fatigued with their passage of the river, and had not yet made choice of a proper place for their camp, to which they could retire after battle, besides, that it was of the highest consequence, he imagined, to give an easy retreat to their presumption, in order to prevent the fortified towns from declaring in their favour.

But Alva had already formed his plan, to which he was unalterably determined to adhere. He considered that he had a great deal more at stake than the price of Orange: and that a defeat would be attended not only with the loss of his army, but the greatest part of the provinces. He was acquainted too with the narrowness of William's finances, and knew that he must encounter the most insurmountable difficulties in supporting so numerous an army for any considerable time; especially as the winter season was fast approaching, when, unless he should get possession of some of the great towns, it would be impossible for him to remain in the Netherlands.

WITH this view, as he suspected that the ^{His protest} prince intended to lead his army into Brabant, ^{could not} he strengthened the garrisons of Tillemont, Louvain,

Book VIII.

1568.

vain, and Bruffels; and when William directed his march towards Tongres, the duke drew his troops so near that town, as made it impossible for the enemy to approach. Whichever way the prince of Orange turned his course, the duke of Alva accompanied him; marching sometimes behind, and sometimes on his flank; always straitening his quarters, and rendering it difficult for him to furnish his army with forage and provisions; while he intrenched his own forces with so much skill, that the prince fought in vain for an opportunity of bringing on an engagement.

Skirmishes.

In this situation frequent skirmishes between the two armies were unavoidable, and in these the advantage fell sometimes on the one side and sometimes on the other; but each commander made such judicious movements, chose his ground with so much skill, and exerted such an equal degree of vigilance and attention, as effectually prevented his antagonist from obtaining any considerable advantage over him.

THE only success which the duke of Alva could boast of, was at the river Geete; where, having attacked the rear-guard of the enemy's army, he killed some, and put the rest to flight.

THE prince of Orange had the same ground of triumph in an action at Quesnoy; where, having come up with a detachment consisting of ten companies of German catholics, eight of Spaniards, and three troops of light-armed infantry, he put them to route, and took ample vengeance for the loss he had sustained at Geete ^b.

HE was on his march at that time to meet the Sieur de Genlis, who had been sent to him by the prince of Conde, with a reinforcement of

^b Thuanus.

of troops; which fully compensated all his losses in Brabant.

BOOK VIII.

1568.

BUT the causes already mentioned began to operate. The prince had been cruelly disappointed of the greatest part of the money which had been promised him. The dread which the Flemings entertained of the Spanish forces, and the prudent precautions which had been taken by the duke of Alva, had prevented William's friends from making any effort in his behalf. His army had been often pinched for provisions. They now despaired of getting possession of any of the great towns, and they trembled at the thoughts of passing the winter in the open fields. The Germans began to desert in great numbers, and had often, before this time, shewn themselves refractory and disobedient. For these reasons, the prince found it necessary to disband them; after having given them all the satisfaction in his power, by paying a part of their arrears, and giving security to their leaders for the rest on his lordship of Montfort and the principality of Orange.

The prince is obliged to disband his army.

AFTER these disasters, the prince, accompanied by his brother count Lewis, went to France, and conducted thither between a thousand and twelve hundred horse, to the assistance of the Calvinists.

SUCH was the conclusion of the first attempt which the prince of Orange and his brother made, to deliver the Netherlands from the Spanish yoke. It must occur to every reader, that if they had begun their operations and entered the provinces at the same time, the issue of their enterprise would probably have been extremely different. The duke of Alva would, in that case, have been obliged to divide his forces, and have probably

* Thuanus Meursii, Albanus, p. 19. Meteren, p. 79.

BOOK VIII. bably been overpowered by numbers. But unfortunately count Lewis, who was more expeditious in making his levies than the prince of Orange, did not possess a fund sufficient to maintain them without employment, and was obliged to enter upon action before his brother was prepared to support him. And to the same cause may be ascribed both the prince's delay in putting his troops in motion, and the necessity to which he was reduced of breaking up his camp.

1568.

THE
H I S T O R Y
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

B O O K IX.

P A R T I.

WHILE Philip's bigotry, joined to his despotic and arbitrary conduct, had engaged him in war with his subjects in the Netherlands, the same causes produced a similar effect in the province of Granada; where the Moors, who had long yielded a tame submission to the crown of Spain, were provoked by the tyranny of the present government, to throw off their allegiance, and have recourse to arms. This people, who, during several centuries, had maintained possession of the greatest part of Spain, were at last totally subdued by Ferdinand the catholic, in the year one thousand four hundred and ninety-two. But although their government was abolished at that time, the people themselves remained; and were permitted to enjoy not only their

Book IX.

1568.
The war in
Granada.

History of
the Moriscoes.

BOOK IX. ^{1568.} their possessions, dress, and customs, but even their religion, as in the time of their native kings. And the politic Ferdinand scrupled not to swear solemnly, to observe this condition, in hopes of being able afterwards to devise some efficacious means of reconciling them to the Christian faith.

BEING disappointed in his expectation, and finding, after a trial of several years, that the instructions of his priests were not likely to prove effectual; he resolved, without regard to the oath which he had sworn, to employ force in order to accomplish his design. He pretended, that the citizens of Granada had forfeited their title to his fulfilment of the terms of peace, by an insurrection, into which some of them had been betrayed through the violent administration of cardinal Ximenes; and, on this pretence, he ordered sentence of death to be pronounced against them, and declared, that unless they would renounce their religion, it should be instantly carried into execution. By this expedient he compelled fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the city of Granada, most of whom had no concern in the insurrection, to profess themselves converts to Christianity. The inhabitants of the country, and of the smaller towns, being highly exasperated by the violent treatment of their countrymen, and dreading that they themselves would quickly experience the same injustice, began to prepare for resistance. But before they had time to put themselves in a posture of defence, Ferdinand, who was no less provident and active, than false and faithless, came upon them with a numerous army, and after taking one of their towns, of which he put all the inhabitants to the sword, he soon obliged the rest to lay down their arms. Upon their paying him a sum of money, he permitted a certain number to transport themselves to Africa. But the greater
part

part were compelled to remain in the kingdom, and to submit to be baptized. They were still however strongly attached to the Mahometan superstition, and although they generally conformed to the rites of the Romish church, they could not on every occasion conceal their attachment. The inquisitors were perpetually prying into their conduct; great numbers of them were condemned and burnt as heretics; and many thousands, dreading the like fate, fled over to Barbary.

Book IX.
1568.

REPRESENTATIONS were often transmitted to court of the desolation that was thus produced; but these representations either did not reach the ear of Ferdinand, or they were disregarded. No remedy was ever applied, and the inquisitors continued to exercise without controul their wonted cruelty and oppression.

DURING the latter part of the reign of Ferdinand, and the whole of that of Charles, the Moors are seldom mentioned by the Spanish historians; nor do these writers give us any other information concerning them for half a century, than that they still retained their ancient aversion to the Christian faith. But the ecclesiastics, soon after Philip's arrival in Spain, taking encouragement from that bigoted zeal with which they knew their prince to be so strongly actuated, revived their old complaints against that unhappy people, and made repeated representations of their obstinate and incurable infidelity.

"THEY are Christians," said Guerrero, archbishop of Granada, "in name only, but Mahometans in their hearts. They come to hear mass on festival days, only in order to avoid the penalties which they would otherwise incur. They work on these days with their doors shut, and feast and carouse on Fridays. They present their children to

Book IX.

1568.

be baptized ; but no sooner do they reach their own houses, than they wash them with warm water, circumcise them, and give them Moorish names. They consent to be married in the churches, because the law requires it ; but when they return home, they clothe themselves in a Moorish dress, and celebrate their nuptials with dances, songs, and other species of music which are in use only among the Moors."

THIS representation was well calculated to make impression on the superstitious spirit of the king. But the archbishop knew, that political considerations were likely to have as much weight with him as those of a religious nature ; and therefore he subjoined, " That the Morecoes held a treasonable correspondence with the Turks and Corsairs, and were in the practice of carrying off the children of Christians, and either selling them for slaves, or sending them to Barbary, where they were brought up in the religion of Mahomet." Whether there was any truth in the latter part of this accusation, does not appear with convincing evidence ; but, considering the near affinity between the Morecoes and the African Moors in respect of religion, manners, language, and descent, together with their alienation from the Spanish government, which the cruelties exercised against them by the inquisition, and their exclusion from all offices of trust, must have carried to the greatest height, it is not surprising that Philip's apprehensions were alarmed, and that he thought it necessary to make provision against the danger which seemed to threaten him.

Philip dis-
arms them.

HIS first step was to strip the Morecoes of their arms ; and for this purpose he sent, on different pretences, several regiments of Castilians to quarter among them, by whom a great quantity of arms of all kinds were seized ; but as their suspicions were perpetually awake, they had penetrated his

his design, and concealed a considerable quantity ^{Book IX.}

1568.

THIS discovery of Philip's disposition towards them served to alienate their affections more than ever from his government, and at the same time encouraged the inquisitors to multiply their complaints, and to urge at court the necessity of employing more efficacious measures than had hitherto been adopted. The king himself was far from being averse to comply with the violent counsels that were given him; and when upon consulting a theologian of the name of Oraduy, that ecclesiastic, in the true spirit of a Spanish inquisitor, quoted to him the proverb, that "of enemies, the fewer, the better." Philip was highly pleased with his reply.

HAVING therefore resolved, if possible, to extirpate from his dominions the private as well as the public exercise of Mahometanism, and to wash it out with the blood of its votaries, rather than suffer it to remain, he appointed a select number of ecclesiastics to consider of the proper means by which his design might be accomplished; and agreeably to the advice of these men he soon afterwards published an edict which contained the following prohibitions, and denounced death in case of disobedience: "That henceforth the Moreos shall lay aside their native language, dress, and peculiar customs, and in future adopt those of the inhabitants of Castile. That they shall no longer take Moorish names or surnames, but such as are generally used in Spain. That they shall bear none of those symbols about them by which the disciples of Mahomet are distinguished. That they shall discontinue the use of their baths, which shall be immediately destroyed. That their women shall

R 2

not,

^a Ferreras, ann. 1562.

not, as hitherto, appear in veils; that no persons shall marry without a dispensation from the ordinary; that none shall remove from one place to another without permission; and that they shall on no occasion wear arms, or keep them in their possession."

THE exercise of the Mahometan religion having been prohibited under the severest penalties by former princes, no mention was made of it in the edict; but the Moreoscoes readily perceived the design and tendency of the present regulations, and considered, that as they must render the secret practice of their religion infinitely more difficult than formerly, they must infallibly prove ere long the cause of its extirpation. Even although they had not been apprehensive of any such serious consequence, it could not be expected they would tamely submit to those affronting rules which were now prescribed them. Men are often more powerfully attached to the external forms and modes of life, than to things that are the most essential to their happiness. With this attachment the zeal of the Moreoscoes for their religion coincided. Their resentment, on account of the innumerable cruelties which had been so long exercised against them by the inquisition, added force to these incentives, and prompted them to resolve to expose themselves to the last extremities, rather than yield obedience to the edict that was now promulgated. But as they were conscious of their weakness, and could not depend upon receiving assistance from any foreign power, they agreed, before they should take up arms, to make trial, whether they could by solicitation and intreaty persuade the king to revoke his edict.

"THEIR dress," they represented, "had surely no relation to any religion, whether the Mahometan

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

245

Book IX.

1568.

or the Christian, since the Mahometans in Morocco, Fez, Tunis, and Turkey, dressed very differently from one another; while the dress of the Christians in Turkey was the same as that of the Turks: and to require them all to purchase Castilian habits would subject great numbers of them to an expence which they were unable to defray. It was from modesty alone their women wore veils; a practice which obtained in many places of Castile, as well as in Granada. Their music and dances were used on days of festivity, only as amusements; they had not the most remote connection with religion, and they had been regarded as innocent by prelates the most distinguished for their sanctity and zeal.

“THEIR baths were used for the purpose of cleanliness only; those of the men were separate from those of the women; and it was not in the power of those Christians to whom the care of them was committed, to allege, that either the former or the latter had been ever applied to any use repugnant either to decency or the catholic religion. And with regard to their language, as it was difficult to conceive how the Arabic could contain any thing contrary to Christianity, so it was utterly impossible for them at once to lay aside the use of it, since great numbers among them were too far advanced in life to be able to learn a new language; and in several parts of the country there was no other tongue spoken but the Arabic, nor any means established by which the Castilian could be acquired.” They concluded with professions of loyalty to the king, and with reminding him, that in his foreign wars they had given him many proofs of their attachment and fidelity.

THE Morescoes had not access, it should seem, to deliver this remonstrance to Philip himself; but it was presented to him by Deza the chancellor of Granada,

Book IX. Granada, who was seconded by Don John Henriquez, Don Antonio de Toledo, the prior of Leon, and the marquis of Mondejar, captain general of the province. This last mentioned nobleman spared no pains to divert Philip from his purpose, by representing, that from his knowledge of the Morefcoes he was convinced, that an open rebellion would be the consequence of carrying the edict into execution. But the king having formed his resolution in consequence of mature deliberation, and by the advice of such counsellors as he most esteemed, lent a deaf ear to all the representations that were made to him, and gave orders to Mondejar immediately to set out for Granada, in order to make preparations for employing force in case he should find it necessary.

THE Morefcoes were no sooner informed of the ill success of their petition, than they began to meditate a revolt; and the leading men among them having met privately in Cadiar, a town situated in the entrance of the mountains of Alpuxara, they dispatched ambassadors to Fez, Algiers, and Constantinople, to solicit assistance; and at the same time spread their emissaries over the province, in order to prepare the minds of the inhabitants.

THE people almost every where, except in those places where they were overawed by the Spanish garrison, obeyed with alacrity the invitation which they received to assert their liberty; and in a little time the whole region of Alpuxara, which contains a space of seventeen leagues in length and ten in breadth, comprehending many villages and many thousand inhabitants, was up in arms. A reinforcement of several hundred Turks, besides a quantity of military stores, arrived from Africa, and the Morefcoes flattered themselves with the hopes that much more powerful assistance would ere long be sent them by the Sultan ^b.

THEIR

^b Their king.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

247

Book IX.

1568.

THEIR leaders in the mean time held another assembly, in which they elected for their king Don Ferdinand de Valor, a young man of four or five and twenty, descended from their ancient princes, and in some measure qualified, by his intrepid courage and activity, for the dangerous pre-eminence to which he was now exalted. Having assumed the name of *Aben-Hurneya*, which had been that of his progenitors, he was invested with the ensigns of royalty, with all the forms and ceremonies which were anciently practised at the election of the Moorish kings. He then entered upon the exercise of his new authority, appointed his ministers and officers, and sent orders to all the chiefs who were not present in the assembly, to hold themselves ready to act on the shortest notice.

HIS first and principal object was to get possession of the city of Granada, in which he doubted not of being able to defend himself till the Turkish succours should arrive. Nor was it without some reason that he entertained hopes of succeeding in an attempt on this important city. His party had hitherto concealed their machinations with the most profound and faithful secrecy. Their several meetings had been held on pretences which deceived the penetration of the Spaniards, and their military preparations had been carried on chiefly among the mountains of *Alpuxara*. The marquis of *Mondejar*, indeed, notwithstanding these precautions, had conceived a suspicion of their designs, and had represented to Philip the necessity of sending him a much more powerful army than was at present under his command. But there subsisted at this time a violent jealousy between that nobleman and *Deza* the chancellor, which arose from a competition concerning the rights of their respective offices. *Deza*, prompted by his animosity against the marquis, endeavoured to discredit his account
of

Book IX. of the hostile intentions of the Moors, and to
 1568. persuade the king that there was in reality no danger of a revolt, and that the edict lately published might be sufficiently enforced by a vigorous exercise of the civil power alone; but that Mondejar was desirous that a war should be kindled, because he expected that the whole administration of it would be committed to himself, and the count of Tendilla his son.

PHILIP, though naturally provident and suspicious, and more inclined to fear than hope, was by his counsellors, who were Deza's friends, led to believe his representation of the matter, rather than that of the marquis. And thus the march of the troops for which Mondejar had applied was delayed, and the garrison of Granada suffered to continue so weak, that had it not been for an accident which could not be foreseen, that city would have fallen into the hands of the Morecoes. Aben-Humeya having held a secret correspondence with the inhabitants of the town of Albaicin, which communicates with the city of Granada, and may be considered as a part of it, gave orders about the end of December to Aben-Farax, one of his principal officers, to march thither with a body of between six and seven thousand men. Had these troops reached Albaicin at the time expected, the inhabitants would have joined them, and thereby have made up an army by which the garrison must have been overpowered, but by a fall of snow upon a neighbouring mountain, over which they were obliged to pass, they were all prevented from advancing except about one hundred and fifty. With these Aben-Farax himself entered Albaicin in the middle of the night; and if he could have prevailed upon the inhabitants to take arms and join him, he might still have made himself master of the town; but though well affected to his cause, they were deterred from declaring in
 his

in favour by observing how small a number of ^{Book IX.} troops he had brought along with him; so that after having continued in the place for some hours, ^{1568.} he was obliged, before the approach of day, to make his escape to the mountain where his army had been stopt. Philip's eyes were then opened, with regard to the contradictory informations which he had received, and he immediately issued orders for the march of those troops for which the marquis of Mondejar had applied.

ABEN-HUMEYA in the mean time was employed fortifying the narrow passes which led into the country of Alpuxara: after which he, with one body of troops, and Aben-Farax with another, went from place to place, exhorting or compelling the Moreos to revolt; destroying the altars and images in the churches, which they converted into mosques; and putting to death, in the most barbarous manner, all the priests and other Christians who refused to embrace the Mahometan religion.

In order to check their progress, the marquis of Mondejar set out from Granada as soon as he had collected a sufficient number of troops for his intended enterprise. The Moreos disputed with him for some time the entrance into the mountains; but they were unable to withstand long the bold intrepid efforts of the Spanish infantry. Mondejar triumphed over them at every pass; put many of them to the sword; took a great number of prisoners, and at last obliged Aben-Humeya to fly with the shattered remains of his army, to the more inaccessible parts of the mountains. In a few months almost the whole region of Alpuxara was subdued. The people, being every where intimidated by the rapidity of Mondejar's progress, laid down their arms, and either came to him in numerous bodies, or sent deputies, to sue for peace. This

BOOK IX. This he readily granted, on condition of their yielding obedience in future to the king's authority; and he at the same time gave them protection against (what they had but too much reason to dread) the rapine and violence of the Spanish soldiers. The marquis De los Velez, who commanded a body of troops in the neighbourhood of Almeria, was no less successful in dislodging the Moreos from some strong holds near the sea-coasts, where they had fortified themselves with a view to favour the descent of the Moors and Turks. And now the marquis of Mondejar, believing the war to be almost entirely extinguished, and that Aben-Humeya must either soon surrender or make his escape out of the kingdom, sent intelligence of his success to Philip, and desired that a part of the troops might be recalled. He at the same time recommended the treating gently both such of the Moreos as had submitted, and such of them as had been taken prisoners. But unfortunately this nobleman's enemies at court had much greater influence than his friends; and Philip was of himself much more inclined to harshness and severity, than to lenity and mercy. Without regard to Mondejar's representations, a royal mandate was immediately dispatched, commanding all the prisoners above eleven years of age, without distinction of sex or condition, to be sold for slaves^b.

THIS barbarous treatment of their countrymen revived in the minds of such of the Moreos as had submitted, all their wonted abhorrence of the Spanish yoke; and soon afterwards they themselves were treated with equal inhumanity.

WHETHER

^b The effect of this barbarous treatment, says a Spanish historian (Ferreras), was, that great numbers of the Moreos women languished in slavery for a little time, and then sunk under their calamities.

WHETHER Philip's exchequer was in reality drained at this time by his late expensive armaments in the Mediterranean, and his war in the Netherlands, or whether his ministers only pretended this to be the case, in order to gratify their malignity against Mondejar, does not sufficiently appear; but whatever was the cause, the arrears due to the troops were so great, that the marquis of Mondejar was unable to discharge them. The usual consequence of the ill-payment of an army quickly followed. The general lost his authority, and the soldiers, and several of the officers, deserted their stations, and spread themselves over the country; plundering, and even butchering and carrying off into slavery great numbers of those Morescoes for whose security he had pledged his faith. Mondejar seems to have exerted himself strenuously to put a stop to these enormities, by sending out such of his troops as he could trust, to restrain or chastise the delinquents. But his endeavours were in a great measure fruitless. The Spaniards still continued to embrace every opportunity of indulging their rapacity; and afterwards left their standards, and went off to the neighbouring provinces with their prey.

THE Morescoes, highly exasperated by the multiplied oppressions which they suffered, repented of their late submission; and, being now convinced that there was no safety in trusting to any treaty with an enemy so cruel and perfidious, they resumed their arms, took ample vengeance on scattered parties of the Spaniards, whom they surprised among the mountains, and again arranged themselves under the banners of their king. It happened about this time, that Aben-Humeya received from Africa a reinforcement of four hundred Turks; who, it was pretended, were soon to be followed

Book IX.
1568.

Book IX. followed by a powerful fleet and army. And thus
 1568. the Moreſcoes were determined, partly by hope,
 and partly by vengeance and deſpair, to make a
 ſecond trial of the fortune of war; the calamities
 attending which, they thought, could not exceed
 thoſe which they had lately experienced in the time
 of peace.

THE cauſes of this ſecond revolt were very differently interpreted by the marquis of Mondejar's enemies and friends. By the former it was ſaid, "that this nobleman had erred egregiouſly, both in his manner of conducting the war, and in his treatment of the rebels, when they laid down their arms. For it was abſurd to expect that an enemy ſo treacherous as the Moreſcoes, would regard their engagements any longer than they found it neceſſary; and no leſs abſurd to hope that ſuch obſtinate infidels would ever be ſincere converts to the Chriſtian faith. Their late ſacrilege, and the barbarous cruelties which they had exerciſed againſt the prieſts, and other Chriſtians, had called aloud for vengeance; and juſtice, as well as ſound policy, had required, that they ſhould all have been put to the ſword, or ſold for ſlaves."

BUT the marquis, on the other hand, and his adherents, repreſented, That this deluded people had been chaſtiſed with ſufficient ſeverity, for enormities into which their leaders had betrayed them. That humanity, and a regard to the intereſt of the king, had prevented him from ſacrificing to revenge, the lives of ſo many thouſand uſeful ſubjects, moſt of whom were innocent of the crimes that had been committed; and by whoſe deſtruction ſo great a part of the kingdom would have been rendered deſolate: beſides, that there was no reaſon to believe that the Moreſcoes would have violated their faith, if the troops could have been kept under proper diſcipline; which he had found it impoſſible to maintain, partly through the negligence
 of

of some of the king's ministers in making remittances for their pay; and partly through the pains which some persons in power had taken to ruin his authority.

Book IX.
1568.

BETWEEN these contradictory representations Philip was at a loss to determine what measures to pursue. But at last, either because he himself, and most of his counsellors, disapproved of Mondejar's lenity in so easily receiving the Morescoes into favour, or because he did not incline to subject that nobleman's enemies to the mortification of seeing him still continued in the supreme command, he resolved to bestow it upon his natural brother Don John of Austria.

Don John
of Austria
commander
in chief.

THIS young prince, whose mother was a German, of the name of Blomberg, a native of Ratibon, had been educated privately by Lewis Quixada, lord of Villagarcia; for whose son he had passed, till Philip's arrival in Spain in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-nine. Soon after this, Philip having, agreeably to his father's request, acknowledged Don John for his brother; had appointed him a household suitable to his rank, and bestowed the same attention on his education as on that of his own son.

RESEMBLING his father in the gracefulness of his person, and in the courteousness of his manners, Don John discovered, from his youth, the love of arms; and gave many conspicuous proofs of those accomplishments by which he became afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age.

BUT as at this time he was only about twenty-two years old, and did not possess any military experience, Philip, although he conferred upon him the title of commander in chief, forbade him to take the command of the troops into his own hands, and required,

* Strada, ann. 1578.

Book IX. required, that in the whole management of the war he should conform to the opinion of certain counsellors whom he appointed to assist him. These were, the archbishop of Granada, Deza the president of the chancery, the duke de Sessa, the marquis of Mondejar, and Don Lewis de Requesens, the grand commendator of Castile, whom he named for Don John's lieutenant.

1568.

THE war was now prosecuted in different quarters at the same time, and a greater number of troops employed than formerly. But the success was not answerable to the expectations that had been formed. The Morescoes discovered on many occasions that they were not destitute of valour, and in some rencounters they came off victorious.

The Morescoes are entirely subdued.

DON JOHN, in the mean time, grown extremely impatient under the restraints which had been imposed on him, endeavoured to persuade the king to permit him to command the forces in person; and he at length obtained his request. After which, having got his army reinforced, he himself marched against the Morescoes on one side, while Requesens and the marquis De los Velez attacked them on another. But the Morescoes, undisciplined, incompletely armed, and disheartened by the disappointment of their hopes of assistance from the Turks and Moors, were not a match for such numerous regular forces as were now employed to reduce them, and their ruin was hastened by the dissensions of some of their leaders, and the treachery of others. Aben-Humeya was privately murdered by the friends of his wife, whose father he had put to death on account of his secret practices with the Spaniards. Another chief, called Aben-Aboo, was elected king in his stead; and *he* too suffered the same fate, from the hands of some of his officers, who hoped by this sacrifice to atone for their

their rebellion. With the death of this leader, the war, which had lasted almost two years, was concluded ^{Book IX.} _{1568.} ^{d.}

NEITHER Don John nor Requesens acquired any glory by their conduct in this war; nor did they preserve themselves free from that imputation of inhumanity and implacable revenge, which in this age was generally cast upon the Spaniards.

No other apology can be offered for the dreadful severities which they exercised, but that their conduct was conformable to the instructions given them by the king. For Philip had disapproved of the lenity with which the Morescoes had been treated by the marquis of Mondejar, and, while he listened only to the voice of superstition or resentment, forgot what every wise king will regard as the most sacred maxim of his policy, that the strength and glory of a prince depend on the number and prosperity of his subjects.

BUT this bigoted monarch set no bounds to his abhorrence of those who deviated, or whom he suspected of deviating, from the catholic faith. Agreeably to his instructions, great numbers of the Morescoes living peaceably in the plains of Granada, were, upon suspicion of their corresponding with the insurgents, put to death. All the inhabitants of some villages and districts, men, women, and children, were extirpated. All the prisoners of both sexes were either executed or deprived of their liberty. And of those Morescoes who had refused to join in the rebellion, all but a few, without whom certain manufactures could not be carried

^d In describing this war, the Spanish historians have descended to the most minute detail. But amidst the endless multiplicity of little events and incidents which they relate, there is almost no variety, and no display either of courage or conduct that can interest a reader in the perusal. This part of the Spanish history is besides rendered peculiarly disgusting by the numerous scenes of barbarous cruelty which it presents.

ried on, were torn from their native homes, and transported into the interior provinces; where they were exposed to the injuries and insults of a haughty people, and many of them by their poverty reduced to a state of dependence on the Castilians, which differed little from the condition of such of their countrymen as had been sold for slaves.

SUCH was the conclusion of this war: during which, notwithstanding the great disparity between the contending parties, Philip was exposed to greater danger than at any other period of his reign. Had the Morescoes made themselves masters of the city of Granada, in their attempt on which they failed more through chance and accident, than misconduct or the want of strength; or had they prevailed with Selim the Turkish emperor, to interest himself in their behalf; several towns in Andalusia, and almost the whole kingdom of Valentia, which was mostly inhabited by Morescoes, would have joined in the revolt; and, in that case, so great an army might have been raised, as, with the assistance of the Moors in Barbary, would have furnished employment for many years to all the forces which the king, who was at the same time engaged in war with his subjects in the Netherlands, could have collected to oppose them.

BUT fortunately for Philip, and perhaps for Christendom, the Sultan, was at this time intent upon prosecuting the war of Cyprus against the Venetians, and from that war he could not be diverted, although Mahomet, his grand Visier, and the wisest of all his courtiers, advised him earnestly to suspend the prosecution of it, and not to neglect the present happy opportunity of turning his arms against the king of Spain^e.

^e Thuanus, lib. xlviii. Ferreras, ann. 1568-9-70. Cabrera, lib. viii.

P A R T II.

IT was not long before Selim had reason to be sorry that he had not listened to this advice, as Philip had no sooner completed the reduction of the Moreoscoes, than he entered into an alliance against him with the republic of Venice, the pope and several others of the Italian states and princes. The papal throne was filled at this time by the celebrated Pius the Fifth, who by his merit had raised himself from obscurity to the popedom, and though strongly tinctured with some of the vices which characterised the ecclesiastics of that age, was endued with certain royal virtues which rendered him worthy of the exalted station to which he had been advanced. Having been solicited by the Venetians, to employ his influence to procure assistance from the christian princes against the Sultan, who in the time of peace, and in violation of a solemn treaty, had invaded the isle of Cyprus, Pius readily consented to their request, and, with a zeal becoming the head of the church, espoused their cause.

Book IX.
1571.
War with
the Turks.

His application however to most of the European monarchs was without effect. For besides that the season of crusades was now over, and that the most superstitious princes were, in that age, governed more by political views than religious zeal, he found almost all of them unable to grant the assistance which he solicited. The emperor Maximilian had lately concluded a truce with the Sultan, which it was greatly his interest to maintain. The attention of the French king, who had been long in alliance with the Porte, was ingrossed by those inveterate factions into

VOL. I.

S

which

BOOK IX. which his kingdom was divided. Sebastian, king
 1571. of Portugal, was too young; and Sigismund of
 Poland too much worn out with the infirmities of
 age to engage in any foreign enterprize. Philip
 was the only great prince in Europe with whom
 Pius had reason to expect success in his present ap-
 plication. That monarch's zeal, as well as his
 power, was greater than that of any other Eu-
 ropean prince, and from the situation of his do-
 minions, and the enmity which had long subsisted
 between him and the Turkish Sultans, he had no
 less reason to dread the increase of the Ottoman
 power, than either the pope or the Venetians.

Philip's
 league with
 the pope and
 the Vene-
 tians.

WITHOUT hesitation therefore he resolved to
 comply with the request that was now made to
 him, and readily entered into an alliance, by
 which he bound himself to pay one half of the ex-
 pence of that powerful armament which it was
 judged necessary to employ, while the republic of
 Venice engaged to defray three-fourths of the
 other half, and the pope the remainder.

THE preparations stipulated were carried on
 with the utmost celerity and dispatch, and about
 the middle of September a fleet was ready to sail
 from Messina, consisting of upwards of two hun-
 dred and fifty ships of war, besides ships of bur-
 den, and, if we may believe the cotemporary his-
 torians, carrying near fifty thousand men; four-
 teen thousand of whom were furnished by the
 princes and states of Italy.

THE chief command of this mighty armament
 was given to Don John of Austria, for whom the
 title of Generalissimo was invented on this occa-
 sion. The Grand Commendator Requesens was
 appointed his lieutenant, and under him were the
 marquis de Santa-Croce, Doria, M. Antony Co-
 lonna, commander of the pope's gallies, and Seba-
 stian

tian Veniero, who commanded those of the Venetians.

BOOK IX.

1571.

THE aged pontiff, overjoyed to observe that his negotiations had been attended with so great success, indulged the most sanguine hopes with regard to the issue of the war; and, as if he had received a revelation concerning it from Heaven, he exhorted Don John to embrace the first opportunity of engaging with the enemy, over whom he assured him he would obtain a complete victory. He sent him at the same time a consecrated standard, and a number of ecclesiastics to officiate in sacred things on board the ships; and ordered a fast and jubilee to be proclaimed, with an absolution from their sins, to all who should acquit themselves with honour against the infidels.

SELIM, on the other hand, exerted himself strenuously in providing against so great a danger as now threatened to overwhelm him; and although a part of his troops were still employed in reducing Cyprus, he was able, through the great resources which he possessed, to equip a fleet still more numerous than that of the christian allies. Hali, to whom the chief command of it was given, arrived on the western coast of Greece about the time when Don John set sail from Sicily; and the two fleets came in sight of each other, with a resolution not to decline fighting, on the seventh of October, near the gulph of Lepanto.

Selim's preparations.

THE battle was begun by the two admirals, and their example was followed by all the other commanders, as fast as the wind, or the general orders which they had received, would permit them to advance. Between Don John and the Basha the engagement was bloody and obstinate. After cannonading one another for some time, they came to close fight, and grappled with each other.

The battle of Lepanto.

BOOK XI. The Spanish soldiers thrice boarded the enemy's ship, and were thrice repulsed with great slaughter. But at last Don John having received a reinforcement of two hundred men from the marquis of Santa-Croce, the Turks were overpowered. Hali himself was killed, and all on board were either put to the sword or taken prisoners. The crescent of Mahomet was then taken down, and the standard of the cross erected in its stead; after which, Don John, in order to intimidate the enemy, gave orders to have the head of the Turkish admiral fixed upon a long pole, which was fastened to the topmast; and shouts were sent from ship to ship of triumph and victory.

THE contending parties were in the mean time engaged in every quarter in furious combat with each other, fighting hand to hand, as on a field of battle, and employing not only guns and muskets, but arrows, pikes, javelins, and all the other, ancient as well as modern, weapons of war. Both Turks and Christians gave the most striking displays of prowess and intrepidity. Great numbers fell on both sides, and the sea for several miles was tinged with blood, and covered with mangled limbs and carcases. At last the christians were almost every where victorious. The christian slaves, by whom the Turkish gallies were rowed, took courage from the success with which the arms of the allies were attended, broke loose from their chains, and contributed not a little to fix the victory; while great numbers of the Spanish and Italian galley-slaves, prompted by the hopes of recovering their liberty, having obtained permission from their officers, boarded and attacked the enemy with irresistible fury, and displayed a contempt of danger with which nothing but despair, or the abhorrence of slavery, could have inspired them. The Turks were at the same time greatly disheartened

ened by the loss of their admiral ; and being tempt-
ed by the hopes of making their escape upon a
coast inhabited by their fellow-subjects, many of
them ran their ships ashore, and left them an easy
prey to the enemy.

Book IX.
1571.

THE christian fleet was much better manned
than the Turkish, and the soldiers, having been a
shorter time at sea, were more fresh and vigorous.
They were infinitely better furnished with mails
and helmets, and made much more use of fire-
arms than the enemy, many of whom were armed
only with bows and arrows, the wounds inflicted
by which were seldom mortal. The prows of the
Turkish galleys were likewise more open and de-
fenceless ; and the wind, which at first was fa-
vourable, changed suddenly against them, and
greatly facilitated the motions of the christian fleet.
From these causes, added to the fortunate bravery
of Don John, seconded by the prudent and
intrepid conduct of Requesens, Santa-Croce, Co-
lonna, and above all of Veniero, Barbarigo, and
other noble Venetians, the allies gained the most
memorable victory of which we read in the his-
tory of modern times.

Causes of
the victory.

It was not indeed obtained without considerable
loss. Near ten thousand of the christians were
killed in the engagement, or died afterwards of
their wounds. Among these was the Venetian
Proveditor, Barbarigo, a nobleman equally cele-
brated for his wisdom, his valour, and his mode-
ration. His death was deeply lamented by the
allies, and proved an irreparable misfortune to
the common cause. But to compensate for these
losses, near fifteen thousand christians were deli-
vered from captivity ; and of the Turks, above
five and twenty thousand were killed, and ten
thousand taken prisoners. A hundred and thirty
of their ships fell into the enemy's hands, and all
the

The loss on
both sides.

Book IX. the rest were either sunk or battered to pieces, or
 1571. burnt, except between thirty and forty with which
 Ulucciali, the famous corsair, escaped to Constantinople, through his superior skill in navigation and his knowledge of the seas.

THIS victory, gained over the implacable enemy of Christendom, spread universal joy throughout all Europe; and Don John, to whom as commander in chief it was principally ascribed, was celebrated every where as the greatest hero of the age. No person had more reason to rejoice than Philip, yet he received the messenger with a cold indifference; which his contemporaries were not inclined to attribute to his moderation so much as to that jealousy of his brother's fame, of which he gave afterwards a more convincing proof. "Don John," said he, "has gained the victory, but he hazarded too much: he might have lost it." The pope's joy on this occasion was more sincere. When he received the news, he cried out, in the words of sacred writ, "There was a man sent from God whose name was John."

The allies
 return
 home.

BUT the fruits of this signal victory were not proportional to the joy which it excited. The several admirals differed widely from one another with regard to the measures proper to be taken in the further prosecution of the war. Although Don John had been honoured with the extraordinary title of Generalissimo, yet according to the treaty of alliance no matter of importance could be determined without the consent of the other commanders. He would have sailed immediately after the battle for the Dardanelles, to intercept the remains of the Turkish fleet, and to block up the communication between Constantinople and the Mediterranean; but the Venetians and other members of the council of war refused to agree to this
 proposal.

proposal. Other enterprizes were afterwards proposed, and rejected; nor could they fix on any one common measure, but that of returning home, to repair the damage which had been sustained, and to prepare for resuming their operations in the spring.

BOOK IX.

1571.

Not long after Don John's arrival at Messina, the christians in Albania and Macedonia, filled with admiration of his character, and believing that it must be long before the Turks could recover from the blow which they had received, sent an embassy to make him an offer of the sovereignty over them, and to assure him, that, if he would come to their assistance with a fleet and army, they would shake off the Turkish yoke, and sacrifice their lives and fortunes in his service.

Embassy of
the Greeks
to Don
John.

DON John, whose ruling passion was ambition, would gladly have accepted this tempting offer, but was obliged to inform the ambassadors, that before he could comply with their request, the king must be consulted, and his consent obtained. He accordingly sent immediate notice to his brother of the proposal that had been made to him. And Philip, whether prompted by jealousy, as was generally believed, or by motives of prudence and policy, as he gave out, put an end at once to any hopes which Don John might have conceived, by telling him, that at present all thoughts of such an enterprise must be laid aside, lest the Venetians should take the alarm, and abandon the confederacy. This, it is not improbable, would have happened, since the Venetians had no less reason to dread the neighbourhood of the Spaniards than of the Turks, and had besides a claim themselves to a part of those territories, to the sovereignty of which Don John aspired.

IN

IN the mean time Ulucciali, whom Selim had made commander in chief of all his naval forces, exerted himself with extraordinary vigour and activity in fitting out a new fleet, to supply the place of that which had been ruined in the battle of Lepanto; and such at this time were the resources of the Turkish empire, that he was ready by the month of April to leave Constantinople, with more than two hundred galleys, besides a great number of other ships.

WITH this fleet he coasted along Negropont, the Morea, and Epirus; put the maritime towns into a posture of defence; chastised with great severity many of those christians who had been concerned in the invitation given to Don John; and afterwards took his station at Modon in the Morea, with an intention to watch there the motions of the enemy.

Inactivity of
the allies.

HE had full leisure to finish all the preparations which he judged to be necessary. The allies disputed long with one another concerning the plan of their future operations; and at last when, through the inactivity which their dissensions had occasioned, it was become necessary for them to drop their scheme of conquest in Greece and Africa, and to go a second time in quest of the Turkish fleet, Philip having conceived a suspicion that the court of France had, in order to gratify the Sultan, formed the design of attacking him in Piedmont, or the Netherlands, sent instructions to Don John to delay for some time longer his departure from Messina. At this place the Spanish fleet remained till after the massacre of St. Bartholomew; when Philip, being delivered from his anxiety with regard to the intentions of the French court, gave his brother permission to join the Venetians,

Veterans who served in the Pacific during the war are protesting the war.

[illegible]

Don Juan called a council of his general officers to consider of the measures proper to be pursued in case the Turkish army should persist in his resolution to decline signing. It was thought impracticable to force their way into the harbor of Modon; and therefore it was resolved to put the forces on shore, and to besiege the town by land. But from this attempt they were soon deterred, by the information which they received from some troops sent to reconnoitre the strength of the place; which was so completely fortified, that they could not expect to reduce it before the approach of winter.

It was next agreed to attempt the reduction of Navarino, which is another town on the western coast of the Morea, not many miles from Modon. The conduct of this enterprise was committed to Alexander Farnese, prince of Parma, who some years afterwards filled all Europe with his renown,

and

BOOK IX. and acquired the character of one of the greatest generals of this, or perhaps of any other age. But the present undertaking did not afford him an opportunity of displaying those superior talents for which he is so justly celebrated. The garrison was powerfully reinforced by detachments sent from Modon ; and so numerous an army was drawn together from the neighbouring towns, and sent by Ulucciali to attack the besiegers, that Farnese, after battering the ramparts for several days, was obliged to raise the siege, and put his forces on board the fleet ; which soon afterwards set sail for Messina.

1572.

is raised.

Death of Pius.

The Venetians make peace with the Turks.

SOME months before this time the league had suffered an irreparable loss, by the death of the pope ; whose successor Gregory the XIIIth had neither the same zeal nor the same influence and authority. Gregory, however, entered readily into his predecessor's views, and shewed himself willing to pursue the plan which Pius had adopted. And Philip, who was now entirely free from his apprehensions of a French invasion, had resolved to exert himself more than ever in the prosecution of the war. But the Venetians having been highly dissatisfied with the inactivity of the Spanish fleet in the preceding summer ; and finding that after a trial of two years they had, notwithstanding the victory of Lepanto, derived little advantage from the war, to compensate for the great expence which it had cost them, they listened to proposals made them by the French ambassador, and through his intercession concluded a separate peace with the Sultan.

THE pope and Don John expressed their indignation against the Venetians on this occasion without reserve. But Philip thought it beneath his dignity to discover either uneasiness or resentment ;
and

and when intelligence of the peace was brought him, he answered coolly, that he had entered into the league at the desire of the sovereign pontiff; and that, although the Venetians had thought proper to abandon it, he would still employ his fleet and army as before, for the attainment of those important ends, the humbling of the Infidels, and the security of Christendom, with a view to which the confederacy had been formed.

Book IX.

1572.

AGREEABLY to this resolution, he sent orders to Don John, to Doria, and the marquis of Santa Croce, to employ their utmost diligence in repairing and augmenting the fleet, and to hold it ready for entering upon action in the spring. These orders were punctually executed. Ulucciali, with the Turkish fleet, advanced as far as Prevesa in Epirus. But neither he nor the Spanish commanders thought it expedient to try their force in a general engagement. At length Ulucciali, after reinforcing the garrisons of the maritime towns, dismissed the corsairs who had come to his assistance, and about the end of summer set sail for Constantinople. After which Don John, agreeably to his instructions from the king, passed over to Africa, with an intention to undertake the reduction of Tunis; carrying with them for this purpose a fleet of two thousand sail, having twenty thousand foot on board, besides four hundred light horse, seven hundred pioneers, and a numerous train of heavy artillery.

TUNIS was at this time in the hands of the Turks, commanded by Heder Basha, whom Selim had lately sent to govern the town and kingdom. Heder, seized with consternation at the approach of the Spanish fleet, left Tunis with his troops and a great number of the inhabitants, and Don John took possession of the place, without meeting with the smallest opposition.

PHILIP

BOOK IX.

1572.
October 7.

PHILIP had instructed his brother, when he sent him on this expedition, to destroy Tunis, and to strengthen the fortifications of the isle and fortress of Goletta *. But instead of complying with these instructions, Don John resolved to fortify the town more strongly than ever; and having laid the foundations of a new fort, or citadel, he treated all the inhabitants who remained with lenity and indulgence; and engaged many of those who had fled, to return and submit to the Spanish government; after which he carried back his fleet to Sicily.

He soon discovered his intention in acting a part so contrary to the orders of the king. His success in an enterprize in which the late emperor had failed, though not entirely owing to the cowardice of the Turkish governor, had inflamed his ambition; and he had conceived the hopes, that his brother would be persuaded to grant him the title and dignity of king of Tunis, in compensation for the sovereignty of Greece, which he had prevented him from accepting. The pope, it is said, had disapproved of Philip's resolution to demolish Tunis; and had secretly encouraged Don John to venture upon disobeying him; from an opinion that the erecting a christian kingdom in Barbary, would prove the most effectual means of extirpating the piratical states. It is certain that Gregory warmly solicited Philip to confer upon his brother the sovereignty of his new conquest, and represented that all Christendom, and especially Spain and Italy, would from thence derive the most substantial advantages.

PHILIP was conscious that, notwithstanding his copious resources, it was beyond his power, while the

* The Goletta, which is situated at the entrance of the bay of Tunis, had been in the hands of the Spaniards ever since it was conquered by the emperor Charles.

war in the N
stabilishment

submitted, to effectuate **BOOK IX.**
kingdom in opposition

so potent an ene as the Turkish Sultan.

1572

he had desired the fortifications of Tunis to
ismantled, in order to save the expence of a
crous garrison, which would be necessary for
efence. He did not, however, express great
itment against his brother for counteracting his
uctions. But when the pope interceded with
to confer the sovereignty on Don John, he re-
l, "That, although no person could be more
rely concerned than himself, for his brother's
our and interest; yet there was much ground
loubt, whether either the one or the other
ld be advanced by his complying with the
e's request; and that he could not grant it, till
hould know whether he was able to maintain
acquisition which had been made, against the
idable armament the Sultan was preparing for
recovery." The prudence of this reply, whe-
it did, or did not proceed from some secret
ive of jealousy against his brother, was fully
fied by the issue.

At the summer following, Selim sent Uluciali <sup>Tunis and
the Goletta
taken by
the Turks.</sup>
against Tunis, with a fleet consisting of three hun-
d ships, having about forty thousand troops on
rd, under the command of his son-in-law Sinan
na. The new fort which Don John had be-
to build, was not yet complete. Nor was the
ifon which he had left strong enough to hold
long against so great a force. Don John la-
red with much zeal and anxiety in assembling
Spanish fleet, with an intention to raise the
e, but he was detained for several weeks, first
one harbour, and afterwards in another, by
pestuous weather and contrary winds. The
rks in the mean time being powerfully second-
by many thousand Moors, under the governor
Tripoli and the viceroy of Algiers, pushed for-
ward

BOOK IX. ward their operations at the same time against Tunis and the Goletta. The garrisons defended themselves long with the utmost bravery; but at last they were overpowered by numbers, and both the Goletta and the town were taken by assault.

1572.

DON JOHN was affected in the most sensible manner by this disaster; which shewed him the folly of his late presumption, and extinguished those flattering hopes which he had long indulged of attaining some regal or sovereign establishment. And his mortification on this occasion was the greater, because, after his most vigorous efforts, the Spanish fleet was still too weak to enable him to take vengeance on the enemy. Philip, for the same reason, dreaded that the Turkish commanders would pursue their conquests, and either attack his other possessions in Africa, or attempt a descent in Naples or Sicily; and it is probable that his apprehensions would have proved but too well founded, had not Selim died about this time, and left his throne to his son Amurath the Third; who devoted the beginning of his reign to the arts of peace^f.

^f Prince Cantemir's Hist. of the Ottoman Empire. Antonio Herrera; & Ferreras in hoc anno. Miniana, lib. vii.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK X.

DURING the course of the transactions related in the preceding book, a variety of important events happened in the Netherlands, which require a more circumstantial narration.

BOOK X.
1568.
Affairs of
the Netherlands.

IN opposing the prince of Orange and count Lewis of Nassau, it was confessed even by the duke of Alva's enemies, that he acted with the most consummate prudence; and if his conduct afterwards had been equally prudent, he might, notwithstanding the general odium which his tyranny had excited against him, have preserved the Netherlands in obedience to his authority. For if such of the people as were disaffected to his government remained quiet while the prince of Orange was at hand to favour their attempts, it cannot be supposed, that, after all their hopes of assistance were extinguished, they would have ever dared to dispute his will. And indeed the spirits of this unhappy people, at the present period, seem to have been so entirely

Book X. entirely broken, and their minds so deeply impress-
 ed with awe and terror, that nothing could have
 inspired them with the courage which they after-
 wards displayed, but insolence and oppression car-
 ried to the most enormous height.

Alva's vani-
 ty and arro-
 gance.

As soon the army of the prince of Orange was disbanded, Alva dismissed his German cavalry, and having distributed the greatest part of his infantry into winter quarters, he set out himself with the remainder for Brussels; where, after a triumphant entry, he ordered his victory to be celebrated with every species of rejoicing. He then commanded a solemn thanksgiving for the success which had attended his arms to be observed through all the provinces; and ordered a statue of himself to be formed in brass, and medals to be struck, which, while they served to perpetuate the memory of his exploits, gave proof of a degree of vanity and arrogance, which put his friends to the blush, and made the world unwilling to yield him that praise which his vigour and abilities would have procured him^b. One of the first acts of his administration af-

ter

^b In one of the medals he was represented riding in a triumphal chariot, with Victory behind him putting a crown upon his head. In his right hand he held a sword, to signify that he had conquered count Lewis by open force; and in the left, an ægis, to express that wisdom of which he had availed himself against the prince of Orange: and as a farther emblem of his wisdom, the chariot was drawn by owls, which in the ancient heathen superstition were sacred to Minerva.

But his statue, which was made at this time, and afterwards placed in the citadel of Antwerp, afforded a still more striking proof of his vanity and arrogance. It was the workmanship of Jockeling, a German artist, the most celebrated sculptor of the age. The governor was represented trampling under his feet the figure of a monster, having certain emblematical signs in different parts, which denoted the petition which had been presented to the dutchess of Parma, the compromise, and the insurrection and tumults which ensued. The base of the work was a square pillar of marble, containing on one side the artist's name, and on the other three sides an encomium of the duke of Alva; who is there said to have extinguished heresy and rebel-

lion,

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

273

BOOK X.

1568.

ter his return to Bruffels, was to determine the fate of the prisoners whom he had taken during the campaign; and all such of them as were inhabitants of the Netherlands were treated as rebels, and put to death.

A STRICT inquiry was set on foot, to discover those who had, either by word or deed, whilst the war subsisted, shewn their inclinations favourable to the prince of Orange. And as the issue of the war had remained uncertain, and fortune had sometimes favoured one side and sometimes another, many persons had unwarily given vent both to their hopes and to their fears; little suspecting that they were to be called to so rigorous an account for unguarded expressions, uttered among their friends and neighbours, which were now imputed to them as the most atrocious crimes. The people of the Low Countries had long enjoyed the privilege of not being tried by any judges, but those of the city or district to which they belonged; and no citizen could be put to death who had not confessed his crime. No regard was paid to either of these privileges. Persons of all ranks were hurried from the places of their residence, and carried to so great a distance as made it impossible for them to disprove the accusations brought against them, however groundless. Great numbers were seized on bare suspicion; many suffered death on the

VOL. I. T lightest

lion, to have saved the church from destruction, and restored justice and tranquillity to the Netherlands. This monument of Alva's vanity was far from being acceptable to the king; it was a subject of derision among his enemies at the court of Spain; and in the Flemings, it excited the highest resentment and indignation *.

It appears from Grotius, that about this time the duke made several useful regulations with regard to trade, the coin, and the liberty of the press; but they failed in promoting the purposes for which they were intended, and even the memory of them was soon effaced by the violence of the measures which he afterwards pursued.

* Bentivoglio, p. 86. Van Loon, tom. i. p. 135. Strada, p. 250.

BOOK X. **slightest evidence; and others were harassed with prosecutions, by which they were reduced to the utmost poverty and distress^c.**

1568.

The Netherlands deserted by great numbers of the people.

THE iniquity and unrelenting cruelty exercised by the inquisitors diffused an universal terror over all the provinces. Not only the protestants, but likewise all who had ever shewn themselves attached to the liberty of their country, saw, that nothing less would satisfy the governor than their utter ruin. It would not avail them, they perceived, to conceal their sentiments, nor even to disclaim them; since many of those who had done so, had been punished with death and confiscation; and had received no other favour from the judges, but that of having suffered by the sword or halter, instead of being committed to the flames. Determined by these considerations, great numbers of both sexes abandoned their habitations, and withdrew into foreign parts. We ought not perhaps to believe what some historians relate, that no less than a hundred thousand houses were forsaken by the inhabitants. It is however certain that several of the principal cities were sensibly thinner, and some whole villages and smaller towns were rendered almost desolate.

^c The negligence which the judges discovered in the sentences which they passed against the unhappy victims delivered over to them by the inquisitors, and in the warrants which they signed for their execution, would be incredible, if the many instances recorded by the cotemporary historians did not put it beyond all doubt. An order was issued at this time for executing several of the prisoners who had been condemned. In the list of their names the name of one man was inserted whose cause had not been tried, and he too was led to execution. Some time after, the judges gave orders to have this man brought before them for his trial. They were informed, that, in obedience to their former command, he had already suffered death; and proof was at the same time laid before them of his innocency. Most of the judges expressed on this occasion great uneasiness; but Vargas, the Spanish lawyer, observed, that what had happened, if rightly considered, ought not to give them much concern, since it was happy for the man's soul that he had died innocent.

desolate. Many of those who left the Netherlands went over to England, where they were well received by Elizabeth. And as in that country they enjoyed the free exercise of their religion, they fixed their residence in it ; and amply rewarded the English for the protection afforded them, by introducing among that people various branches of manufacture, with which they had before been unacquainted.

Book X.
1568.

THE Low-Countries suffered extremely from the desertion of its inhabitants. But the duke of Alva, far from being deterred by this consideration from the prosecution of his plan, was at pains to prevent the return of the exiles, and even prohibited from returning all such of their friends as had gone to visit them, by publishing an edict, setting forth, that they should be considered as holding intercourse with rebels, and should be liable to the punishment due to those who gave assistance to the enemies of the king.

THE governor's vanity was flattered about this time, by an embassy which came from the pope, to present him a consecrated hat and sword. This sort of present, which used to be bestowed only upon princes, was conferred on the duke of Alva, as an illustrious defender of the popish faith ; and it contributed to confirm him in the pursuit of those sanguinary measures, which had procured him such a distinguished honour.

BUT there was now almost no occasion for employing measures of this kind in his government of the Netherlands. All persons who had rendered themselves obnoxious to his displeasure, had either been put to death, or had gone into a voluntary banishment ; while those who remained had shewn themselves ready to yield an implicit and entire obedience to his will. The new bishops, the decrees of the council of Trent, the rites and ceremonies

The rest entirely subdued.

monies of the Romish church, were received and established throughout all the provinces.

THIS success of the duke of Alva's arms and counsels gave great uneasiness to some of the neighbouring princes, and particularly to the queen of England. That wise princess, had from the beginning of her reign beheld with anxiety the growing power of the Spanish monarchy. She knew how much Philip was inclined to disturb her government, and was sensible of the advantage which the vicinity of his dominions in the Netherlands afforded him, for carrying any scheme which he might form against her into execution; especially at the present period, when, instead of the limited prerogative which he had hitherto enjoyed in these provinces, he had acquired an absolute or despotic power, and established a military force, which was formidable to the neighbouring nations, as well as to the people whom it had been employed to subdue. Prompted by these considerations, Elizabeth had granted her protection to the Flemish exiles; and, if we may credit some historians, she had given secret assistance in money to the prince of Orange. The situation of her affairs at home, where she was disquieted by the machinations of the partisans of the queen of Scots, rendered it inexpedient for her to come to an open breach with the Spanish monarch; but notwithstanding this she had resolved to lay hold of the first proper opportunity that should occur of counteracting his designs.

She seizes
money be-
longing to
Philip.

It was not long before an occasion of this kind offered, which she readily embraced. Some merchants of Genoa having engaged to transmit certain sums of money for Philip's use into the Netherlands, had put four hundred thousand crowns on board five small vessels, which, being attacked on their way to Antwerp by privateers belonging to the prince

prince of Condé, were obliged to take shelter in the harbours of Plymouth and Southampton. The Spanish ambassador at the court of London immediately applied for a safe-conduct, that he might send the money by the nearest way to the Low-Countries; and at first Elizabeth seemed willing to grant his request; but afterwards she ordered the ambassador to be told, that, as she understood that the money was the property of the Italian merchants, she had resolved to detain it for some time in her own hands, and would take care that the owners should not have any reason to complain. The ambassador endeavoured to make it appear, that the money belonged to the king his master; and he was seconded in his applications for it by letters addressed to the queen from the duke of Alva. Elizabeth lent a deaf ear to their remonstrances, and discovered plainly, that she had resolved to keep the money. Alva was not of a temper to bear patiently this insult. It was ever more agreeable to his nature, to conquer difficulties, than to attempt, by negotiation, to elude them. Without regard to the treaties subsisting between the English and the Flemings, and without consulting either the States or council of the Netherlands, he ordered all the English merchants at Antwerp to be cast into prison, and their effects to be confiscated. He did not consider, or he was not moved by the consideration, that the Flemings had at that time a much greater quantity of goods in England, than the English possessed in Flanders. Elizabeth had no reason therefore to be sorry for what had happened. But she dispatched an ambassador to Philip, to complain of the injury done to her; and not receiving satisfaction, she proceeded to make reprisals, and seized effects, belonging to Spanish and Flemish merchants, by which her subjects were more than compensated for all the losses which they had sustained in Flanders. Alva came
at

BOOK X. at last to perceive his error, and sent over Christopher Affonville to England, to negotiate an agreement with the queen. Elizabeth, who took pleasure to mortify the pride of Alva, refused to admit Affonville into her presence, because he had not credentials from Philip. Alva, more enraged than ever by this affront, prohibited the people in the Low-Countries from holding any commercial intercourse with the English; but at last, after various negotiations, the matter was adjusted by treaty, and the trade put upon its former footing, in the year one thousand five hundred and seventy-four ^d.

1568.

IN the mean time Elizabeth gained her end, and did a most material prejudice to Philip's interest in the Netherlands. This prejudice was indeed much greater than she intended, and was accompanied with more important consequences than she could possibly foresee. Great arrears were due to the Spanish troops, and Alva had contracted a considerable debt by building citadels. Philip's treasury, although the richest in Europe, was exhausted by the expensive wars in which he had been engaged against the Turks and Moors; nor could he at present afford the money requisite for the maintenance of his forces in Flanders. In this situation, the governor found it necessary to have recourse to the Flemings, whom he believed to be so thoroughly subdued, that they would not refuse to comply with any demand which he could make upon them.

The taxes
of the 10th
and 20th
pennies.

THE absurdity and folly, added to the oppression and tyranny, into which his arrogance, together with his ignorance of the interests of a commercial people, betrayed him on this occasion, may justly be regarded as the chief cause of all the difficulties which he afterwards encountered, and of all those

^d Meteren, p. 80. Strada, p. 252. Bentivoglio, p. 80.

those astonishing exertions which the people made to free themselves from the Spanish yoke. It may appear surprising, that the imposing of taxes, however burdensome, should have wrought more powerfully on their minds, than the cruel persecutions which had been exercised with such unrelenting fury on account of religion. But the reason is obvious. The persecutions extended only to a certain number of individuals; whereas the taxes affected all men alike, and must have proved the source of universal and perpetual oppression.

Book X.
1569.

THE people in the Low-Countries had in no period been accustomed to be taxed by their princes. The power of imposing taxes belonged, by the constitution and constant practice, to the assembly of the States. And when the prince had occasion for money, he had been accustomed, from the earliest times, to petition the States for a supply, which they either granted or refused, as they were satisfied or displeased with the reasons for demanding it. At certain periods, and particularly in the beginning of the present reign, they had carried their jealousy of this important privilege so far, as to appoint commissioners of their own to receive the money from the people, and to see it applied to the purposes for which it had been granted. The duke of Alva paid no greater regard to this than he had done to their other privileges. He resolved by his own authority, to establish such taxes as would not only supply his present necessity, but serve as a perpetual fund for defraying all the expences of his government.

THE manner in which these taxes were imposed was not more arbitrary, than the taxes themselves were oppressive. They were three in number. The first was a tax of one *per cent.* on all goods, whether moveable or immoveable. The second,

Book X. second, of twenty *per cent.* to be paid annually,
 1569. of all immoveable goods, or heritage. And the
 third, of ten *per cent.* of all moveable goods,
 to be paid on every sale. It was enacted, that the
 first of these taxes should be paid only once ; but it
 was ordained, that the other two should continue as
 long as the public exigencies should require.

Excise uni-
 versal dis-
 content.

INTIMATION was made of these demands, in
 the name of the king, to an assembly of the
 States ; and it is impossible to describe the astonish-
 ment which they excited. The deputies knew not
 what answer to return ; and therefore desired
 time to consider of the governor's requisitions, and
 to transmit an account of them to their constitu-
 ents. They were received every where with grief and
 indignation ; and there was nothing to be heard
 but the bitterest lamentations over all the provin-
 ces.

“ It was not enough, they complained, for the
 king to have stripped the country of infinite num-
 bers of the people ; to have filled the provinces
 with foreign soldiers, and to have wreathed the
 yoke about the necks of the inhabitants, by gari-
 sons and citadels ; but they must likewise bear the
 charge of supporting those instruments of their op-
 pression ; and for this purpose, instead of the volun-
 tary and moderate contributions which they had
 been wont to pay under former princes, be loaden
 for ever with the most violent and oppressive taxes.
 Notwithstanding the injustice with which they had
 been treated from the beginning of the governor's
 administration yet, during his contest with the
 princes of Nassau, they had remained unshaken in
 their fidelity to the king, and even co-operated with
 his forces against the enemy ; but it now appear-
 ed that their most implacable enemy was the king
 himself ; who seemed to desire nothing so much, as
 to

to reduce them to a state of the most wretched slavery; and in order to accomplish an end so cruel and inglorious, had sent among them the duke of Alva, whose conduct seemed rather as if he had come to extirpate the inhabitants, than to govern or protect them. But they had already borne too much. It was time to shew that they had not been insensible of the treatment which they had received, and that they were not altogether unworthy of their illustrious ancestors, to whose wisdom and valour they were indebted for those invaluable privileges, of which the king, and the odious instruments of his tyranny, now wanted to deprive them *.”

Book X.
1569.

WHEN the States found that the new taxes were so universally disagreeable to their constituents, they took courage, and represented their own sentiments concerning them to the governor. They reminded him of the disturbances which had arisen from an attempt to establish the tax of the hundredth penny, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-six; when persons of all ranks discovered an irreconcilable aversion to it, not only on account of the exorbitancy of the tax itself, but because it reduced them to the disagreeable necessity of laying open their private affairs. There was still greater reason, they observed, for being dissatisfied with the other taxes; and especially that of the tenth part of moveable goods, to be paid at every sale. This was not only such a tax as had been never known in the Low-Countries, but would prove a burden which it would be utterly impossible to support. It would amount, in many cases, nearly to the value of the commodities themselves; since the same commodities were often transferred from one person to another, and from him to a third, a fourth, a fifth, a sixth, before they

Opposition
of the assembly
of the States.

* Bentivoglio, p. 82.

BOOK X. they came into the hands of the consumer. In
 1569. woollen manufactures this was unavoidable; the
 wool was purchased by one set of manufacturers;
 the yarn by another; the cloth, before it was dyed,
 by a third; then it was sold to the merchant; by
 him, to the retailer; and by the retailer to his
 customers for use; and thus the tax proposed
 would amount to six or seven tenths of the full va-
 lue of the commodity. Several consequences, fa-
 tal to the prosperity of the people, would ensue.
 Foreigners would no longer purchase their manu-
 factures, because they could not sell them at the
 usual prices. The manufacturers and merchants
 would fly from a country where they were so
 grievously oppressed; and the Flemings would be
 obliged to have recourse to foreign nations for
 those commodities with which foreigners had hi-
 therto been supplied by them. Thus the sources
 of their wealth would in a little time be dried up;
 and, as they would not have any manufactures of
 their own, so they could not long possess the means
 of purchasing them from others. To these reasons
 they added another, taken from the great expence
 and difficulty with which the collection of the tax
 proposed must be attended. A multitude of tax-
 gatherers must be employed; the people would still
 find it practicable, in numberless cases, to elude
 the tax; and the tranquillity of the provinces
 would be continually disturbed with altercations
 and disputes.

IN answer to this remonstrance, Alva, with
 much ignorance and haughtiness, replied, that no-
 thing could convince him that the taxes required
 would be so oppressive as had been represented;
 since it was evident, that he demanded only one
 part of ten for the king, and left the remaining
 parts to the people. That in his town of Alva
 in

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN.

283

in Spain, the tax of the tenth penny was actually paid, and yielded him an yearly rent of between forty and fifty thousand ducats. That if such a revenue as he expected should arise from it in the Netherlands, he would deliver the people from all their other taxes. That he had often heard the late emperor complain of the difficulty of procuring money from his subjects in the Low-Countries; and that, in order to obtain it, he had been constrained to grant them privileges greatly prejudicial to his authority. But at present there was no room for remonstrances. Great arrears were due to his troops; several new forts must be built without delay for the security of the country; money for these purposes must be immediately procured, and he could not devise any more effectual means of raising it, than the taxes which were proposed ^f.

Book X.
1569.

SUCH was the governor's reply to the assembly of the States; but being sensible of the difficulties which attended his plan, he laid it before the council, and desired the counsellors to consider of the most effectual method of carrying it into execution. There were some of them, who, in order to ingratiate themselves with the duke, exhorted him to persist in his design. And these men advised him to endeavour first to gain over such of the provinces as had distinguished themselves by their loyalty; saying, that *their* example would soon be followed by the other provinces, who would dread incurring the imputation of disaffection.

BUT most of the counsellors were of a contrary opinion, and particularly the president Viglius; a minister of long experience in the Netherlands, and of undoubted fidelity to the king. "The objections," he said, "which had been urged
against

^f Meteren, p. 89.

Book X.

1569.

against the taxes were unanswerable; for there was the widest difference between the kingdom of Spain, and the Low-Country provinces. The wealth of Spain consisted in the great extent of its territory and the fertility of its soil. It was divided from other kingdoms, either by inaccessible mountains, or by the ocean. It was complete within itself, and independent of any connexion with other countries. Whereas the Netherlands were of such small extent, as to be utterly insufficient to support the inhabitants. They were situated in the heart of Europe, and had so many different nations bordering upon them, that, if trade were discouraged or oppressed, the manufacturers and merchants could easily, and would certainly, transplant themselves, together with their arts, to the countries which lay around them. This consequence was to be dreaded from much less burdensome impositions than those that were proposed; which were such as had never taken place in any commercial state, and to which, he was confident, the people of the Low-Countries would never be persuaded to submit. I speak thus (continued he) prompted by a concern for the interest of the king, as well as by a regard to the prosperity of the Netherlands; for there is the greatest reason to apprehend, that if the governor shall not depart from his resolution, trade will soon be reduced so low, that the people will be disabled from furnishing the supplies requisite for the purposes of government ^z."

THIS speech of Viglius served rather to incense the duke of Alva than to convince him. Without regarding either the dignity of the speaker, or the strength of his arguments, he vouchsafed to make no other answer, but that, long before this time,
he

he had resolved upon the taxes in dispute, and had communicated his resolution to the counts Barlaumont and Noircarmes, before he came into the Low-Countries. His purpose was unalterably fixed, and those who were friends to the king must, without any further altercation, exert their endeavours to bring the States to a compliance with his will.

Book X.
1569.

WHEN the States found that the governor was equally deaf to the remonstrances of the president, as he had been to theirs, they began to dread the effects of his displeasure; and in order to sooth his resentment, they gave their consent to the tax of the hundredth penny; intreating him, at the same time, to pass from the other taxes, and representing again, in the strongest terms, the ruinous consequences which would attend them. But he was still as inexorable as ever: although he condescended on this occasion to make a trial of some softer expedients, before he should have recourse to those of a more violent nature, which, in case of necessity, he was determined to employ.

In the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and sixty-eight, Philip, with the advice of the inquisitors at Madrid, had pronounced a general sentence against his subjects in the Netherlands, finding them obnoxious to justice, and depriving them of their fortunes, rights, and privileges. By this extraordinary sentence, which, from the nature of it, was incapable of being executed, he had kept this unhappy people in perpetual anxiety; but at last, believing their spirits to be thoroughly subdued, and dreading the utter desolation of the provinces, he had resolved to publish a general indemnity; and, some months before the present period had transmitted it to the duke of Alva, together with a confirmation of it by the pope. The duke thought that he could not publish this indemnity

1570.
Act of Indemnity.

Book X. indemnity at a more seasonable juncture; and he
 1570. flattered himself, that it would serve to conciliate the favour of the people, and make it easier for him to overcome their aversion to the taxes. It was first made public in the city of Antwerp; where the governor, seated on a lofty throne, surrounded with a degree of pomp which no former governor had assumed, ordered it to be read in the presence of a prodigious concourse of people, who had come from all quarters to hear it, full of the most anxious expectation. It was afterwards printed and dispersed over all the provinces. But it was extremely ill-calculated to promote the purpose designed; and was clogged with such a number of exceptions, as tended rather to awaken the fears of the people, than to allay or remove them.

From the benefit of it were excluded, not only all the preachers of the reformed religion, but likewise all those who had ever lodged or entertained them in their houses; all who had been concerned in breaking the images, or in violating the monasteries and churches; all who had subscribed the compromise, the petition of the nobles, or any other such bond of association; and lastly, all those who had given assistance, or shewn favour, by word, deed, or writing, to the enemies of the king. Such were the exceptions that regarded individuals; and with respect to cities and communities, it was declared, that if any of them should be found to have been accessory to the late disorders, on the pretence of maintaining their privileges, the king reserved to himself the power of punishing or forgiving them, as he should judge expedient.

How received.

It is not surprising that an act of indemnity such as this, should have failed to produce any salutary effect. Persons of all ranks were highly offended with

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
300 FIFTH AVENUE
NEW YORK 10017

he chose to levy a tribute upon a light-ex-
posed defenceless and unarmed people, he
acted unwisely, and he certainly did not
act justly. But he is charged with the crime
as to having the hands of these defenceless
people fastened upon his affairs required
names are not with dignity, and that they
procured to the raising of the tax of the tenth
year, without any further remittance or de-
duction. When the different provinces, however, he
the proper steps of any different means of
action. As the vicar-general of Namur, Arras,
Cambrai, had, from the beginning, been ex-
actly submissive to his will, he desired the coun-
cilment and No. 100 names to acquaint them, that
wished to obtain their consent to the tax, more
in example of obedience to the other pro-
vinces, than from any intention to levy it upon
; who had deserved so well of him by their
fidelity. But he delivered his orders in a much

⁵ Meteren, p. 84. Bentivoglio, p. 31.

Book X. more peremptory tone to the other provinces. He
 1570. would take care, he said, in levying the tax, to prevent the consequences which they apprehended might arise from it; and would abolish it, if he found it hurtful to their trade. In the mean time it was the will of the king that it should be imposed. The king had invested him with power to exact it; and he was unalterably determined to employ that power for the purpose for which it had been conferred. He concluded with reminding them of the guilt which they had contracted during the late commotions; and bid them esteem it a happiness that they were now allowed to atone for their folly, by giving a *part* of their substance, when the king might in justice have seized the *whole*.

The General States
 intimidated.

By these promises and threats an assent was at last extorted; but it was given upon two conditions, that all the provinces, without exception, should agree to the taxes; and that the governor should, according to his promise, moderate them in such a manner, that no prejudice could arise from them to the trade or manufactures of the Netherlands. The only provinces which rejected these conditions were those of Utrecht and Brabant. And the former of these discovered, in the progress of this affair, a firmness and intrepidity that deserves to be recorded.

The resolute conduct
 of the States
 of Utrecht.

Soon after the governor's orders were communicated to the States of Utrecht, they sent ambassadors to represent, that having taken his demand under their most serious consideration, they were unable to conceive how it could possibly be granted. The territory of Utrecht, they said, was small; the inland parts of it were barren, and the other parts were preserved from the fury of the waters at an immense expence. Although they had but lately

lately become subject to the house of Austria, yet, in order to raise the tributes imposed upon them by the late emperor and the present king, they had been obliged to contract a very large debt, which they had never been able to repay. During the late disturbances, they had suffered more than the other provinces; their city had been forsaken by its most industrious inhabitants, and their trade, which was never great, almost annihilated. But as they knew the necessity of the governor's affairs, and were sensible how much they had been indebted to him for restoring tranquillity to the Netherlands, they were willing to assist him to the utmost extent of their ability, and would engage to pay him yearly a hundred thousand florins for six years; provided they were freed from all other burdens during that time.

Book X.
1570.

THIS offer the governor rejected with scorn and indignation. The States then sent another embassy, to inform him, that they had considered fully of what they could afford; they had flattered themselves that their offer would have met with a favourable acceptance; they were conscious of having given the strongest proof of an inclination to comply with his desire; but, whatever should be the consequence, they must now declare, that it was beyond their power to offer more. And in this declaration, the presidents of the five churches concurred; protesting, that they could not agree to the taxes proposed, without incurring the censure of excommunication, which was denounced in the pope's bull ^a, *in cæna Domini*, not only against those who imposed taxes on the revenues of the church, but against those likewise who submitted to them. But the governor paid no greater regard to this protestation of the ecclesiastics, than

VOL. I.

U

to

^a Published by Pius V. ann. 1568. Vol. Hennalt, p. 236.

BOOK X. to the remonstrances of the States. It provoked
 1570. him exceedingly, to meet with such obstinate resistance from so inconsiderable a province as Utrecht. He had threatened to employ force, and he now resolved to put his threat in execution.

He began with sending to the city of Utrecht a regiment of infantry, consisting of two thousand four hundred men; who, besides exacting the same number of florins a week for their pay, lived at free quarters in the houses of the inhabitants, and knowing the governor's design in placing them there, indulged themselves in every species of outrage. He summoned the magistrates of the city, and the States of the province, to appear before the council of tumults, to answer for their conduct in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-six, when they yielded to the protestants one of the churches of the city for their religious assemblies. It did not avail them to allege in their defence, that only a few individuals were concerned in this deed; that these few had acted with the best intention towards the king and the catholic religion, and had made that concession, of which the whole city was now accused, in order to prevent the most unhappy consequences, which would otherwise have arisen from the intemperate zeal of the reformers. These defences made no impression on the duke, or on the council. And sentence was passed with very little hesitation, at the same time, against the ecclesiastics, the nobles, and the several cities of the province. The ecclesiastics were deprived of their right of voting in the assembly of the States; the nobles were stript of all their honours and immunities; the cities of Utrecht, Amersfort, Wyck, and Rhenen, were declared to have forfeited their privileges; and, as Utrecht was supposed to have been more particularly guilty, it was enacted, that

that all the territory and revenues belonging to the city and corporations should be confiscated.

Book X.

1570.

THE States were so far intimidated by this iniquitous sentence, and their patience so much exhausted by the oppressive rapacity of the soldiers, that they were induced to raise the offer which they had made of one hundred thousand florins, to one hundred and eighty thousand. But neither what they had already suffered, nor what they dreaded from the governor's resentment, could induce them to yield their consent to the taxes of the tenth and twentieth penny.

THIS resolute conduct of the people of Utrecht was attended with the most important consequences. It annulled the obligation under which the other States had come, when they consented to the taxes, on condition that all the provinces should concur; and it confirmed the people in their resolution strenuously to oppose the levying of the taxes.

THE governor was aware how difficult it would have been, in their present temper, to carry his plan into immediate execution; and although it does not appear that he ever entertained the remotest thoughts of dropping it, yet, as his occasions for money were extremely pressing, he called an assembly of the States to Brussels, and demanded, that, besides the hundredth penny, to which they had formerly consented¹, they should, in place of the other taxes, pay two millions of guilders yearly, for six years. The States endeavoured to make him sensible of the exorbitancy of this demand, but in vain. He gave them a month to consider of it; and at last, from their dread of his tyranny, they agreed to his request.

U 2

THE

¹ This amounted to 4,000,000 guilders.

Book X.

1570.
Conduct of
the prince
of Orange.

THE prince of Orange was not an unconcerned spectator of these transactions. He had gone, as was mentioned before, at the end of the year one thousand five hundred and sixty-eight, to join the protestants in France. He was present, and had a considerable share in the several actions which passed between the Calvinists, and catholics, at la Charité, Roch-la-ville, and Poitiers. But being too deeply interested in the affairs of the Netherlands to remain long at so great a distance from them, he had left his brother count Lewis to command the German forces in France; and having returned in September one thousand five hundred and sixty-nine, to his county of Nassau in Germany, he had been employed for some time in making preparations for trying his fortune once more against the Spaniards.

IN Germany he received particular intelligence of every thing that had happened in the Low-Countries since his departure. He was informed how much the duke of Alva had increased the hatred which the people entertained against his person and government. He received the strongest assurances of their disposition to revolt; and was solicited by the catholics, as well as protestants, by those who still remained in the country, as well as those who had been forced to leave it, to take up arms in their defence. But he had not forgot the cause of the failure of his first attempt; and he resolved not to begin any military operations, nor even to levy forces, till he should be better provided than formerly with the means of their support.

The exiles
at sea ac-
knowledge
his authori-
ty.

Soon after Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, many of those who had left the country on account of the persecutions, had united together, and fitted out a great number of armed vessels, with which they seized all the Spanish ships which they

they could meet with on the Flemish or English coast. These adventurers had lately, through the violence of Alva's administration, received a great increase of number; and had been joined by many persons of rank, who had acquired an ascendant over them. They were all strongly attached to the prince of Orange, from whose wisdom alone they had any hopes of being restored to their native country; and they desired nothing so much as that he would undertake the direction of their affairs. They agreed therefore, as soon as it was proposed by their leaders, to receive commissions from him, and to pay a fifth part of the value of all their prizes to certain officers, to be appointed by him to receive it.

As their fleet was greatly superior to any which the duke of Alva possessed, they did incredible mischief to the Spanish, and sometimes too to the Flemish merchants; and if their prizes had been sold to advantage, the proportion which they allowed to the prince of Orange would have amounted to a considerable sum.

WILLIAM had recourse, at the same time, to another method of improving his finances. He empowered some of the inferior nobility to grant commissions in his name, to the protestant preachers, who went throughout the provinces in disguise, and procured contributions from all those who were disaffected either to the catholic religion or the Spanish government. These men not only knew better to whom it was proper to apply, but, by their piety and eloquence, they had greater influence over the people, than any other persons whom the prince could have employed. By their means too, he acquired a thorough knowledge of the disposition of the people, and formed a correspondence with many of the principal inhabitants, which contributed not a little to advance his views.

These

BOOK X. These transactions were carried on chiefly in Holland and Zealand, where the reformed religion had made greater progress than in the southern provinces; and where, from the nature and situation of the country, intersected by navigable rivers, canals, and branches of the sea, the people dreaded less, and were in reality less exposed to, the power of the Spaniards. It was in these provinces, formed both by nature and art to be the seat of liberty, that the prince of Orange had wisely resolved to make his first attempt to gain a footing in the Netherlands. And, accordingly, intrigues were formed, and plans concerted, between his agents and some of the principal inhabitants, for delivering the maritime towns into the hands of the protestant exiles. Attempts were made to get possession of Enchuyfen, and other cities in North Holland; but from different causes they proved abortive at this time, and were laid aside till fortune should be more propitious. The persons concerned in them had little reason, it may be thought, to flatter themselves with the hopes of secrecy; yet so universally odious was the Spanish government become, to the catholics as well as the reformers, that none, even of those by whose means the plots of the Orange party were defeated, could resolve to give information of them to the governor. They were averse from gratifying a man whom they had so much reason to detest; and abhorred the thoughts of that cruelty, which they knew would, in case of a discovery, be exercised against the guilty.

Surprise of
the fort of
Louvestein.

THE duke of Alva therefore remained entirely ignorant of all that passed; nor does it appear that he entertained the least suspicion of the machinations of his enemies, till the taking of the fort of Louvestein. This fort stands in the island called Bommel, which is formed by the Maese and the Waal; and, though weakly fortified, was of great importance

importance on account of its situation. It was taken by surprise at this time, by Herman de Ryter, a native of Bois-le-Duc, who wished to signalize himself by some gallant exploit in the service of the prince of Orange. He had carried with him no more than fifty men, and with this small number he hoped to be able to defend the fort till his associates should arrive, but unfortunately they were prevented from advancing by some unforeseen accident; and in the mean time the fort was invested by a superior force, which had been sent against him, from Bois-le-Duc, by Roderigo de Toledo. The besieged defended themselves long with the most obstinate valour; but they were at last overpowered by numbers, and De Ryter himself was slain ^{*}.

Book X.
1571.

THE duke of Alva was greatly alarmed by this event. He considered the cause more than the effect, and apprehended that this first enterprize of his enemies, which had been so easily frustrated, would ere long be followed by other attempts in different parts of the provinces. It excited in his fiery temper a degree of rage and indignation equal to his anxiety. And his resentment was inflamed by the opposition which the people had made to his raising the tax of the hundreth penny; especially in the maritime provinces, where he had never been able either to levy that tax, or their proportion of the two millions of guilders, which the General States had consented to pay him yearly. This opposition might have opened his eyes, and shewn him the necessity of embracing milder expedients, than he had hitherto employed; but instead of this, it served only to fix him in his first purpose of having recourse to open force and violence. And he was resolved, whatever should be the consequences,

Indignation
of the duke
of Alva.

to

* Meteren, p. 86. Bentivoglio, p. 87.

BOOK X.
1571.

to compel the people to submit, not only to the tax of the hundredth penny, to which the States had given their consent, but likewise to that of the tenth and twentieth, to which they had refused it¹. To give a colour to his conduct, he asserted in the council, that the States had consented to the two latter taxes as well as the former. Viglius, and some others of the counsellors, reminded him, that the consent obtained had been granted upon a condition which did not yet subsist. But Alva was not in a temper of mind, at this time, in which he could either listen to the truth, or bear with contradiction. They were no better than rebels, he said, who durst affirm, that the States had not consented. The king's honour, as well as his interest, required, that the taxes should be levied without delay; and he would suffer himself to be cut in pieces, rather than allow the States to break the promise which they had given him.

His edict
requiring
payment of
the taxes.

HE accordingly issued an edict, requiring all the inhabitants of the Low-Countries to make immediate payment of the tenth and twentieth, as well as of the hundredth penny, to the officers appointed to receive them. But, as he had promised to moderate the two former taxes in such a manner as to prevent the pernicious consequences that were apprehended, an immunity from the tenth penny was granted to foreign merchants, on the first sale of goods imported; and they were permitted to export them again, without paying this tax, provided the goods had not been transferred from one person to another during their continuance in the country. The same immunity was likewise granted on the first sale of cattle, corn, and fruits, the produce of the Netherlands.

THESE

¹ Bentivoglio, p. 87.

THESE immunities, which the governor considered as proofs on his part of the greatest condescension, had no effect towards reconciling the people to the taxes, which they believed would, notwithstanding these concessions, be attended with the ruin of their commerce and manufactures. Their aversion to them, and their resolution to oppose the levying of them, were as strong as ever. In many towns the people began, almost as soon as the edict was published, to feel a scarcity of the common necessaries of life. Provisions were not brought to market; nor did the merchants expose their goods to sale as formerly.^{1571.} These inconveniences were felt in no place more than in Brussels, where the governor resided. There was an entire stagnation in that city of every species of commercial intercourse. Neither food nor drink could be purchased in it. The shops and workhouses were shut up. The lower sort of people were reduced to despair; and the whole city was overwhelmed with grief and consternation.

BOOK X.

The consequences of this measure.

IN this situation, Alva formed the barbarous resolution of putting to death, before their own houses, seventeen of the principal inhabitants. His soldiers were under arms; the gibbets, the ropes, and the executioners, were prepared; when happily, only a few hours before the time fixed for the execution, a messenger arrived with information that the exiles had made a descent on the island of Vorn, and got possession of the Brille.

His barbarity.

The Brille taken by the Exiles.

ALVA, thunderstruck with this intelligence, recalled his bloody orders; and resolved, though with much reluctance, to suspend for a time the levying of the taxes. He was deeply sensible of the advantages which the exiles might derive from their acquisition of a place, which, on account of its

Book X.

1571.

its situation at the mouth of a great river, and in the neighbourhood of many important cities, had always been considered as one of the chief keys of the Netherlands. He knew likewise how extremely disaffected the people in the maritime provinces were to his person and government ; and he dreaded that other places would follow the example of the Brille, and open their gates to the enemy.

He had the greater reason to be uneasy at this event, as he had not exerted himself with proper vigour to prevent it. He had neglected to form a naval force sufficient to contend with the exiles ; and had thereby not only suffered the trade of the Netherlands to be ruined, but had left his government almost defenceless on that side, where, from the nature of the power which the protestant exiles possessed, it was in the greatest danger of being attacked. He had not even put garrisons into the cities that were most exposed ; but, at the very time when the exiles were hovering on the coast, kept a numerous body of troops quartered in Utrecht ; which, if they had been distributed among the sea-coast towns, might have baffled all the attempts of the enemy. Of this supine negligence, in a person of so great vigour and abilities as Alva, no account can be given, but the extreme contempt in which he held the protestant exiles ; whom he considered as fit only to exercise piracy upon merchant ships, but utterly incapable of conducting any important enterprise.

BUT although he had not taken the necessary precaution to secure himself against their attempts, he had not been altogether inattentive to their motions. He had complained to the queen of England, of her permitting them to sell openly in her dominions, the goods of which they had robbed the subjects of the king his master. This was in effect

effect giving assistance, he said, to the king's rebellious subjects, and was a violation of the treaties which subsisted between the Spanish and English crowns. Elizabeth was secretly a friend to the Flemish exiles; and she had little reason, and as little inclination, to gratify the desires of Philip, or the duke of Alva. She knew that, for some time past, they had maintained a correspondence with her catholic subjects, and had used their endeavours to disturb her government. But she did not judge it proper at this time to come to an open rupture with Philip. She therefore complied with Alva's request; ordered all ships belonging to such of the inhabitants of the Low-Countries, as had withdrawn their allegiance from the king of Spain, to leave her harbours; and forbade her subjects to furnish them with shelter or provisions.

Book X.

1571.

THIS unlooked-for complaisance of Elizabeth, which was matter of great triumph to the duke of Alva, and of equal mortification to the exiles, was attended, in the issue, with consequences very different from those which were expected. It reduced the exiles to despair; and as they were now thrown off by the only foreign power from which they had received protection, they resolved, if possible, to acquire possession of some place of strength in their native country. Having with this view assembled at Dover, they set sail with twenty-five ships, under William de Lumey count de la Marck, who held the chief command among them, by commission from the prince of Orange. In their voyage they had the good fortune to meet with two Spanish vessels richly laden, which was no small consolation to them in their present forlorn situation. They intended to have made an attempt upon Enchuysen, in North Holland; but the wind being contrary, they were obliged to put into the Maese, where they cast anchor before the

Book X. the town of Brille, on the first of April one thousand five hundred and seventy-two. The count
 1572. De la Marck immediately landed his troops, and sent a messenger to summon the inhabitants, in the name of the prince of Orange, to surrender. But as they hesitated for some time what answer they should return, he began to suspect that they were preparing to make resistance, and therefore ordered the gate on the north side to be burnt down. This was done accordingly; and he entered, and took possession of the town without opposition, at the head of only two hundred and fifty men.

So accidental and so easily accomplished was the first event of that war, which rendered the Netherlands a scene of horror and devastation for more than thirty years; but which, whilst it proved the source, on many occasions, of extreme distress to the people, called forth an exertion of virtue, spirit, and intrepidity, which seldom occurs in the annals of history. Never was there a more unequal contest than this which was now begun between the inhabitants of the Low-Countries and the Spanish monarch; and never was the issue of any dispute more contrary to what the parties had reason to expect. On the one side, a people, consisting chiefly of manufacturers and merchants, inhabiting a country of small extent, and already much exhausted by a long continued exercise of tyranny and oppression: on the other, the richest monarch of the age, who was master of the most numerous and best disciplined forces, commanded by generals distinguished above their cotemporaries by their consummate skill in the art of war. Nothing but despair could have made the people of the Low-Countries enter the lists with an adversary so much superior to them. And it could hardly be supposed that they would not be quickly overwhelmed.

whelmed. But, from the sequel it will appear, ^{Book X.} how rash it is to conclude with confidence, that because an event is improbable, therefore it will not happen. ^{1572.} X

ON the next day, after the protestants had made themselves masters of the Brille, they began to convey their booty on board their ships, with the design of proceeding on their voyage to West Friesland; but one of their number, a native of the place*, having represented that they could not reasonably expect to find a more commodious settlement elsewhere, the count de la Marck, and all the rest entered readily into this opinion; and they resolved without delay to fortify the town with the cannon belonging to the fleet.

THEY had just time to put themselves into a posture of defence, when the count de Bossut†, to ^{fruitless attempt to recover the Brille.} whom the duke of Alva had given orders to attack them, arrived in the island with a body of Spanish troops, collected from Utrecht and other places in the neighbourhood. The count de la Marck, whose forces were much inferior in number to the enemy, remained within the town, with a resolution to defend it to the last. The Spaniards advanced to the walls, and began to batter them with their artillery; when one of the townsmen leapt into a canal, and swimming a little way till he came to a sluice, which Bossut had neglected to secure, he broke it down, and let in such a quantity of water, that, in a few hours, a great part of the country was overflowed. This did not deter Bossut from the prosecution of his enterprise; although it obliged him to remove his forces to the south side of the town, where the ground which led to the principal gate was still uncovered by the water. La Marck had planted there his heaviest cannon;

* Treflong.

† Governor of Holland.

BOOK X.

1572.

non ; and the Spaniards had little prospect of being able to carry their point soon. In the mean time, two of the boldest leaders of the exiles sallied out with a part of the soldiers from the opposite gate, and marching along the dykes to the place where Bossut had left his ships, they burnt some of them, sunk others, set the rest adrift, and then returned safe to the city. When the Spaniards were advertised of this disaster, and perceived the water round them rising higher and higher, they were struck with a sudden panic, and betook themselves with the utmost precipitation to the shore. Most of them made their escape to the opposite coast in some vessels, which the enemy had not time either to let loose or to destroy ; and others, by swimming till they reached the ships that had been set adrift ; while a considerable number was swallowed up in the mud and water. Had they been pursued by the enemy, they must all have perished. But La Marck, who was doubtful of the affections of the citizens, thought it dangerous to quit the town, lest they should shut the gates, and turn his own artillery against him.

FROM this success, the protestants derived an increase both of strength and courage. The citizens declared openly in their favour, and they were immediately joined by numbers who flocked to them from all parts of the island. The names of the inhabitants were registered ; and they all swore allegiance to the prince of Orange, as the only legal governor of Holland ; engaging to defend the town and island in *his* name, and that of the king, against the duke of Alva and the Spaniards¹.

THEIR

¹ This first victory of the protestants was sullied by that savage ferocity, of which there are many instances in the present war. The Monks knowing how obnoxious they were to the conquerors, endeavoured to make their escape from the island ;
but

THEIR example quickly diffused the spirit by which they were actuated, and served as a signal of revolt to other places. Of this the count De Bossut soon received a convincing proof. Having with great difficulty passed over from Vorn to Beyerland, he led his troops towards Dort, where he intended to refresh them after the fatigue which they had undergone. But the inhabitants having heard of his repulse at the Brille, and dreading, that he might compel them to pay the taxes, they resolved, whatever should be the consequence, to refuse him admittance into the city. As he was not in a condition to employ force, he marched directly to Rotterdam.

Book X.
1572.

THERE too he found the people equally averse from the admission of the Spaniards; but after assuring the magistrates that he meant only to lead them through the town, and not to lodge them in it, he persuaded them to suffer the several companies to pass through it, one by one. The magistrates had reason quickly to repent of this concession. No sooner had the first company entered the city, than Bossut, without regard to his engagement, ordered them to keep the gates open, till the other companies should arrive. The citizens reproached him with his treachery, and attempted to shut the gates by force. He had hitherto been held in esteem for his moderation; but, being chagrined on this occasion, by the miscarriage of his attempt against the protestants in Brille, and incensed by the affront which had been offered

Bossut's
massacre of
the people
of Rotterdam.

but they were seized in their flight, treated in the most cruel and contumelious manner, and afterwards put to death. The exiles were too much inflamed by the barbarous treatment which they themselves had received, to distinguish between the innocent and the guilty, or to listen either to the dictates of humanity, or of that religion for which they professed such ardent zeal. Having been treated as wild beasts by their enemies, they had now become such, and tore in pieces every thing that fell in their way.

offered him, first by the people of Dort, and since by those of Rotterdam, he resolved to wreak his vengeance upon the latter, and shewed his soldiers what he wished them to do, by killing with his own hand one of the citizens, who was endeavouring to shut the gate. His troops, eager to follow this example, drew their swords, attacked the city-guards, slew some of them, and drove the rest out of the city; then giving a loose to their fury, they spread themselves over the town, and butchered more than three hundred of the inhabitants^r.

THIS shocking deed was no less impolitic, than it was savage and barbarous; and added fuel to that flame which Bossut, as governor of the province, ought to have been at the utmost pains to extinguish. It required but little discernment to perceive the necessity of employing the mildest expedients with the maritime provinces. There were no citadels or Spanish garrisons in the towns of these provinces. The soldiers who had been quartered in them, had been drawn off at different times, for the punishment of the people of Utrecht. The situation of most of the towns, surrounded by the sea, or by the rivers and canals, rendered it extremely difficult to besiege them; and the protestants, who could have easy access by water to every part of the country, were greatly superior to the Spaniards in naval force. The people were not ignorant of these advantages; and they resolved to avail themselves of them on the present occasion. The massacre at Rotterdam made them regard Bossut and the Spaniards with horror; and even those who wished to maintain their allegiance to the king of Spain, were determined to guard against the entrance of his troops within their walls, with the same vigilance which they would have employed against an open foe.

THIS

^r Meursii Auriacus, p. 75. Bentivoglio, p. 91.

THIS spirit appeared first at Flushing; which, on account of its situation near the mouth of the Scheld, has long been reckoned one of the most important towns in the Netherlands. Among the last instructions which the emperor delivered to his son, when he resigned his dominions, he advised him to make this place an object of his particular care, and to spare no expence to secure it against the attempts of his enemies. Alva had not bestowed that attention on it, which a place of so much consequence deserved. He had weakened the garrison, by ordering all of them but eighty Walloon soldiers, to take up their quarters in Utrecht. The loss of the Brille, which was owing to the same cause, had made him sensible of his error. He now therefore resolved to finish a citadel at Flushing, of which he had laid the foundation some time before; and with this view he ordered eight companies of Spaniards to go there, under the command of an experienced officer. The citizens beheld the chains which were thus forging for them, with deep concern. They dreaded the consequences which might arise to their trade. They were not entirely free from apprehensions of being treated in the same manner as the people of Utrecht and Rotterdam. They doubted not that, sooner or later, the garrison, which was about to be stationed in the town, would be employed to compel them to make payment of the taxes; and they were emboldened by the success of the protestants in the isle of Vorn. While their minds were in this agitation, there arrived among them some partisans of the prince of Orange, who had come on purpose to exhort them to assert their liberty. Instigated by these men, the populace ran to arms, and obliged the feeble remains of the garrison to quit the city.

BOOK X.

1572.
Revolt of
Flushing.

ON the next day, the Spanish forces arrived in the harbour. The people were assembled in the

BOOK X. streets, and upon the walls; and were still in some
 1572. measure unresolved as to their future conduct. The protestants, and other friends of the prince of Orange, remonstrated to them on the absurdity of hesitating, after they had begun hostilities. "By expelling the garrison," cried one of them, "you have already done what the Spaniards will undoubtedly interpret to be high treason against their king. Consider well to whose mercy you expose yourselves. Remember the fate of the counts Horn and Egmont, and consider whether either your merit or your innocence has equalled theirs." The protestants employed another method to impress the minds of the vulgar. They caused proclamation to be made by sound of trumpet, that the Spanish garrison was at hand, and that all the citizens must hold their effects, their wives and daughters, in readiness for their use^a.

WHEN men are balancing between contrary resolutions, the smallest weight is sufficient sometimes to turn the scale. A man in liquor, who had mingled with the crowd, offered for a small reward to fire one of the great guns upon the Spaniards; and he did it accordingly, on receiving three guilders from one of the protestants who stood near him. From that instant, the people were fixed in their purpose. The Spaniards, astonished at their reception, and utterly unprepared to employ force, let slip their cables, and sailed for Middleburg.

IN that city resided Anthony de Burgoine, lord of Wackené, the governor of the province; who, as soon as he was informed of what had happened, set out for Flushing, and on his arrival there, having called together all the inhabitants into the most public part of the town, he employed every argument addressed to their hopes and fears, to persuade

^a Reidanus, p. 10.

suade them to return to their allegiance. But they could not listen now to any thing but the passions by which they were inflamed. Their abhorrence of the Spanish tyranny was now wrought up to the greatest height ; and the governor, apprehensive of danger from their unbridled fury, immediately left the town.

Book X.
1572.

SOON after his departure they pulled up the foundations of the new citadel, and drove out the persons to whom the charge of building it had been committed. In a few days afterwards they gave a still stronger proof of their resolution never to return under the Spanish government. Don Pedro Pacheco, who had been appointed governor of Flushing, having been detained some days behind the troops, was ignorant of what had passed, and entered the harbour under a belief that his soldiers were in the town to receive him. The people ran to arms, and having seized and plundered his ship, they cast him and his attendants into prison. Among papers which were found in his possession, it is said, that they met with evidence of his having come with a design to exercise in Flushing the wonted tyranny of the Spaniards ; and this discovery, added to the circumstance of his being nearly related to the duke of Alva, prompted them to form the barbarous resolution of putting him to death. He offered to pay them a rich ransom for his life, and to remain their prisoner ; but they rejected his proposal. He then begged that they would respect the nobility of his birth, and put him to death by the sword, rather than by the halter. Even this request was denied him. Their minds were grown savage, from the bloody scenes which had of late been so often acted before them ; and they rejoiced in the opportunity which they possessed of wrecking their vengeance on the duke of Alva, by inflicting a disgraceful punishment on his kinsman.

Book X.

1572.

THEY were aware of the consequences with which this conduct, so violent and hostile, must be attended; and, as they knew that it would quickly draw upon them the whole weight of the governor's resentment, they omitted nothing in their power to secure themselves against it. They laboured incessantly to strengthen their fortifications. They imported privately from Antwerp, ammunition and provisions, which they laid up in store; and they applied to the prince of Orange, and to the protestants in France and England for assistance. Some troops were immediately sent them from France, by count Lewis of Nassau; and five hundred Flemish exiles came from England, who were soon afterwards followed by two hundred Scotch and English volunteers, under the command of two adventurers, Morgan and Balfour. Their fleet received an augmentation where they did not expect it. The duke of Alva having, some months before, fitted out a number of vessels to cruise upon the coast, the commanders of these vessels now declared in favour of the party which they had hitherto opposed; and, setting sail from Flushing, enlisted under the banners of the count de Tserart, to whom the prince of Orange had given the chief command of all the forces in the province.

Revolt of
other towns
in Zealand.

TSERART soon found himself possessed of sufficient strength, not only to defend Flushing, but likewise to attempt the reduction of the other towns in Zealand. With most of these towns, there was very little occasion for employing force. The inhabitants of Campvere, Armuyden, and some other places, were no less inclined to revolt than the people of Flushing; and in a few days the whole province, except Middleburg and the castle of Rammekins, declared against the Spanish government, and received garrisons from Tserart.

IN Middleburg too, the greatest part of the inhabitants would gladly have followed the example of the other towns; but they were over-awed by the garrison. Tserart laid siege to this city, and expected soon to have got possession of it. The garrison was weak, and as the exiles were masters at sea, he hoped, by their means, to intercept any reinforcement which might be sent from the continent. The duke of Alva was sensible of the great importance of the place, and resolved, if possible, to relieve it. For this purpose, he ordered Sancio D'Avila, one of his bravest officers, to carry thither a thousand select soldiers, partly Walloons and partly Spaniards, whom he mingled together, as he did on many occasions afterwards, that he might the more effectually excite their emulation; and to these a great number of officers and persons of rank joined as volunteers, that they might partake of the glory of so dangerous an enterprise.

Book X.
1572.
The siege of
Middleburg.

D'AVILA left Bergen-op-zoom in the end of April, and had a prosperous navigation down the Scheld. He was desirous to land his troops on the nearest part of the island, as from thence he would have had the shortest march to Middleburg. But the enemy having received intelligence of his design, had drawn together a powerful fleet to oppose him. He was obliged therefore to keep out to sea on the north side of the island, and to fetch a compass round, till he came to that part of it which is washed by the ocean. The landing there was difficult by reason of the flats and shallows, which made it necessary for him to march a great way in the water; but, as he met with no opposition from the enemy, he at last brought his men all safe on shore. Then having immediately set out with a chosen band, to examine the situation of the enemy, and having found that, trusting to the fleet, they had taken no precaution for their defence,

Book X. fence, he ordered all his forces to advance. They
 1572. ran forward to the attack with the utmost impetuosity. The besiegers were overwhelmed with astonishment. The garrison at the same time sallied out upon them from the city. They abandoned their trenches almost without resistance; and being hemmed in on every side, all of them, except a few, who escaped to Flushing and Campvere, were put to the sword^t.

Raised by
 D'Avila.

IN this manner was the siege of Middleburg raised. But as the protestants still retained their superiority at sea, they hoped, that by surrounding the island with their ships, and intercepting the supplies which might be sent to it, they should soon be able to compel the garrison to surrender. Their fleet consisted of no less than one hundred and fifty armed vessels, manned with sailors who were much more expert than any whom the duke of Alva could procure. Their maritime enterprises were for this reason almost always attended with success, and they did incredible mischief to the Spaniards at sea; while at land, having only raw troops to oppose to regular and well-disciplined forces, they were seldom able to look them in the face.

Success of
 the exiles
 at sea.
 July 10th.

AT this time, when the sea was covered with their ships, and almost every entrance to the ports of the Low-Countries blocked up, the duke of Medina-cœli arrived upon the coast. This nobleman had been sent by Philip to succeed the duke of Alva, who, on account of his health, had applied for liberty to return to Spain. Medina-cœli had brought with him fifty ships, having two thousand Spanish soldiers on board; but as he knew nothing of the late transactions in the maritime provinces, and had no suspicion that the protestants possessed

^t Bentivoglio, p. 93.

PHILIP I KING OF SPAIN.

possessed such a number of ships, that he sent out a fleet of twenty ships, which the duke of Parma intended to send to Middleburg, with muskets, pikes, and gunpowder for the use of the garrison. The duke himself went on board one of the ships, and the ships, with the articles which they contained, were valued at five hundred thousand

There were besides him in his fleet about a fleet of twenty ships, which the duke of Parma intended to send to Middleburg, with muskets, pikes, and gunpowder for the use of the garrison. The duke himself went on board one of the ships, and the ships, with the articles which they contained, were valued at five hundred thousand

Another fleet, fitted out for the same purpose at Sittes, was equally numerous. The Zealanders being informed by their parents of the destination of this fleet, and of the time fixed for its departure, took three ships on the coast near between Sittes and the side of Walcheren, and had the courage to pursue the rest into the harbour of Rammekins, where, notwithstanding the fire of the garrison, they took some, and burnt the rest.

THEY were not so successful in their next adventure. It had been the chief object of their desire for some time, to make themselves masters of Middleburg; because, while that city remained in the hands of the Spaniards, the whole island was subject to perpetual alarms. They had, as we have just now seen, defeated several attempts which the duke of Alva made to introduce supplies, and now the town of Tergoes was the only channel by which

Book X.

1572.

which they could be conveyed. Tergoes is the capital of South Beveland, and was defended at this time by a garrison of eight hundred Walloons and Spaniards, under the command of Isidore Pacheco, a Spanish officer.

Siege of
Tergoes.

towards the
end of Sum-
mer.

To this town Tserart, general of the Zealanders, had, some time after his repulse from Middleburg, laid siege; but upon a false report of the approach of the Spaniards, he had hastily raised the siege, and left the island. He now returned to it, with an army of near eight thousand men, most of whom were German, French, and English protestants.

As the garrison was no match in the field for so great a force, Tserart had landed in the island without opposition, and, having immediately invested the town, he pressed forward the siege with great vigour. The besieged made several brisk sallies to retard his approach; but notwithstanding their most vigorous efforts, Tserart had opened his batteries, and made some breaches in the wall. The siege had lasted for several weeks, and Pacheco began to perceive that it would not be possible for him to hold out much longer.

Of this he had given early notice to the duke of Alva; nor was the duke less intent upon relieving him, than he had reason to expect. The distinguished bravery of the garrison and their commander; the reproach which would accompany the suffering them to fall a prey to the enemy; above all, the great importance of the place, the loss of which would draw after it that of Middleburg, and the whole province of Zealand; these considerations excited all the governor's attention, and determined him to apply with ardour to prepare the succour which Pacheco had solicited. He ordered several regiments of his best troops to assemble

nable from different quarters at Bergen-op-Book X.
 n, from whence there is a short run down the
 eld to Beveland. He likewise sent thither a suf-
 ent number of transports with stores of ammu- 1572.
 on and provisions; and appointed D'Avila and
 ndragone * to conduct them to the garrison of
 goes.

THESE men exerted themselves strenuously in
 execution of the trust that was committed to
 n; and attempted several times to force their
 through the enemy's fleet. But the Zea-
 ders watched their motions so attentively, were
 much more expert in sailing, and possessed a na-
 force so much superior to theirs, that all their
 empts were baffled; and, to save their ships
 n being sunk, they were frequently obliged to
 urn, without being able to effectuate their pur-
 e. D'Avila once flattered himself that he had
 covered an expedient that would prove success-
 He planted batteries of cannon along the
 lks of the Scheld; hoping to keep the enemy at
 listance from the shore, and thus to give Mon-
 gone, with the troops, an opportunity of pas-
 3. But the event did not answer his expectation.
 e banks were wet, and would not allow of his
 ning near enough to annoy the enemy.

He planted batteries of cannon along the
 lks of the Scheld; hoping to keep the enemy at
 listance from the shore, and thus to give Mon-
 gone, with the troops, an opportunity of pas-
 3. But the event did not answer his expectation.
 e banks were wet, and would not allow of his
 ning near enough to annoy the enemy.

THE Spanish general began to despair of being Plumart's
 e to execute their design, when Plumart, a na- proposal for
 e of the province, but zealously attached to the raising the
 inish interest, proposed another method of trans- siege.
 ferring the forces, which at first appeared imprac-
 able, although it was afterwards embraced. In
 ler to form a clear conception of Plumart's pro-
 sal, it is necessary to attend to the situation of
 the

* Two of his most experienced officers.

BOOK X. the country, and the change which some years before it had undergone. The isle of South Beveland, to which the Spanish general found it so difficult to transport their troops, is only seven miles distant from a tract of land, to which they could have had easy access from Bergen-op-zoom. This tract of land, which is divided from Brabant by the Eastern Scheld and from Flanders by the Hondt, or Western Scheld, was once a part of Beveland, and was separated from it by a dreadful inundation in the year one thousand, five hundred and thirty-two; when the sea broke down the dykes, and burst violently across the island, cutting off from it the corner which lay nearest to Brabant, and covering it from north to south, that is from the Eastern to the Western Scheld, with water, which the inhabitants were never able to exclude. The space overflowed was, at the narrowest, seven Italian miles broad. It could not be crossed in boats even at high-water, by reason of the flats and shallows; and at low water it was thought unfordable, on account of the miry bottom, and the channels of several rivulets, which many persons still remember to have seen in it, before it was overflowed.

It was there, however, that Plumart thought it practicable for the troops to pass over on foot, to the relief of the garrison of Tergoes; and he offered to lead the way, and conduct them in their passage. The character of the man, whose prudence and fidelity were well-known to the commanders, was the only circumstance that prevented them from regarding his proposal as chimerical. No person had ever attempted to pass that way before. They themselves were unacquainted with the face of the country before the inundation. They only knew the length of space over which the troops must pass; and no troops, they believed,

ed, would be able to support the fatigue of so long ^{Book X}
a march in water, and perhaps too in mud and
clay. Besides, that, by accidents which could not
be foreseen, they might be retarded in their pas- ¹⁵⁷²
sage, till they were overtaken by the rising tide,
and buried in the waves; and, even although this
should not happen, yet the enemy might be ap-
prised of their design, and be ready to fall upon
them, as soon as they should reach the land.

PLUMART was not discouraged by these ob-
jections. He desired that no mention might be
made of his proposal, till he should know with cer-
tainty whether there was not in reality such a ford
as he imagined. He then went to make the trial,
accompanied by two Spaniards, and a peasant who
was well acquainted with the face of the country
before the inundation. He found the ford which
he sought for; arrived safe on the other side, and
returned, without encountering any greater diffi-
culties than he expected.

D'AVILA and Mondragone did not hesitate after
this to comply with his advice. They immediate-
ly prepared a number of small bags, which they
filled with buiscuit, gunpowder and matches; and
transported three thousand of the best troops, Ger-
mans, Walloons, and Spaniards, from Bergen-op-
zoom to Agger, a village which lies near the en-
trance of the ford. Mondragone took upon him-
self the conducting of this extraordinary expediti-
on. When the time proper for entering upon it
was arrived, he ordered the troops to advance to-
wards the ford; and having distributed the bags
among them, he then disclosed his intention; gave
them an account of the discovery which had been
made by Plumart and his companions; and repre-
sented the glory which they would acquire by per-
forming, in the service of the church and of the
king,

BOOK X. king, such an exploit as had never been atchieved
 1572. by any army in the world before. The soldiers,
 full of that intrepid spirit by which the Spanish
 troops were so highly distinguished in the present
 war, and proud of being selected from their com-
 panions for so dangerous an enterprize, received
 this unexpected information with every symptom
 of joy, and called out to Mondragone to lead them
 forward without delay.

THAT they might have the more time for their
 passage, they began to enter the water when the
 sea was going back. The Spaniards, with Plumart
 and Mondragone at their head, marched first, the
 Germans next, and last of all the Walloons. They
 were ordered to keep as close as possible to each
 other, that they might the more easily succour one
 another, if any of them should fall into deeper wa-
 ter, or be entangled in the mud. They were not
 without apprehensions of the tide returning upon
 them, and therefore they moved forward as fast as
 the surrounding element and the slimy bottom
 would allow. Nine men only perished through
 fatigue, or their neglect of the order which had
 been given them to keep close to their companions.
 All the rest arrived safe at the dyke of Yerslick-
 en, a village only four miles distant from Tergoes.
 There Mondragone ordered them to repose them-
 selves during the night, and resolved to lead them,
 at break of day, to the relief of the besieged.

BUT he had already done all that was necessary
 for this purpose, and had no occasion to expose ei-
 ther himself or his men to further danger. When
 the besiegers were informed of his arrival, they
 were filled with consternation. Under that amaze-
 ment into which they were thrown by so unexpect-
 ed an event, they regarded the Spaniards as more
 than men. They did not take time to enquire
 into

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

317

Book X.

1572

into their number ; but having immediately raised the siege, they left their baggage and artillery behind them, and betook themselves precipitately to the shore. Eight hundred were killed in their flight by the garrison, and many more perished in the water, in attempting to get on board their ships. Mondragone then entered Tergoes ; where he was received by the garrison, with every demonstration of gratitude for their deliverance ; and, having remained there till he had given directions for strengthening the fortifications of the place, he left a part of his troops with the governor, and returned with the rest to Brabant, to join the duke of Alva¹.

¹ Bentivoglio, p. 110. Meursii Auriacus, p. 89.



THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK XI.

WHILE the transactions that have been related passed in Zealand, the same spirit of revolt, by which the people of that province were actuated, made rapid progress in some of the other provinces. The inhabitants of Enchuyfen were the first in North Holland who had the courage to plant the standard of liberty upon their walls; and those of Medinblinc, Edam, Purmerend, and other towns, quickly followed the example. In some of these places, part of the people were averse from this resolution; but these were few, compared with their opponents, and were obliged either to yield to the majority, or to secure themselves by flight from their resentment.

Book XI.

1572.
The revolt
of Holland.

THE same measures were pursued, at the same time, in the southern parts of the province. That flame which had been kindled some time before, burst out at once in a thousand different places. And in a few months, Leyden, Gouda, Dort, Harlem,

Book XI. ¹⁵⁷² Amster-
 erlem, and all the other towns in Holland, Am-
 ster-
 dam excepted, had openly declared against the
 Spaniards, and avowed their resolution to acknow-
 ledge no other authority in future, but that of the
 prince of Orange, and the States. The same re-
 solution was formed in several of the cities of Ove-
 ryssel, Friesland, and Utrecht.

THIS revolution, so favourable to William's views, was not a little promoted by intrigues, which, although he himself was absent, were carried on in his name, and by his authority. In letters to the principal inhabitants he had allured them to his interest, by flattering them with the hopes of having all their privileges secured; of enjoying full freedom to exercise their religion, whether protestant or catholic; and of being for ever delivered from that oppressive load of taxes with which they had been overwhelmed. In order to enforce these exhortations, he sent his agents throughout the provinces; and most of these were persons either of great address, or of great authority and influence among the people ^a.

His milita-
 ry prepara-
 tions.

WILLIAM'S military preparations were at this time far advanced, and he hoped soon to begin his march, with the probability of a more prosperous issue than had attended his former expedition. He had already collected a formidable army of well-disciplined forces. Considerable sums had been transmitted to him by the friends of his cause; and the strongest assurances had been

^a In Holland, the revolution was chiefly owing to the activity of Sonoy, whom the prince had sent thither as governor-substitute, till he himself should arrive: and in Guelderland, Utrecht, and Friesland, to the count of Bag, a nobleman of interest in those parts, who was married to William's sister, and acted in every thing by his direction.

been given him, that some of the principal cities in the southern provinces would open their gates to receive him. But no circumstance contributed more to inspire him with a confidence of success, than the new measures which, a little before the present period, had been embraced by the court of France.

Book XI.
1572.

IN the bloody contest, which had subsisted for several years between the catholics and protestants in that kingdom, the former had generally been victorious. But the latter, roused by their leaders, aided by foreign powers, animated by zeal for their religion, and inflamed with resentment on account of the cruel persecutions which had been exercised against them, continued to make such vigorous efforts, as created in their enemies the most alarming apprehensions with regard to the issue of the war. The court had, at different times, offered them advantageous terms of accommodation ; and peace had oftener than once been established between the contending parties. But their pretensions, their interests, and their religious principles, were incompatible ; and they remained quiet only till they were in a condition to renew hostilities. The court never had more reason to entertain hopes of being able to extirpate their opponents, than towards the end of the year one thousand five hundred and sixty-nine. Their brave and active leader, the prince of Condé, had been killed in the battle of Jarnac ; they had afterwards received a dreadful overthrow in the battle of Montcontour ; and the admiral Coligni, with the young princes of Bourbon, had been obliged to retire, with the feeble remains of their shattered army, to the mountains of Gascony and Languedoc. There, however, they exerted themselves strenuously in making preparations for trying once more the fortune of war ; and in a few months, they

The affairs
of France.

BOOK XI. drew together a force sufficient to enable them to
 1572. leave their retreat, and to enter the lists against
 the royal army.

Queen-
 mother's
 plot against
 the protest-
 ants.

WHEN intelligence of this was brought to the queen-mother, who exercised at that time an unlimited authority in the government, she was equally exasperated and alarmed; and she resolved to employ other means than open force, to be avenged upon her enemies. She communicated her plan only to the king, the duke of Anjou, the cardinal of Lorraine, the duke of Guise, and Alberto Gondi, count of Retz; who all engaged to maintain the most inviolable secrecy. Time only brought to light their dark design. The protestants, they now believed, were not to be overcome by the force of arms; and it was resolved to have recourse to fraud and circumvention.

IN pursuance of this plan, a new treaty with the princes of Navarre and the admiral was set on foot, and soon afterwards concluded at St. Germain. By this treaty, the protestants received a free pardon of all their past offences, with liberty to make public profession of the reformed religion; and the princes and admiral were allowed, for their security, to retain possession of Rochelle, Cognac, La Charité, or Montauban, on condition, that if the articles of the peace were observed, these places should be delivered to the king within the space of two years from the date of the present pacification.

THE protestant leaders entertained the same distrust of the sincerity of the king and queen-mother in this, as in all their former negotiations. They were still afraid of putting themselves in their power, and remained at a distance from court, in the places of strength which had been assigned them. In order to remove their suspicions, every species of
 artifice

artifice was employed All the articles of the peace were punctually fulfilled. Strict orders were issued to allow the protestants in all places to celebrate openly their religious assemblies; and in all the disputes which happened between the catholics and them, the latter were treated with indulgence, while the former had, on many occasions, reason to complain of injustice or severity. Charles embraced every opportunity to express the pleasure which he now enjoyed, in having restored tranquillity to his kingdom; and even when none but zealous catholics were present, he often declared how unalterably fixed his purpose was, to perform, with strict fidelity, his engagements with the protestants. He had sufficiently experienced the folly of attempting to subdue mens consciences by force; and no consideration would make him return to his former unhappy measures; which he had found to be no less ineffectual for accomplishing the end intended, than they were destructive of his own repose, and pernicious to his subjects. All his counsellors, except those who were partners in the bloody secret, believed him to be sincere; and, by the accounts which they gave of his discourse, added to the displeasure which they expressed at his change of conduct, they contributed to complete the delusion of the protestants. The admiral, however, still retained his wonted diffidence; and when urged by the king to come to court, and receive in person every proof that could be given him of sincere attachment, he declared, that it was impossible for him to think himself secure, where his mortal enemies of the family of Guise were possessed of so much power.

To have gratified the admiral by so great a concession as the immediate removal of the Guises, Charles knew would have had a suspicious aspect; and therefore he went no further at this time, than to assure him that his fears were groundless, and

BOOK XI. that his enemies were not masters as formerly. But soon after the duke of Guise and his brother left the court, seemingly much disgusted with the measures which were there pursued. At the same time, other means of delusion were employed, more likely to produce the desired effect. Charles offered his sister in marriage to the King of Navarre; and an ambassador was sent to England, to negotiate a match between the duke of Anjou and queen Elizabeth. But of all the instruments of deceit which he employed, there was none more efficacious, than the declaration which he made of his resolution to enter into war with the king of Spain. Philip had refused, he said, to grant him reparation for certain injuries which his subjects had received from the Spaniards in America; and he was determined to take vengeance on that prince, by invading his dominions in the Netherlands. He offered the command of the army, which he talked of sending thither, to the admiral, and assured him that he would be entirely governed by his counsels, and those of the prince of Orange and count Lewis, in carrying on the war.

No proposal could be better calculated than this to blind the admiral's penetration. Conscious of superior military talents, he was naturally fond of war; sincere in his profession of the reformed religion, he was zealous to propagate and defend it; and he was strongly attached by sympathy of manners, as well as religious principles, to the princes of Nassau. Count Lewis was with him at Rochelle, when the proposal was delivered, and he contributed not a little to banish from his mind the remains of those suspicions, which he still retained of the king's sincerity. Soon afterwards they both set out for Paris, where they were received and treated with so much esteem and confidence,

as gave the admiral a full conviction that the sentiments both of the king and the queen-mother were in reality what they seemed. Book IX.
1572.

CHARLES thought it necessary for his purpose to wear the mask for some time longer ; and as he found that nothing had served so effectually to lull the admiral's suspicions as this last device, he affected to be extremely solicitous about making preparations for the war ; and in the mean time desired count Lewis to repair to the frontiers of the Netherlands, to communicate his design to the malcontents, and to hold them in readiness for the admiral's arrival with the troops. There was nothing farther from his intention than to begin hostilities. But no sooner were the Huguenots informed of the design on which count Lewis had set out, than great numbers of them, prompted by their religious zeal, and by the restless military spirit of the age, flocked after him, and offered to assist him in any enterprise he should undertake.

LEWIS was himself of too active a temper to suffer them to remain long without employment. It was of the utmost consequence, he knew, towards the success of that expedition on which his brother was about to enter, as well as of the French invasion of the Netherlands, to acquire possession early of some fortified town in the frontier provinces. With this view he had maintained a secret correspondence with some of the inhabitants of Mons ; and he made himself master of that important city by the following stratagem.

HAVING left the confines of France, he arrived in the evening with five hundred horse and a thousand musqueteers at a wood in the neighbourhood of Mons, whence he sent forward ten or twelve of his soldiers, whom he selected on account of their superior address and resolution. They entered

Book XI. 1572. tered Mons in the evening, and lodged together in the same inn. They gave out that they were dealers in wine; informed their host, that their servants were bringing a quantity of that liquor, and inquired at what hour the gate of the city, by which it was to be brought in, would be opened. They were told, that, for a small reward, the keeper would open it at any time. And early next morning, having bribed the keeper to open it, they seized upon the keys, and dispersed the guards. Count Lewis, who was at hand with a hundred horse, immediately rushed in, and having taken possession of the gate, with a part of his troops, he traversed the principal streets of the city with the rest, and proclaimed to the inhabitants, that he was not come as an enemy, but as a friend; and that the prince of Orange was approaching with a powerful army, to assert their liberty, and to deliver them from all those oppressive taxes which had been imposed upon them by the duke of Alva.

ALL the citizens still remained within their houses, except a few who were privy to his design; but he began to grow uneasy when he reflected on the small number of men that were with him, and to wonder that the rest of his troops were not come forward. It was to no purpose, he knew, to attempt keeping possession of so great a town with so small a force. He rode out therefore as fast as he could towards the place where he had left his troops, who had lost their way, and were wandering in the wood. He conducted them immediately to the city; not without anxiety, lest he should find the gate shut against him on his return. But such was the consternation of the citizens, and their ignorance of what had passed, that none of them had ventured to stir without their houses.

The

The gate was still open, and every thing in the town as quiet and motionless as when he left it. He then placed his guards at the several gates, and on the ramparts; and calling the magistrates together, explained to them his own, and his brother's designs; giving them the strongest assurances that no violence should be committed by his soldiers. After which he commanded such of the citizens as he could not trust, to deliver up their arms; and ordered all of them to proceed as formerly in the pursuit of their customary occupations. His troops did not amount to more than fifteen hundred men; but he soon acquired a much greater force by the addition of many protestants, who hastened to his assistance from Picardy and Champaign ^b.

BOOK XI.

1572.

THE loss of Mons affected the duke of Alva in the most sensible manner; and it gave him the greater uneasiness and concern, as it was altogether unexpected. Being no stranger to count Lewis's enterprising genius, he had kept an anxious eye upon all his motions, during his abode in France; especially after the peace of St. Germain's, and the kind reception he had met with from the king. The latest account which he had received of him from his spies at Paris was, that he was playing at tennis; by which piece of intelligence, they meant to insinuate that he was more attentive to amusement, than to any serious pursuit. When the duke therefore was informed of his success at Mons, he discovered the utmost impatience and chagrin. In the rage which it excited in him, throwing down his hat, and trampling upon it, "I have been deceived," he cried, "by a Tuscan woman (meaning Catherine of Medicis) but ere long,

^b Bentivoglio, p. 95. Meursii Auriacus, p. 79. Meteren, p. 95.

BOOK XI. long, instead of Tuscan lilies, she shall feel the smart of Spanish thorns."

1572.

HIS vexation was much increased by his knowledge of the great importance of the place which he had lost. He considered that Mons was not only the capital of the province of Hainault, but one of the largest and most populous cities in the Low-Countries; that, being situated in a marshy soil, it might easily be rendered impregnable; that although it was not in the line of the barrier towns, yet it was removed at so small a distance from the frontier, that the possession of it must greatly facilitate the entrance of foreign troops into the provinces; and that either the French king, whose conduct had for some time past had so hostile an appearance, or the prince of Orange, could easily furnish it with supplies.

THESE considerations made him resolve to attempt the recovery of it without delay; but while he was making the preparations necessary for this purpose, he received intelligence of the revolution in Holland; and at the same time was informed, that the prince of Orange, having already collected a numerous army, was about to begin his march. Alva, far from shrinking at the view of so many impending dangers, exerted himself with great activity and vigour to repel them. He carried on his levies with the utmost diligence, and in a very short time found himself possessed of between five and six thousand German horse and eighteen thousand foot of the same nation; besides fifty companies of Spaniards, and one hundred and fifty of Walloons, and other natives of the Netherlands. He would gladly have sent a part of these forces to recover the revolted cities in the maritime provinces, and the rest to the siege of Mons; but when he reflected

on

on the difficulty which he must encounter in either of these two enterprises, he apprehended that his army, numerous as it was, could not with safety be divided. He resolved therefore to employ it, whole and entire, against his enemies on one hand of him, before he should turn it to the other.

Book XL
1572.

STILL, however, he remained in great perplexity, finding it difficult to determine whether it was most expedient to begin with the siege of Mons, or the recovery of the maritime provinces. And to assist him in deciding this important question, he called a council of his principal officers; when the marquis of Vitelli, one of the first in rank, as well as in military merit, advised him earnestly to begin with the latter, and supported his opinion by observing, "That although the interior provinces were liable to be invaded from the side of France or Germany, yet it would not be difficult to recover whatever cities should be lost in those provinces, as the inhabitants were in general more loyal than those of Holland and Zealand, and much less infected with the spirit of innovation in religion. That the Huguenots under count Lewis were destitute of means to support themselves, and must soon be dispersed; for he could not be persuaded that the French king, who had hitherto shewn so much zeal for the true religion, would ever debase himself so far, as to favour the attempts of his rebellious subjects to subvert it. The German forces under the prince of Orange, undisciplined and tumultuary, were actuated in their present warfare, by no other motives but those of pay and plunder. And if they were disappointed in their expectation of these, there was little ground to doubt that they would choose rather to return home, after taking vengeance on their leaders, than expose themselves to the fatigue and danger of besieging towns and fortresses.

Book XI. fortresses. We may therefore, without anxiety," continued he, "put off the siege of Mons, and the defence of the inland frontier, till a more convenient season shall arrive. But the state of the maritime provinces admits not of the least delay. The people there are universally infected with heresy. They have conceived a degree of phrenzy, and indulged themselves in the most extravagant excesses against the church and the king. Their situation, strong by nature, will soon be rendered impregnable. Every passage of a river and canal will require an army to force it, and every siege, a campaign to finish it. By the sea, and by the rivers, they can be always richly furnished with provisions; they can every hour receive succour from France, Germany, or England; and will be able, by their naval force, to prevent the king's army from receiving supplies from Spain. It is there too, the prince of Orange, for many years, was governor. There he possesses several large estates; and he has formed there numerous and close connexions with persons of the greatest influence in the country. As it was in these provinces he first erected the standard of rebellion, it is in them he intends to fix the seat of that usurped dominion which he is so ambitious to maintain. Let us attack our enemy first in his strong hold; and when we have driven them from thence, we shall find it much easier to prevent him from establishing himself in any other quarter."

SUCH were the reasons which Vitelli gave for advising the duke of Alva to postpone the siege of Mons; and, if his advice had been followed, it is probable that the republic of the United Provinces would never have been formed. The people had not yet had time to put the cities into a proper state of defence; and they could not have long resisted so great a force as the duke of Alva might have

have employed to subdue them. Amsterdam and Middleburg were still unshaken in their allegiance. With the ships belonging to these two wealthy cities, and those which he would have received from Spain, a fleet might have been equipped superior to that of the protestants; who must have been soon reduced to the necessity of submitting to whatever terms Philip might have thought fit to impose.

Book XI.
1572.

No such pernicious consequences as those which were foretold by Vitelli, could have followed from allowing the enemy to remain for some time in possession of Mons; nor even from the conquest which the prince of Orange might have made of other places. In an open country, such as the interior provinces, the fate of towns must depend entirely on the number and discipline of the armies employed to attack or defend them; and in both these respects, the duke of Alva had reason to believe that he would be at all times able to maintain his superiority; especially if, by first reducing the maritime provinces, he could keep open his communication by sea with Spain.

BUT it is infinitely easier for men to judge concerning matters of such nice deliberation, after the event has happened, than when they are about to enter upon action. It ought to be considered, that Alva had not yet experienced the difficulties attending the siege of towns, situated in a country so much intersected by the sea, by rivers, and canals, as the maritime provinces; and could not foresee those amazing exertions which the people made, first in their preparations for war, and afterwards in the defence of their cities when attacked. He had likewise reason to entertain suspicions of the hostile intentions of the French king. He dreaded the havock which would be made by the
army

Book XI. { army of the prince of Orange, in the richer and more fertile provinces; and thought it would bring an indelible stain upon his honour, if he did not endeavour to prevent it. Besides these motives, it is not improbable, considering the natural violence of his temper, that he was in some degree influenced, in the resolution which he formed, by his personal jealousy of the prince of Orange, and his desire of disappointing a second time the attempts of one who had formerly rivalled him in the favour of his prince.

1572.

The siege
of Mons.

WHATEVER were his motives, he resolved to begin his operations with the siege of Mons; and to delay the reduction of Holland till he should disengage himself from his enemies on the southern frontier. In order to increase the number of his forces, he commanded the garrisons of Rotterdam and Delfs-haven, the only towns in Holland in which he had any garrisons left, to join him; and immediately sent off his son Frederic de Toledo, accompanied by Noircarmes and Vitelli, with a part of the troops, to form the blockade of Mons.

THE inhabitants of that city, though suspicious at first of count Lewis's intention, were now well satisfied with his government, and were solicitous to provide for their defence against the Spaniards. They assisted him with great alacrity in completing their fortifications. They were active in laying in military stores and provisions; and having repeatedly sallied out for this purpose, after Toledo's arrival in their neighbourhood, they had several encounters with his troops.

LEWIS had, some time before, sent the Sieur de Jenlis to Paris, to inform the king of his success, and to solicit the speedy march of the troops which he had promised to send to his assistance.

Charles

Charles received Jenlis in the most gracious manner, affected to be extremely happy with the accounts which he had brought him, and gave him authority to levy forces; hoping that, before they could take the field, he would be able to put an end to the scene of dissimulation which he had so long been acting. But the admiral, who was allowed to exercise an unlimited power in the administration, pushed forward the levies with greater vigour than the king intended; and, in a few weeks, Jenlis was ready to set out with between four and five thousand foot and four hundred horse. The admiral and count Lewis concurred in advising him to direct his march by the way of Cambray, that he might avoid being intercepted by the enemy, and join the army of the prince of Orange. But Jenlis refused to comply with this wholesome counsel. He vainly hoped to be able, with his own forces alone, to oblige the Spaniards to quit the siege; and he wished to secure this honour to himself, rather than leave it to be reaped by the prince of Orange. Notice was sent privately to Toledo, from the court of France, of the route which he was to take, and of the time of his departure. Toledo immediately drew off his forces from the blockade, and advanced to meet him on the frontier; being desirous to engage at a distance from the town, lest count Lewis should fall out, and attack the Spaniards in the rear, when they were engaged in battle with Jenlis. Toledo had reached a village called St. Ghislain, at the distance of a few miles from Mons, when he was informed that the enemy had entered a neighbouring wood, and that upon their coming out from it he might attack them with great advantage. He ordered his cavalry to march first, and followed as fast as he was able with the infantry. The cavalry had almost reached the borders of the wood, when they perceived a hundred of the enemy's
books

Book XI. horse that had been sent before to reconnoitre. These the Spaniards instantly attacked, and drove
 1572. back into the wood, pursuing them closely till they reached the main army, which was thrown into confusion by the precipitate flight of the fugitives. In a very little time the whole Spanish army arrived, and began the attack, before Jenlis had time to draw up his men in order of battle. The French made resistance however for two hours with great bravery; but at last they gave way, and endeavoured to save themselves by flight. Upwards of twelve hundred fell on the field, and many were killed in the pursuit, partly by the Spaniards, and partly by the country people, who took cruel vengeance for the injuries which they had received from them in their march. Jenlis himself was taken prisoner, and conducted to the citadel of Antwerp; where, having died suddenly, his death was ascribed to poison. The loss sustained by the Spanish army was inconsiderable.

Alva's arrival before Mons.

TOLEDO returned to Mons in a few days after this distinguished victory; and soon after the duke of Alva arrived. This cautious general having drawn a double trench and rampart round his army, by which it was rendered secure on one side against the sallies of the besieged, and on the other, against any sudden attack that might be made upon it by the prince of Orange, he immediately erected several batteries, and began his fire in different quarters with great fury. The besieged discovered no less vigour in their defence; which was conducted with great prudence, as well as the most indefatigable activity, by count Lewis, seconded in all his operations by the celebrated La Noue, who had gained the highest honours in the civil wars of France.

BUT

BUT although the besieged displayed the utmost skill and intrepidity, they had no hopes of being able to raise the siege, without the assistance of the prince of Orange. William had already penetrated into the Low-Countries, and advanced as far as Ruremond. There he stopped, and demanded a supply of provisions for his troops. The government of the town was in the hands of zealous catholics, who not only rejected his request, but accompanied their refusal with a degree of haughtiness and insolence, by which the prince and his army were highly exasperated. There were many of the citizens, however, with whom he had formerly held intelligence. Having at this time renewed his correspondence with them, he made a brisk attack upon one of the gates. The catholics sustained it with spirit; but while they were thus employed, the protestant inhabitants snatched the opportunity, and introduced the assailants by another gate into the city. It was not then in the power of the prince of Orange to restrain the fury of his soldiers. They plundered many of the citizens, violated the churches, and put to death, with great barbarity, several priests, and other religionists. By some popish historians, William himself has been blamed on account of these enormities. But these writers seem neither to have known that he published an edict to prevent them, nor to have considered, that as he could not but perceive that violent measures were calculated to hurt his cause, by alienating the affections of the people in other cities, so his conduct, on innumerable other occasions afterwards, furnishes the strongest proof of his utter aversion to all cruelty and outrage.

Book XL

1572.
Arrival of
the prince
of Orange
in the Ne-
therlands.

WILLIAM's acquisition of Ruremond was of great importance, as it put him in possession of a commodious passage over the Maese; he therefore left a garrison to defend it, and hastened forwards to Hainault. The citizens of Mechlin having been gained

Book XI. gained over to his interest by the Sieur de Dorp,
 1572. opened their gates to receive him. There he likewise left a garrison. The citizens of Louvain refused to admit him within their walls ; but, on his preparing to employ force, they consented to grant him a contribution ; of which he accepted, in order to save the time which the siege would have cost him. Nivelles, Dieft, Sichein, Tillemont, and several other towns surrendered to him ; some through fear and others through the affection which they bore to his cause or person. Dendremond and Oudenarde were taken by surprise, and great irregularities were committed by the soldiers in both these places, especially in the latter, where notwithstanding their leader's prohibition, they once more indulged that ungovernable fury with which their bigotry inspired them against the ecclesiastics of the Romish communion.

WILLIAM made his stay at each of these places as short as possible. He did not however arrive in Hainault till the beginning of September, when his army amounted to more than twenty thousand men.

So great an army could not be supported long without more ample funds than he possessed. The States of Holland had sent him a considerable sum. The exiles had transmitted to him a part of the money that rose from their captures. His other friends had raised contributions proportioned to their abilities. But so great had been the expence of levying, equipping, and maintaining his troops, and such immense sums had been laid out in purchasing artillery and military stores, that he had occasion still for all the supplies which had been promised him by the court of France.

BUT his hopes of relief from that quarter were now utterly extinguished. The plan of treachery above mentioned

mentioned, which had been carried on for two years, with a degree of perseverance as well as of dissimulation that has not its parallel in history, was at this time brought to a conclusion. The artifices employed to delude the protestant leaders had at length succeeded, and they were almost all caught in the net which had been prepared for their destruction. 1572.

THE admiral had remained at court for several months, during which time Charles gave him every day fresh marks of affection and esteem. That deceitful monarch had shewn likewise a particular attachment to the admiral's friends, and was perpetually surrounded with them at council, in his own apartments, and when he went abroad. With his permission, the admiral had left Paris, and gone to Chatillon, where he staid for some time to settle his private affairs. This indulgence was calculated to create in him the most assured confidence; since it could hardly be supposed, that if the king had intended him any harm, by enticing him to court, he would have allowed him to depart from it. To such a height was the admiral's security now risen, that when Charles expressed his desire of having all grounds of enmity between him and the Guises removed, he readily consented that they should come to Paris, and agreed to refer the several points of difference between himself and them to the king's decision. In a few days after, the duke of Guise arrived, attended by a numerous train of dependants; and a formal reconciliation was made in presence of the king. But it soon appeared how little sincerity there was on one side, in the professions which were uttered on that occasion.

As a prelude to the final catastrophe, the queen of Navarre, a princess who by her spirit and magnanimity had long been formidable to the Catholics, died, after a short illness, which was generally

Book XI. ascribed to poison. And an attempt was made,
 1572. by a partisan of Guise, to assassinate the admiral.
 By this last event the protestants were greatly alarmed ; but the king and queen-mother, by redoubling their dissimulation, and assuming, with consummate artifice, the appearance of deep concern for what had happened, prevented the admiral from suspecting *them* to have been privy to it, and diverted him and the other protestant leaders from forming any vigorous resolution of providing for their safety. They were all found therefore defenceless and unprepared.

IN that horrid scene which passed on the night of the twenty-fourth of August, the duke of Guise was the principal actor. But his savage spirit quickly diffused itself into every breast ; and no catholic declined to assist him in the execution of his bloody purpose. The admiral, to whom, not many days before, he had pledged his friendship, was among the first who fell a sacrifice to his fury. This great man died with a fortitude and tranquillity suitable to his character. " Young man," said he to La Besme, (who was sent into his apartment by the duke of Guise, while Guise himself remained without till the deed was perpetrated) " you ought to reverence grey hairs ; but proceed to the execution of your design ; you can shorten my life but a very little." While he was saying this, the assassin plunged his sword into his breast. At the same time all his domestics and friends were murdered ; among whom was the brave Guerchy, his lieutenant, and his son-in-law, the amiable Teligny, who had won even the savage heart of Charles, and whose engaging aspect suspended for some time the lifted hands of his murderers. But it does not belong to this history to enter more particularly into the detail of this transaction. Upwards of ten thousand protestants were massacred in Paris alone ;
 and

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

and in the other cities of the kingdom, between fifty and sixty thousand.

339

Book XI.

1572.

OF this horrid massacre the first idea is said to have been suggested to the queen-mother by Philip, through the duke of Alva, at conferences held at Bayonne in one thousand five hundred and fifty-nine; and it is certain, that intelligence of it was received at Madrid with the utmost joy. Philip offered public thanksgiving to heaven for the destruction of his enemies; and wrote to Charles a congratulatory letter on the subject. On the other hand, it filled the protestants in the Low-Countries with horror and consternation. Their hopes of obtaining deliverance from the Spanish yoke, through the powerful aid of France, had been raised to the greatest height, and their dejection now was in proportion to their former expectations.

NOTHING could be more galling to the prince of Orange than the news of this disaster. Besides the cruel disappointment of finding a powerful monarch his mortal enemy, whom he had so much reason to believe to be his friend, he knew not what dangerous effect this unexpected revolution might produce upon his troops, especially as some of them were subjects of France, and had entered into his service, under a belief that their king was to support them in their present enterprise.

PERCEIVING therefore the necessity of pushing forward his operations with the utmost vigour, and being persuaded, that, without some signal instance of success, he could not long support his army, he advanced without delay towards Mons; being resolved to try every expedient, not only to raise the siege, but if possible to bring on a general engagement.

Operations
of the prince
of Orange.

THE duke easily penetrated into his design, and omitted nothing in his power to prevent him from carrying it into execution. After the arrival of several German auxiliaries in his camp, his army was superior in number, as it had always been in discipline, to that of the prince; and he could not have much reason to dread the event of a battle, in case he should find it unavoidable. But knowing that the fate of battles is decided sometimes by accidents, against which no human prudence can provide: and considering, that the prince's army, through the scantiness of his funds, would probably soon fall to pieces of itself, he resumed the principles on which he had acted in the time of William's former expedition, and resolved to avoid exposing his troops to any unnecessary risk; hoping, that, by tiring out the enemy, he should be able to triumph over them without fighting. With this view, while he invested the town on every side, and prevented any supplies from being thrown into it, he entrenched his camp so strongly, as to render it entirely impracticable for the prince of Orange to force his lines. He fortified the several passes by which the town might be approached in the strongest manner; watched over every operation himself, with indefatigable attention; and forbade his men to engage in the slightest skirmish with the enemy, whatever provocation they might receive.

AFTER having taken these precautions, he sent out five hundred horse to reconnoitre. They were met by nearly the same number of German horse, commanded by count Henry, William's youngest brother, who being ambitious to distinguish himself in this his first campaign, attacked the Spaniards with uncommon fury, and after killing many of them, broke their ranks, and drove them back in great confusion. The prince himself followed
soon

soon afterwards with all his army, and drew it up in battle array before the duke of Alva's camp.

BOOK XI.

1572.

BUT Alva, more determined than ever since the repulse of the cavalry to adhere to his plan, kept all his men within their entrenchments. The prince of Orange omitted nothing in his power to induce him to change his purpose. He shifted his ground, intercepted the convoys of provisions, attacked the foragers, and sent out parties on every side, with a view to entice the enemy to quit their lines.

THERE were persons in the Spanish camp who condemned their general's conduct on this occasion, and exhorted him to put to proof that courage of which the enemy were so extremely ostentatious. Among these was the archbishop of Cologne^b, whose ardent spirit breathed nothing but war and battle, and who could not relish those cautious maxims by which the duke of Alva had resolved to regulate his conduct. Alva remained equally firm against the importunities of his friends, and the arts that were practised by the enemy. It was a maxim often in his mouth, that as all human events are precarious, the most precarious of all is a battle: to which he added, that it ought not to be the aim of a general to fight, but to overcome; and that there were other means by which this aim might be accomplished more effectually than by fighting.

BUT although his conduct was not approved by the archbishop of Cologne, he had the satisfaction to know that it gave the deepest uneasiness to the prince of Orange; who perceived, that if an opportunity did not offer soon of striking some important blow, by which he might raise the siege, it
would

^b The count of Isenberg.

Book XI. would not be possible for him to keep his army together. His finances did not enable him to bring provisions from a distance, and all the country round had been plundered by the Spaniards. Being driven therefore to despair, he made a bold effort to break through the enemy's entrenchments; but this adventurous attempt, which nothing could justify but the urgent motive that incited him, was attended with such an issue as he had reason to expect. His men were bravely repulsed, and a considerable loss sustained.

1572.

He now relinquished all hopes of either raising the siege, or forcing an engagement; and he resolved to leave Hainault, after attempting to introduce such supplies into the town as might enable the garrison to hold out till winter, when the duke of Alva would be obliged to retire. For this purpose, he made choice of two thousand horse and one thousand foot, the flower of his army. There was only a single pass by which they could have access to the town, and at that place Alva had built a strong fort, of which he committed the defence to a select body of Spanish troops, under the command of Sancio d'Avila and Julio Romero. Notwithstanding this precaution, which left hardly a possibility of success, the troops destined for the relief of Mons advanced towards the pass with the utmost intrepidity. Romero and D'Avila received them with equal intrepidity; and were seconded by the guns of the fort. The combat was hot and furious. There was a brisk cannonading during the time of it from the two armies, and from the town; but the fire from the fort did the greatest execution; and the Germans, after several hundreds of their number had fallen, were at last obliged to abandon their attempt.

THE prince of Orange, now convinced of the impossibility of relieving the besieged in opposition to so powerful an army, immediately decamped. The duke of Alva followed him next day with most of his forces, and in every movement discovered the most consummate skill; so that he at once prevented the prince from returning towards Mons, and avoided being reduced himself to the necessity of fighting. It was not long before he learned that there was not the same good order in the prince's army, which had hitherto been observed in it. William's authority over his troops had suffered greatly by the failure of his late attempts; and he was unable any longer to maintain that perfect discipline, without which no army, however numerous, can be formidable.

BOOK XI.

1572.
The prince is obliged to leave Hainault.

ALVA readily embraced the opportunity which this circumstance afforded him. Having taken a view in person of the enemy's quarters, he resolved to attack them in the night. He committed the charge of this enterprize to Julio Romero, and gave him two thousand chosen infantry, who were ordered to be ready to march in the middle of the night, each with a shirt over his armour, to enable them to distinguish one another. They fell with great fury on the Germans, who were stationed to guard the camp; and as most of them were fast asleep, they made dreadful havock among them, till the alarm was communicated to the rest, who were soon roused by the groans and shrieks of the wounded. At first, believing that the whole Spanish army had attacked them, they fled precipitately. The assailants had in the beginning set fire to the tents, and many of the Germans perished in the flames. But this circumstance, by which the horror of the scene was augmented, saved the German army from destruction. It discovered

BOOK XI. covered the number of the Spaniards, and made it
 1572. easier for the prince of Orange to draw up his men, and to know in what quarter he might find the enemy. But the assailants, perceiving that the whole camp was up in arms, made their retreat in time, and eluded the vengeance which they saw approaching. By the favour of the night they escaped with little loss, after having put to the sword near five hundred of the Germans.

THE consequences of this disaster were more pernicious to the prince of Orange than the disaster itself. It filled his troops with consternation, and gave them a formidable idea of the Spaniards, whom, on account of their having so often declined fighting, they had been accustomed to despise. Without waiting for orders, they hastily decamped with one consent, and left a part of their baggage a prey to the enemy. They had not candour to acknowledge that the misfortune which had befallen them on the preceding night was owing to their negligence in obeying orders. They were disposed to throw the blame of it upon their general, and began to complain, that instead of enriching them with spoil, he had brought them into the Low-Countries, only to expose them to perpetual hardships and distress. He found means, however, at this time, to quiet their minds, and in some measure to rectify their opinion of his conduct.

THE duke of Alva was on this occasion urged by his officers to pursue the prince till he should drive him entirely out of the Netherlands; but he repeated the old maxim, That it is wiser to make a bridge for a flying enemy, than to reduce them to despair; and returned to the siege.

THE

THE prince of Orange led his troops to Mechlin ; Book XI.
 and having remained there for some days to re-
 cruit them after their fatigue, he continued his 1572.
He disbands
his army.
 march northwards, till he had brought them as
 far as Orsoy in the dutchy of Cleves. At that
 place their ill-humour broke out afresh with great-
 er violence than ever, and they began to hold pri-
 vate meetings, in which they deliberated, whether,
 in order to procure payment of their arrears, they
 should not deliver him up to the duke of Alva.
 The principal officers received this ungenerous pro-
 posal with horror and indignation. They were
 convinced that the prince had done every thing that
 could have been done by a general of the most con-
 summate abilities. They knew that he had be-
 gun his enterprize with the highest probability of
 success, and that his failure in it had been al-
 most entirely owing to the treacherous dealings of
 the French king ; by trusting to whom, he had
 engaged in a very different plan of operations from
 that which he would otherwise have adopted. By
 these considerations the officers were entirely satis-
 fied ; and through their influence, the common
 soldiers were persuaded to relinquish their perfidi-
 ous design. The army was immediately disbanded ;
 and William set out for Holland, where the
 people longed for his arrival.

HIS retreat from Mons gave his brother, count
 Lewis, who was naturally of a sanguine temper,
 the deepest affliction. And this, joined to the ex-
 treme fatigue which he had undergone for several
 months before, threw him into a violent distemper,
 which prevented him for some time from attending
 to the siege. But during his confinement La Noue
 conducted the defence with so much skill and intre-
 pidity, that Alva, despairing of being able before
 winter to take the town by force, was willing to
 agree

BOOK XI. agree to such terms of capitulation, as count Lewis thought it not dishonourable to accept. These were, that the French, count Lewis, the Flemish nobility, and all who were not inhabitants of the place, should leave it with their arms and baggage; and that such of the inhabitants as had borne arms might leave it with their effects, but not their arms. That such of them as were catholics might remain in the town unmolested; but that all the protestants should not only depart from the town, but from the Netherlands; and that all persons, whether citizens or foreigners, should take an oath, that they would not carry arms for the space of a year, either against the king of France or the king of Spain, from which oath count Lewis alone was exempted. This capitulation was signed by the dukes of Alva and Medina-coeli, by Frederic de Toledo, and the baron de Noircarmes; and all the conditions of it were punctually fulfilled.

1572.

IN this manner was Mons recovered from the protestants, after it had been more than three months in their possession. The duke of Alva felt no anxiety with regard to the recovery of the cities which had received the prince of Orange. They were neither strongly fortified nor sufficiently provided with garrisons to defend them. The first against which he turned his arms was Mechlin; and he ordered his son to lead thither the Spanish troops, who having received no pay for some time, advanced like so many famished wolves, with a resolution to satiate their rapacity by plundering the inhabitants.

ON their arrival, the garrison which had been left in the town by the prince of Orange seemed determined to make resistance; but finding the citizens averse from co-operating with them, and despairing of being able, without their assistance,

to hold out long, they deserted the place in the night; and next morning all the priests and ecclesiastics went in solemn procession to Toledo's tent, to deprecate his vengeance. When they were pleading the cause of the unhappy anxious inhabitants, and representing that only a small number of them had been guilty, while by far the greatest part had preserved their allegiance; the soldiers, apprehensive that Toledo might listen to this apology, and disappoint them of their prey, rushed forward to the city, and broke into it, some by the gates, and others, by the help of scaling ladders, over the walls. Then spreading themselves like a deluge, they gave a loose to every species of violence; butchering some, and plundering all without mercy. There was no distinction made of age, sex, or condition. Virgins and matrons were violated before the eyes of their parents and husbands. The churches and convents were pillaged as well as private houses; and the nuns were not exempted from that brutal lust and fury, which the Spaniards indulged without controul.

Book XI.

1572.

THE duke of Alva was sensible how great an odium must attend such a barbarous treatment of a city, which had hitherto been distinguished for its fidelity; yet he chose to justify what had been done, and in a few days afterwards published a manifesto, in which he declared, that the citizens had suffered no more than their rebellion had deserved; that justice was not yet entirely satisfied; that their crime merited a still severer punishment, than barely to be deprived of their effects; and that other cities which had already imitated, or should afterwards imitate, their example, might expect, sooner or later, to meet with the same fate. Of the sacrilege that had been committed on the churches and convents, and the shocking treatment of the weaker

Book XI. weaker sex, no mention was made in the manifest-
 1572. to, and no excuse was ever offered for passing over
 these enormities with impunity. Great arrears, said the apologists of Alva, were at that time due to the soldiers; and, as he could not satisfy them, he either thought it reasonable to allow them to take a compensation for their pay; or, being well acquainted with their ferocious tempers, he was afraid to exercise his authority. The Spanish soldiers themselves, though little scrupulous with respect to crimes contrary to the laws of nature, justice and humanity, were afterwards, agreeably to the character of their nation, touched with remorse on account of their violation of the churches; and in order to atone for their guilt, they hearkened to the dictates of superstition, and laid out a portion of their plunder in building a house for the je-suits in Antwerp ^c.

ALVA having gone to Maestricht, where he dismissed his German horse, went from thence to Brussels, while the Spaniards were permitted to remain at Mechlin for several days, which they employed in collecting their plunder, and sending it off in boats to Antwerp, to be exposed to sale. Toledo then led them against the other cities which had received German garrisons. These garrisons fled on his approach; and the people agreed to pay exorbitant contributions to save their cities from being sacked: nor did he meet with any opposition in his progress, till he came to Zutphen, which was at that time a place of considerable strength. It was defended with a wall flanked with bastions, and surrounded with a deep ditch. The Issel washes the fortifications on one side, the Berkel on another; and the ground on the other two sides is so extremely wet and marshy as to render the place,
 for

^c Meteren, p. 107. Campana, p. 97. Bentivoglio, p. 114.

for the greatest part of the year, almost inaccessible. But unfortunately for the protestants in garrison, they could not avail themselves of these advantages at this juncture ; the frost having set in with uncommon severity several days before the arrival of Toledo. He found no difficulty therefore in approaching the place with his batteries, and he soon made a breach in the wall. He was preparing for an assault, when he received intelligence, that the garrison, and all such as had rendered themselves obnoxious, had gone out of the town by the opposite gate ; and that the citizens who remained were now, when left at liberty to act agreeably to their inclination, willing immediately to surrender at discretion. But Toledo having, by the small resistance which the garrison had made, got a pretext for plundering this unhappy people, refused to listen to any terms of accommodation, and ordered his troops to advance. They entered the town without opposition, and repeated there the same shocking barbarities which they had exercised in Mechlin, with this difference, that as there was much less booty in Zutphen, to satisfy their rapacity, they indulged their cruelty so much the more. They put to the sword all the citizens who fell in their way, men and women without distinction ; and when they were tired with slaughtering, they cast great numbers into the Issel, and indulged themselves in the horrid joy of beholding the unhappy sufferers perish in the stream. By the sword and water, above five hundred perished ; and the rest were obliged to redeem their lives by the most oppressive contributions, which were so cruelly exacted, that the living had reason to envy the fate of those whom death had delivered from such intolerable misery ^d.

THE

^d Meteren, p. 110. Bentivoglio, p. 115. Meursii Auriacus, p. 98.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK XII.

WHILE the Spanish army was employed in the siege of Mons, and in subduing the other revolted towns in the southern provinces, the people of Holland and Zealand improved the leisure which was afforded them, by taking every precaution in their power to secure themselves from being again reduced under the Spanish yoke. They increased the number of their ships of war, completed their fortifications, and levied so great a number of forces, as, with the great advantages of their situation, they hoped would be sufficient for their defence.

Book XII.

1572.
Transactions in Holland and Zealand.

BEFORE the duke of Alva set out for Mons, he had, agreeably to orders transmitted to him from Spain, read, in presence of the States of Brabant, Artois, Hainault, and Flanders, a declaration, that he would pass from the taxes of the tenth and twentieth

Philip passes from the taxes of the 10th and 20th penny in June.

tieth

BOOK XII. tieth pennies, on condition that the States would devise some other means by which the money necessary for the king's service might be raised. Intimation was made of this concession to the States of Holland, by the count of Bossut; who, in the name of the governor, commanded them to assemble at the Hague, to consider of what other taxes they would substitute in the room of those which had been formerly imposed.

His concession disregarded by the States.

THIS concession, which, if it had been made sooner, might have prevented the revolt of the maritime provinces, was not attended with the desired effect. It excited in the minds of the people the highest degree of joy and exultation; but they did not think themselves indebted for it, either to the king or the duke of Alva. They ascribed it wholly to the dread that was entertained of the prince of Orange, to whom alone they thought themselves bound for this first instance of attention that had been shewn to their inclination or interest since Philip's accession to the throne. They could not doubt, that if his apprehensions of the German army were removed, Alva would be again permitted to resume the pursuit of that plan of tyranny which he had been obliged to suspend. They were well acquainted with the vindictive spirit which animated Philip's counsels. They knew that, for much slighter offences than those of which they had been guilty, many thousands of their countrymen had suffered the most cruel death; and they believed, that whatever assurances might be given them of pardon, the memory of their guilt would never be extinguished but in their blood. By the unrelenting cruelty which had been exercised against the protestants, added to the contempt which had been shewn to their fundamental rights and laws, the people were entirely alienated from Philip's person and government.

They

They were convinced that he had resolved to treat them henceforth, not as subjects but as slaves ; and they had long repined and murmured at their fate. Book XII.
1572.

FROM the time of Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, all the protestants who had escaped from the cruelty of the inquisitors, had carefully concealed their sentiments, and conformed to the established worship ; but having of late received a great increase of number, by the return of many of the exiles, they had thrown off the mask ; and it now appeared, that by far the greatest part of the inhabitants, and of the deputies of the States, were strongly attached to the reformed religion. Their religious zeal co-operated with their abhorrence of the Spanish tyranny ; and both together inspired them with a fixed unalterable purpose to defend their liberty to the last.

PROMPTED by these motives, the States paid no regard to the order for assembling at the Hague, transmitted to them by Bossut ; and that they might the more strongly express their contempt of the governor's authority, they appointed an assembly to be held at Dort. Of this assembly they gave early notice to the prince of Orange, and intreated him to send one of his most faithful friends, properly instructed, to assist them in their deliberations. The person whom the prince made choice of for this purpose, was the Sieur de St. Aldegond, the author of the compromise, who had long been well acquainted with William's most secret views and sentiments. They meet
at Dort,

St. Aldegond readily undertook the task imposed upon him ; and at the first meeting of the States, gave them thanks in the name of the prince, for the intimation which they had sent him, of their resolution to vindicate their liberty and enter
into engage-
ments with
the prince
of Orange.

BOOK XII. under his direction. “The prince was conscious, he said, of being seriously interested in the welfare of all the provinces, and of none more than those of Holland and Zealand, which for several years had been the objects of his particular attention. From time to time he had heard with indignation and grief, of the distress and misery to which they had been reduced through the Spanish tyranny; and there was nothing which he desired more ardently, than to be instrumental in recovering for them those invaluable rights, which for ages past had proved the source of their prosperity. In order to accomplish this end, he had spared neither expence nor labour. He had failed in his former attempt for their deliverance, not (he hoped, they would believe) through any negligence or misconduct, but through the superior power and more copious resources of the enemy. In his present armament, he had already expended all that remained of his once ample fortune; and as in levying his army, he had trusted in a great measure to the assistance which they had promised him; now was the time to fulfil that promise, and to enable him to begin his military operations without delay.”

THE States who knew the truth of what St. Aldegond had represented, and were sensible how much the success of William's enterprise depended on his receiving an immediate supply, sent him without delay a hundred thousand florins, which they borrowed from the more wealthy citizens; and promised to send him more as soon as it could be raised, either from the ordinary taxes, or from the revenues of the monasteries, which were at that time converted into a fund for carrying on the war. After this transaction, a solemn declaration in writing was delivered to St. Aldegond, in which they engaged to acknowledge the prince of Orange as the only lawful governor or stadtholder of the province;

PHILIP I. KING OF SPAIN.

355

BOOK XII.
1574.
and engaged that
he would not lay down his
arms, nor accept of any
treaty, nor acknowledge
the authority of the
States.

The States exerted themselves strenuously to their dis-
tress. They sent him
hundred thousand florins, which he received at
Amsterdam, and gave him
fifty hundred thousand. When the
States were brought to his retreat, and the
city under which he found himself of disband-
his army, they were exceedingly dejected;
were filled with the most disquieting appre-
hensions, when they considered that the duke of
Alva, having no enemy in the field to oppose his
arms, was now at liberty to employ all his
forces united, in taking vengeance on them, for
the contempt of his authority.

THEIR distress was much increased by the in- Amsterdam
able obstinacy of the city of Amsterdam, in ad- adheres to
her to the Spanish interest; which did not pro- the Spa-
ceed so much from the general inclination of the niards.
citizens, as from the care which the duke of Alva
taken to preserve the government of that city
in the hands of the most rigid catholics. By an
order of the States, Lumey count de la Marc had
besieged it with a considerable body of troops;
after making some progress in his operations,
despaired of success, and suddenly raised the
siege. He ascribed the miscarriage of his attempt
to the negligence of the States, in supplying him

A 2 2

with

BOOK XII. with provisions. The States on the other hand threw the blame entirely upon the count. They had been for some time past extremely dissatisfied with his conduct, on account of the cruelties which he had allowed his troops to exercise against the catholics; and they believed that they should never be able to persuade the people of Amsterdam to unite with the other cities in the province, while their army was under the command of a person who had rendered himself so exceedingly obnoxious^b.

Outrages
committed
by their
troops.

LOUD complaints of the outrages of the soldiers were heard in every quarter, and many of the people began to lament the revolution to which they had given their consent. The States dreaded the consequences of so much ill humour. But they were not possessed of power sufficient to remedy the abuses complained of; and la Marc, who was naturally violent and ferocious, paid no regard to their commands. In this distress they had no resource, but in the prudence and authority of the prince of Orange; who, they hoped, would, notwithstanding his late misfortunes, be able to repress the insolence of the soldiers and their general. They sent him notice of the critical situation to which they were reduced; and they intreated him to come, as soon as possible, to take the government of the province, and the command of the forces, into his own hand.

Arrival of
the prince
of Orange in
Holland.

WILLIAM could not, either with safety or honour, have left his army sooner than he did. From Orsoy, where it was disbanded, he went, attended only by his own domestics, and a company of horse, to Campen in Overysse, and from thence he passed over the Zuider Sea to Enchuyssen; where he was joyfully received, and all his directions for the greater security of the place, were carried immediately

^b Meursii Auriacus, p. 95.

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

357

mediately into execution. After staying there for some days, and visiting the other towns in the province, he set out for Haerlem; having appointed a convention of the States to be held in that city, to consider of the present situation of their affairs.

BOOK XII.
1572.

HIS arrival excited in persons of all ranks the most unfeigned joy; but this joy, he perceived, was greatly allayed by their apprehensions of being unable to resist an enemy, before whom he himself, at the head of a powerful army, had been obliged to retire. The first object of his attention was to raise their drooping spirits, by making them sensible of the advantages which they possessed in the nature and situation of their country; which, while they retained their superiority at sea, and acted in concert, would render abortive all the attempts of the Spaniards to reduce them. The magnanimity which he displayed diffused itself into every breast; and the deputies unanimously declared, that they would be entirely governed by his counsel in all their conduct, and would lay down their lives sooner than abandon that invaluable liberty, without which they thought life itself was not desirable.

His magnanimity.

In the present temper of their minds, William might have ruled the people of the maritime provinces with an absolute sway; but he knew there was a much safer, as well as a more effectual, method of exercising power, and wisely resolved to consult the States in every matter of importance, and to take upon himself only the execution of their commands. For this purpose he frequently convened them; and in order to give greater weight to their decisions, he persuaded them to admit into their number the deputies of twelve other cities, besides those of whom their assembly had been hitherto composed: a measure which

His moderation, and salutary regulations.

was

BOOK XII. was no less gracious and popular, than it was wise and prudent. It flattered the vanity of those towns on which the new privilege was bestowed; engaged them to contribute with greater alacrity their share of the public expences; and drew the several districts of the province into a state of more intimate union with one another.

1572.

WITH the States, thus increased in number, the prince applied himself to rectify the disorders which had prevailed, and to put the province into a posture of defence against the Spaniards. It had been deserted during the late commotions by many of the principal inhabitants, by several members of the courts of justice, and by the officers of the revenue, and others who held public employments; which they had been induced to abandon, either by their attachment to popery, or their diffidence in the duration and stability of the present government. The numerous vacancies which were thus occasioned, were supplied with protestants; and no catholic was admitted into any office, or allowed to take any concern in the administration of public affairs.

Establishment of the reformed religion.

THE exercise of the Romish religion was prohibited in the churches; and the only worship permitted to be exercised publicly, was the protestant, as taught by Calvin, and practised in Geneva, and the Palatinate. Thus far the prince of Orange complied with the inclination of the people, by a great majority of whom the principles of the reformers had been embraced. But all persecution on account of religion, he discouraged to the utmost of his power. His reasonings for toleration were more successful now in favour of the papists, than they had been formerly with the dutcheis of Parma, in behalf of the reformers. The States, by his persuasion, resolved that no person whatever should be molested on account of his religion, provided

vided that he lived quietly, kept no correspondence with the Spaniards, and gave no disturbance to the established mode of worship ^{Book XII} 1572

WILLIAM found greater difficulty in restraining the licentiousness of the army, than in settling either the courts of justice or the church. When we reflect on those horrid scenes which were exhibited in the Netherlands by the duke of Alva and his associates, it will not appear surprising, that the protestants should have conceived the most violent animosity against their bloody persecutors. They had seen their dearest relations and friends, besides many persons whom they revered on account of the innocence and sanctity of their lives, treated like the most flagitious malefactors: and many of themselves had, in order to avoid the same fate, been obliged to abandon their habitations, and to wander from place to place, forlorn and indigent. In the bitterness of their distress, they had forgotten the spirit of that religion for which they suffered; and on many occasions, wrecked their vengeance against their enemies with a brutal fury. To the Spaniards who were taken prisoners at sea, the protestants on board the fleet gave no quarter; while the ecclesiastics, and many others whose only crime was their adherence to the religion of their ancestors, were treated by the protestant soldiers with equal inhumanity.

THE count of la Marc, commander in chief of the forces, was so far from opposing these enormities, that he encouraged his soldiers in committing them. This nobleman's principal virtue was intrepidity, and under the cloak of zeal for liberty, and the reformed religion, he seems to have intended nothing so much as the gratification of his avarice or revenge. The prince of Orange, who from

BOOK XII. from his natural humanity, and a prudent regard
 1572. to future consequences, was utterly averse from every species of violence, attempted to make him sensible of the folly and iniquity of his conduct. But finding that he was not likely to succeed, and that the soldiers still indulged themselves without controul in their wonted excesses, he referred the matter to the cognisance of the States, and desired them to consider coolly what was proper to be done. The States, who were highly incensed against the count, for his contempt of their authority, deprived him of his command, and ordered him to be apprehended. William, unwilling to forget the services which the count had performed in the beginning of the revolt, soon after interposed in his behalf, and prevailed upon the States to release him. But la Marc could not digest the affront which had been offered him. He complained loudly of the States for their ingratitude; boasted of his authority in the fleet and army, and attempted to excite a spirit of sedition among the people. The States were meditating to seize him a second time, in order to bring him to his trial. But the prince of Orange, prompted by tenderness for his relations, and a sense of his former services, dissuaded them from executing their design, and advised them to suffer him to leave the province. The States listened, though with some reluctance to this advice, and the count having left the Netherlands, died soon afterwards in the city of Liege.

THE command of the forces was conferred on the count of Battenburg; and by that nobleman they were brought under proper discipline; and all such of the catholics as chose to remain in the country, delivered from those alarms and apprehensions with which they had been hitherto disquieted. One cause of the great irregularities which had been committed by the troops, was the want

want of proper funds for their subsistence. The States now supplied this defect, as well as the present circumstances of the province would allow. To the payment of the army, and other public purposes, they appropriated the demesnes which the king had enjoyed as count of Holland, the revenues of the Romish priests and monasteries, and the estates of all such catholics as had gone over to the enemy, besides a certain proportion of the captures made at sea.

Book XII.
1572.

WHILE the prince of Orange and the States were thus employed in providing for the security of Holland, Frederic de Toledo had made rapid progress in reducing the towns which had revolted in the other provinces; nor did he find much difficulty in subduing them; for so great was the terror which they had conceived from his late success, that of all the towns which had declared for the prince of Orange in Groningen, Overysse, Utrecht, and Friesland, there was none that did not send ambassadors to Toledo, to deprecate his vengeance, and to make profession of unreserved submission to his will. He placed garrisons in the most considerable towns, and inflicted no other punishment upon the people but pecuniary fines. Had he maintained the same moderation in his conduct afterwards, he would not perhaps have encountered much greater difficulty in the recovery of some of the towns, of Holland and Zealand, than he had met with in recovering those of the interior provinces; but from natural temper, he rejoiced infinitely more in rigour and severity, than in lenity and moderation; of the truth of which he gave a signal proof in his barbarous treatment of the inhabitants of Naerden.

Progress of
the Spanish
arms.

THIS town was then neither large nor strongly fortified, yet the citizens, prompted by some fo-

Massacre of
the people
of Naerden.

reign

Book XII. reign protestants who resided in it, were bold enough to refuse admittance to a company of horse, sent by Toledo before his main army, to require their submission; but, having quickly repented of their rashness, they dispatched a deputation of the most respectable inhabitants, among whom was Lambertus Hortensius, a man eminent for his learning, to Amersfort, where Toledo had arrived in his way to Naerden. He declined hearing the ambassadors himself, and desired them to apply to Julio Romero, who had power, he said, to grant them such terms of reconciliation as *he* should judge to be reasonable. By Romero, it was agreed, that the lives and fortunes of the citizens should be spared on the following conditions: That the town should be immediately delivered into the hands of Toledo; that all the inhabitants should renew their oath of allegiance to the king; and that one hundred Spanish soldiers should be permitted to seize as much booty as they could carry at one time out of the city. In ratification of this agreement, Romero, having given his right hand three several times to Hortensius, entered the town, attended by so small a number of Spaniards as banished from the minds of the citizens all apprehensions of fraud or violence; and when he summoned them to meet in one of the churches to take the oath of allegiance, they ran thither unarmed, and presented themselves a defenceless prey to their bloody murderers. Whether Romero acted in concert with Toledo does not appear from the cotemporary historians. This only is certain, that while the former was employed in administering the oath; the latter, who had brought forward his troops to the gates of the town, led them directly to the church in which the citizens were assembled, and ordering the doors which till then had been shut to be thrown open, he rushed into it at the head of his troops, and immedi-

immediately killed with his own hand the principal magistrate. The Spaniards were not backward to imitate the example of their general. They fell with savage fury on the astonished, defenceless citizens, and after butchering all that were in the church, spread themselves over the city, and put every person whom they met to the sword. They made no distinction between the innocent and the guilty; the catholics as well as protestants; those who had preserved their allegiance, as well as those who had thrown it off, were all involved in one promiscuous ruin. Then entering into the houses, where they found the wives and daughters of the slain overwhelmed with anguish, instead of being softened by the sight of so much unmerited distress in that tender sex, their savage hearts only prompted them to indulge their avarice, their cruelty, and their lust. Even virgins under age they violated, and others they tortured in the most inhuman manner, either from a wanton pleasure which they took in cruel deeds, or to extort from the unhappy sufferers a discovery of the treasure which had belonged to their murdered husbands or parents. They strangled some, embued their hands in the blood of others, turned all the rest out of the city into the open fields, and then throwing fire into the houses, reduced the town to ashes.

THE accounts transmitted to us by the protestant writers of the horrid cruelty which the Spaniards exercised on this occasion, would be incredible, if they were not confirmed by the catholic historians. There was an hospital in the town for old men, and at that time there were several in it above eighty years of age; even these were butchered; nor did persons confined to the bed of sickness and distress escape their fury. The life of Lambertus Hortensius was saved by the interposition of the count de Bossut; but the Spaniards made him suffer what

was

BOOK XII.

1572.

BOOK XII. was worse than death ; by murdering the son, and tearing his heart out of his body before the father's eyes. There is another instance of their cruelty recorded, which is, if possible, still more inhuman. After having tortured in the most shocking manner one of the citizens, to make him discover where he had concealed his wealth, they dishonoured his wife in his presence, and upon his reproaching them with their barbarity, they put him to death ; then, having tied the woman's hands behind her, they bound her by the feet to a beam of the house, with her head downward, and left her to die in that posture, with her little son, whom they likewise bound and placed beside her, to aggravate the misery of that dreadful death to which their cruelty had doomed her ^d.

1572.

FROM this horrid massacre, Toledo led his army to Amsterdam, where he remained for some time in expectation that, from the dread of his vengeance, the other towns of the province would be induced to make a tender of their submission ; but the cruelty and treachery which he had exercised at Naerden, were not more contrary to the laws of religion and humanity, than inconsistent with the maxims of sound policy, and were calculated not so much to excite terror as revenge and indignation. From the fate of Naerden the people were convinced, that there was at least as much to be dreaded from submission as from resistance, and they thought it no less absurd than dangerous, to enter into terms of agreement with men who had shewn themselves so cruelly perfidious.

Siege of
Haerlem.

OF this they soon gave a conspicuous proof in their vigorous and obstinate defence of Haerlem. To gain over the inhabitants of that city, Toledo had

^d Meursii Auriacus, p. 98. Thuani, lib. liv. Bentivoglio, p. 115.

had employed the mediation of the catholics of Amsterdam, and some of the magistrates of Haerlem had sent privately three of their number to Frederic to treat with him of a surrender. This was no sooner known than Riperda, a Friesland gentleman, to whom the prince of Orange had committed the government of the town, called together the principal inhabitants, and informed them of what had passed. “By a solemn oath,” said he, “the magistrates were lately bound not to listen, without your permission, to any proposals, or to engage in any design or enterprise, by which the general interest of the city might be affected; yet, not only without your permission, but even without your knowledge, they have sent an embassy to treat with Toledo about delivering the city to the Spaniards. We are unable, they pretend, to withstand so great a force as will be brought against us, and must be involved in all the miseries of a cruel siege, unless we avert them by a timely application for peace and pardon. But have the Spaniards treated with greater lenity those who have trusted to their faith, than those who have opposed them? Have the people of Mechlin and Zutphen been dealt with more mercifully than those of Mons? Does not the melancholy fate of Naerden sufficiently instruct you how little regard is due to the promises of those men, who have now shewn themselves no less devoid of faith than we have ever found them of humanity? Are not the streets of that unhappy city still reeking with the blood of those who confided in the faith and mercy of the Spaniards? By standing on our defence we may elude their fury; but if we receive them into the city, we rush headlong upon destruction. They will either butcher us like sheep, after they have stripped us of our arms, or reduce us to a state of ignominious slavery and bondage. Do not flatter yourselves with the hopes that they are willing

BOOK XII.

1572.

willing to be reconciled to you. They intend only to take advantage of your simplicity, and to get you into their power, without exposing themselves to danger. Have you not all already sworn to act the part to which I now exhort you, to defend your walls against the Spaniards, and to preserve your allegiance to the prince of Orange, whom you have acknowledged as the only lawful governor of the province? And in order to save ourselves from the hardships of a siege, shall we imitate that vile example of treachery, which in our enemies appears so odious? Let us derive courage, my friends, from the justness of our cause; and rather than submit to such an enemy, let us resolve to die, fighting gloriously in defence of our religion, our liberty, and laws."

THIS speech was received with shouts of high applause by all the audience. They cried out with one voice; "No peace with the Spaniards; we will shed the last drop of our blood rather than open our gates to so perfidious an enemy." Ripersda then sent information to the prince of Orange, who was at this time in Delft, of the resolution which they had formed. And in return, William encouraged the citizens to persevere, by assuring them that the other cities in the province would exert themselves with vigour in their behalf. Immediately after which he reinforced the garrison with four companies of Germans; and sent St. Aldegond with a commission to put the administration of the town in the hands of such as were sincerely attached to the reformed religion. Of the three ambassadors who had treated with the Spaniards, one remained with Toledo, and the other two were, upon their return to Haerlem, put under arrest, and sent to Delft, where, after being tried, they were condemned as traitors. One of them died in prison, and the other was executed publicly: an instance of severity, with which the prince
of

of Orange was not displeased, as it tended to BOOK XII.
deter the catholics in the other cities, from hold-
ing correspondence with the enemy. 1572.

THE news of these unexpected events excited, in the fiery tempers of Toledo, and his father, the highest degree of wrath and indignation. They immediately gave orders for the march of the troops to Haerlem, and exerted themselves strenuously in making preparations for carrying on the siege with dispatch and vigour.

HAERLEM was, at the time of this memorable Description of Haerlem.
siege, the most considerable town in Holland, next to Amsterdam. It was surrounded with a deep ditch and a strong wall, but was of so great extent, that it required a numerous garrison to defend it. It stands beautifully in the midst of an extensive plain, having a wood on one side, and a branch of the river Sparen on the other; and the other branch of that river passes through the town, and then falls into the lake, or as it is sometimes called, the sea of Haerlem. Amsterdam and Leyden are nearly at the distance of between three and four leagues from it; the former lying towards the east, and the latter towards the south. From Amsterdam and Utrecht, Toledo proposed to furnish his army with provisions; and the people of Haerlem expected to derive the same advantage from the neighbourhood of Leyden; where, in order to assist them the more effectually, the prince of Orange now fixed his residence.

THE nearest way by which the Spanish army could approach to Haerlem, was by the fort of Sparendam, the rampart of which stood on the dike along which the troops must pass. In this fort Ripperda had placed a garrison of three hundred men, and had begun to employ the country people in breaking down the dike, in order to lay the country under water. But the frost having set in with un-
common

BOOK XII. common severity, rendered all their labour fruitless, and gave the Spaniards easy access to the fort. 1572. The garrison made a vigorous resistance for some time; but being attacked on every side, and overpowered by superior numbers, they were at length compelled to retire to Haerlem.

Toledo begins the siege.

TOLEDO followed soon after with his army, which consisted of between twelve and thirteen thousand men; six thousand of whom were natives of Spain, and the rest Walloons and Germans. He had just begun to assign them their several stations, when he received intelligence that a body of troops, amounting to near three thousand men, with cannon and provisions, were upon their march from Leyden, with an intention to enter Haerlem, before the blockade was formed. He set out immediately to intercept them, and had the good fortune, during a fall of snow, to come upon them unawares, near the village of Berkenrode. His troops being greatly superior in number to the enemy, broke their ranks at the first onset, and having killed between six and seven hundred, put the rest to flight. Their officers endeavoured to rally them, but in vain. They fled precipitately, and left their cannon and provisions a prey to the victorious army.

Progress of the siege.

FLUSHED with this success, Toledo returned immediately to the siege. Having stationed the Walloons and Germans on the great road which leads to Leyden, he himself with the Spaniards took possession of an hospital, which lay near the gate of the cross. At this place he resolved to begin his operations, although the gate was covered by a strong ravelin, and the wall on that side could be more easily defended than in any other quarter. Into this blunder he was betrayed, not so much by ignorance or inadvertence, as by the contempt which he entertained for the besieged. After the success
with

with which his arms had every where been attended, he did not expect to meet with the smallest difficulty in his present enterprise; and flattered himself that Haerlem, like the other revolted cities, would, as soon as he should begin his attack, open her gates to receive him. From the same presumption, he neglected all the precautions which are usually taken in sieges; and without opening trenches to cover his men from the enemy's fire, he planted his battery and began to cannonade the gate and ravelin. He had no sooner made a breach, than he resolved to storm it, and for this purpose ordered one hundred and fifty men to cross the ditch, by means of a portable bridge. This detachment was ordered to return, in case the breach should be found impracticable. But the rest of the soldiers, who were not less confident of success than their general, and were impelled by their avidity for plunder, without waiting for the word of command, ran forward to the bridge, and passed over it in great numbers. They soon perceived their error. The breach was not near so considerable as they had imagined, and their scaling ladders were too short. The narrowness of the bridge, which permitted only three men to march a-breast, threw them into confusion. They stood on the brink of the ditch, crowded together, and exposed to the musquetry as well as cannon of the besieged. Still, however, the foolish ardour with which they were inspired, made them unwilling to retire, till Romero, an officer whom they highly respected, advanced towards them, and reproached them with the madness of their attempt. Do you not perceive, he cried, that the smallness of the breach renders your assault impracticable? Is this the discipline which you have learnt in the school of the duke of Alva? Thus, without orders, to expose yourselves a defenceless prey to these rebels, who insult and butcher you,

Book XII. while they themselves are out of the reach of danger? You will soon find an opportunity to take vengeance on them. At present it is not in your power. At length he persuaded them to retire, but not till he himself was wounded, and near two hundred private men, and a great number of officers, had fallen.

1572.

THIS disaster served to undeceive Toledo with regard to the facility of his enterprize; and he resolved not to expose his troops to any further danger, till he should be fully provided with every thing necessary for conducting the siege, with less expence of blood, and a better prospect of success. For this end, he gave the proper instructions to his agents in Utrecht and Amsterdam; but all the roads which led to his camp, were so much infested by the Hollanders, that a whole month elapsed before he was in a condition to renew his operations against the town.

Supplies
sent to the
town over
the ice.

THE prince of Orange was more successful in his attempts to secure it. He could not indeed collect a sufficient number of troops, either to raise the siege, or to force his way through the enemy's intrenchments. But the frost having continued for several weeks, not only men, but even loaded carriages, could be conveyed over the lake with greater facility than by land. The reader need not be told with what agility the Hollanders transport themselves from one place to another, over the ice, with scates. They exerted all their dexterity on this occasion, and introduced into the city fifteen companies of foldiers, together with a great number of sledges, loaded with provisions and ammunition.

IN the mean time Toledo had prepared every thing requisite for resuming the operations of the siege; and he now hastened to repair the faults which he had committed in the beginning; proceeding

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN.

371

Book XII.

1572

ceeding with greater caution than before, but with the same activity and vigour. Having by trenches secured his troops against the fire of the besiegers, he began to batter the town with his artillery; and at the same time employed his miners, of whom the duke of Alva had sent him three thousand from the bishopric of Liege, in working mines, and sap- ping the foundation of the walls. Neither labour nor danger was avoided. But the boldness and vigilance of the citizens and garrison were in proportion to the means employed to subdue them. By countermines, they either prevented, or rendered ineffectual the mines of the besiegers; and no sooner was a breach made in the fortifications, than ditches were dug, or some sudden bulwark raised behind it, by which all access was rendered as difficult as ever. Not satisfied with acting on the defensive, they often sallied out upon the besiegers, destroyed their works, and fell upon them sword in hand, when they were the least prepared to repel their attacks.

WHILE the Spaniards were thus kept in perpetual occupation and anxiety, the prince of Orange laboured assiduously to increase their difficulties, by sending out flying parties to intercept their convoys of provisions. Some of these attempts proved successful; and as they made it necessary for Toledo to send large detachments from his army to guard his convoys, they facilitated the introduction of supplies into Haerlem, and retarded the progress of the siege.

ALMOST all the supplies of the Spanish army came from Amsterdam, and there was but one road by which they could be conveyed. In order to take possession of an important pass on that road, the prince had sent a detachment of troops under Antony le Peintre, who had a principal concern in the surprise of Mons. The catholics of Amsterdam

Useless
cruelty ex-
ercised by
both parties.

having received information of this design, dispatched a number of forces, sufficient not only to secure the pass, but to engage with the enemy. The two parties came to blows; the protestants were routed, and many of them slain; among whom was le Peintre their commander. In derision of the besieged, the Spaniards having cut off the heads of le Peintre, and of another officer killed in that rencounter, whose name was Coning or King, they threw them over the walls into the city, with an inscription tied to the head of Coning, which bore, besides his name, upon which they jested awkwardly, that he was come with two thousand auxiliaries to raise the siege. Of this insult the Haerlemese shewed their resentment, by an action equally barbarous. They beheaded twelve of their Spanish prisoners; and then put all their heads into a cask, which they rolled down into the trenches, after writing upon it, "The tax of the tenth penny to the duke of Alva, with the interest due to him on account of the delay of payment." In revenge for this barbarity, the Spaniards hung up by the feet and neck, a number of prisoners, in sight of the besieged; who, in return, put to death some more of *their* prisoners, in the same ignominious manner, in the view of the Spaniards. Such instances of barbarous and useless cruelty were often practised in the beginning of the present war; nor were they discontinued, till the duke of Alva and his son, who by their example contributed much to the spreading of this savage spirit, had left the Netherlands.

Toledo affaults the town.

THE operations of the siege were in the mean time carried on by Toledo with as much celerity, as the difficulty under which he laboured in furnishing himself with provisions, and the numberless diseases which the severity of the season occasioned among his troops, would allow. By undermining the ravelin which defended the gate of the cross, he

he obliged the garrison to abandon it; and after a cannonading, which had lasted for many days, by which he laid a great part of the wall in ruins, he at last resolved to storm the breach with all his forces. For this purpose he drew them together from their several stations in the night; and that he might find the besieged unprepared, he began the assault before day-break. No precaution was neglected to insure success. The orders were explained to all the soldiers, particularly and distinctly. Each man had his station and part assigned him. Some were appointed to stand at a proper distance from the walls, to annoy the enemy in case they should appear; and those who were destined for the assault were enjoined to observe the most profound silence, till they should make themselves masters of the breach. So well was this last injunction observed, that several of the Spaniards had mounted the breach, and even scaled the walls, before the besieged were apprised of their approach. But when they had advanced thus far, they were perceived by the guards, who immediately sounded the alarm, and tumbled them all headlong, before they had time to put themselves into a posture of defence.

THIS assault was made near the ravelin of which the Spaniards had got possession some days before; and in order to second the assailants, many Spanish officers and soldiers were standing upon the ravelin, and a great number round it. The townsmen having resolved to render this fortification useless to the enemy, had wrought a mine under it, and lodged there a quantity of gun-powder, and other combustible materials. They saw, with joy, and seized instantly, the opportunity presented to them, of executing their purpose with signal damage to the enemy. A part of the ravelin, with the ground adjoining to it, was blown up; and many of the Spaniards perished. The rest of the army stood aghast

Book XII.

1572.

aghast at this unforeseen disaster. The citizens left them no leisure to recover from their astonishment, but rushed out impetuously, attacked them with irresistible fury, and compelled them to retire with the loss of a great number of officers, and upwards of three hundred private men.

He meditates the raising of the siege.

THE failure of this attempt, in which Toledo had exerted his utmost force and skill, gave him great anxiety with regard to the issue of the siege; and some of the principal officers advised him to raise it without delay. "All the miseries of a siege," they said, "were felt more by the royal army, than by the rebels who were besieged. Through the difficult communication between the camp and Amsterdam, the troops laboured under a perpetual scarcity of provisions; and suffered more from the severity of the season, than from the sword of the enemy. They would either never be able to take the place, or it would cost them infinitely more than it was worth. In the end, the conquerors would find themselves in as deplorable a condition as the conquered; and no army would remain, sufficient to subdue the other cities which had rebelled."

THIS opinion was warmly opposed by other officers, who represented, That their success in the further prosecution of the war, would depend on the issue of the present siege. "If we raise it," said they, "we shall confirm all the other cities in their obstinacy; if we persevere, we shall render easier every future enterprise. The season cannot remain long in its present severity. One night may dissolve the ice, of which our enemies have so often availed themselves. Our loss of men will be speedily repaired by the levies which are making in the Netherlands, and by the troops which we expect from Spain. We shall soon be able to cut off the town from all communication with the other revolted

volted cities ; and when we have done this, can we doubt that the besieged will open their gates and throw themselves upon our mercy ?”

Book XII.
1572.

BETWEEN these opposite opinions Toledo would not take upon himself to decide, but referred the matter to the duke, whose answer, carrying in it the appearance of authority more than of counsel, shewed that he was not a little dissatisfied with his son for deliberating on the subject. “ You must prosecute the siege,” said Alva, in the letter which he wrote to him, “ till you bring it to the desired issue ; unless you would prove yourself unworthy of the name you bear, of the blood from which you are sprung, and of the command with which I have intrusted you. The more difficult this enterprise, the greater glory may you derive from it. In a siege of such importance as the present, you ought not to consider the number of days which it detains you ; but the consequences with which your success or failure will be attended. You must now endeavour to effectuate by famine, what you have been unable to accomplish by the sword. You must blockade the town, instead of storming it ; and you will be enabled to render the blockade complete, by the reinforcement which will soon be sent you. But if still you shall entertain thoughts of abandoning your enterprise, I will either come myself to the camp, sick as I am ; or if my increasing illness shall prevent me, I will send for the dutchess of Alva to command the army, rather than suffer it to withdraw.”

Alva's letter to his son.

FREDERIC was stung with this reproach, and resolved to prosecute the siege, regardless of all the difficulties and dangers which had induced him to deliberate. He proceeded slowly, however, on account of his want of a sufficient number of troops to form the blockade ; when, about the middle

Book XII middle of February, the frost went off, and changed entirely the operations of the contending parties

1573.

Battle on
the lake.

THE prince of Orange had not neglected to provide for this event. A great number of vessels had been prepared, and as soon as the ice was melted, and the wind favourable, they left Leyden with a large supply of provisions; and sailing along the lake, entered into the Sparen, and got safe to Haerlem. In this way the besieged were frequently supplied; nor could the Spaniards for some time procure a naval force sufficient to prevent it. At last the count de Bossut, assisted by the people of Amsterdam, collected a great number of armed vessels with which he made his appearance on the lake. And thus the scene was almost entirely changed, and the operations of the siege converted, for several weeks, into the various rencounters which passed between the fleets; while the one party laboured to introduce supplies into the city, and the other was continually on the watch to intercept them. At first the actions were slight and unimportant, but at length the number of ships on both sides being greatly augmented, they came to a general engagement; in which, after much bloodshed, victory declared against the protestants. In this action the count de Bossut acquired the highest honour, and reduced the enemy's fleet to so low a pitch, that henceforth they could not venture with safety to come within his reach. He soon after made himself master of a fort in the mouth of the Sparen, and having stationed a part of the fleet there, he rendered all access to the town by water utterly impracticable.

The vigour
and intrepidity
of the
besieged.

DURING these transactions on the lake, the townsmen and garrison exerted the same activity and vigour as before. They gave the besiegers no respite, but harassed them continually, by sallying
out

out in strong bodies, sometimes in one quarter, and sometimes in another. In one of these sallies, they drove the German forces from their entrenchments, slew upwards of eight hundred of them, set on fire their tents and baggage, and carrying off a great number of cannon and military ensigns, returned to the town in triumph ^c.

BUT Toledo was soon afterwards in a condition to prevent these eruptions, from which the besieged derived so much glory. The reinforcement which his father had been preparing, at length arrived; and his trenches were thereby secured against any attack that could be made upon them, either from within, or from without.

THE besieged began to suffer greatly from a scarcity of provisions. There was no expedient for relief, however desperate, which they did not employ. They attempted frequently in the night, to force the enemy's lines, and to open a passage for the convoy^e, which, agreeably to concert, the prince of Orange sent forward, to be ready to enter the town, in case the garrison could dislodge the besiegers from their entrenchments. But they found the enemy every where prepared to receive them, and were repulsed in all their attempts. They had then recourse to another no less desperate expedient. They broke down the dike of the Sparen, and laid all the ground between the lake and the city under water. The Spaniards being obliged, in consequence of this device, to quit the part of their intrenchments to which the water reached, some flat-bottomed boats passed into the town, with gun-powder and provisions. But the relief which the besieged received in this way was inconsiderable. Bossut being absolute master of the

Their distress.

^c Thuanus, tom. iii. p. 218.

BOOK XII. the lake, the passage by which the Hollanders had entered was soon blocked up, and all access to the town rendered as difficult as ever.

1573.

Count Battenburg defeated.

THE people of Haerlem had now no prospect of deliverance, but from a body of troops which the prince of Orange had for some months been employed in assembling, with a view to attempt the raising of the siege. He had solicited aid from the queen of England, and from the French and German protestants. But the former was averse at this time from declaring herself openly against Philip; and both the latter were too much occupied at home, to have either leisure or power to afford their brethren in Holland any effectual assistance. In the mean time, the famine in Haerlem had risen to the most dreadful height. Every species of ordinary food was already consumed; and the people subsisted on the roots of the coarsest herbs, and on the flesh of horses, dogs, and other animals, against which men commonly entertain the most irreconcilable aversion. William having got information of the extremity to which they were reduced, resolved to make an effort in their behalf, with the forces which he had already collected. They consisted partly of French, German, and English protestants, but chiefly of raw troops, which had been levied hastily for the present purpose in the neighbouring cities; amounting to four thousand foot, and six hundred horse. He intended to have conducted this little army himself, but was prevailed on by the States to give the command of it to the count of Battenburg. Notice was conveyed to the besieged of the time, when this armament would approach Haerlem, by letters tied to pigeons, which had been brought from Haerlem to Leyden, in order to be employed as messengers

gers to the besieged, in case all other communication between the cities should be obstructed ^{Book XII.}†

1573.

BATTENBURG set out from Leyden with his troops, several field pieces, and a large convoy of provisions, in the beginning of July. His instructions were, to direct his attack against the quarters of the Germans stationed towards the plain of Haerlem. The besieged, it was expected, would sally out upon them at the same time, and while they were thus distracted by one enemy before, and another behind them, it was hoped that the convoy of provisions would find an opportunity of entering the town. But Toledo having received intelligence of their design, drew up a part of his forces within their entrenchments, to repress the sally intended by the besieged, and led out the rest to meet count Battenburg. His troops being greatly superior to the enemy both in discipline and number, broke their ranks, and threw them into confusion at the first onset. The general, and upwards of two thousand men, were killed; and almost the whole convoy of provisions fell into the hands of the victors.

THIS disaster entirely broke the spirits of the besieged, and made it necessary for them to propose a surrender without delay. They accordingly sent a deputation to Toledo, with an offer to deliver up the town, on condition that the inhabitants should not be pillaged, and that the garrison should be allowed to march out of it, with the honours of war. Toledo refused to listen to these, or to any other conditions; and informed them that they must leave it to him to determine what treatment, both the garrison and citizens should receive. ^{The besieged offer to capitulate.} ^{His answer.}

THE

† Thuanus, lib. lv. c. v.

Book XII.

1573.
Their resolution.

THE besieged were too well acquainted with his implacable spirit, not to shrink at the thoughts of exposing themselves to his mercy. They had not forgotten the dismal catastrophe of Naerden. And they considered his answer as a declaration, that he had devoted them to destruction. The people ran in crowds from every quarter of the city, to the places of public resort, in order to learn the particulars of that fatal answer which the deputies had brought. The women, the aged, and all the more unwarlike part of the inhabitants, were overwhelmed with terror. As if their houses had been already in flames, or as if they had beheld the bloody sword of the Spaniard waving round them, there was nothing to be seen or heard, but tears, and shrieks, and groans. Their despair was soon afterwards converted into a degree of madness, by a resolution formed by the governor and garrison, to leave all such as were unable to bear arms behind them, and to force their way, sword in hand, through the enemy's lines. To prevent them from executing their purpose, the women hastened tumultuously (many of them with their children in their arms) to the gate where the garrison had appointed to rendezvous before their departure. It was a scene truly piteous and miserable; the women either rolling in the dust, or clinging round the necks and knees of their husbands, fathers, sons, or brothers; dissolved in tears, and imploring that they might be carried along with them, and suffered either to escape or perish together. The men were melted at the sight of so much anguish in persons so near and dear to them, and yielded at last to their intreaties. It was then agreed, that one half of all the military in the town should march in the front, the other half in the rear, and the women, children, and others unable to bear arms, in the middle between them. Drawn up in this form, they resolved to attempt a
passage

passage with their swords through the enemy's entrenchments. They knew it to be impossible, but that most of them must perish. "But if we open our gates to the Spaniards," said Riperda, "must we not likewise perish? And if we must die, (though still it is possible we may escape) is it not better to die fighting bravely in the field; we who have exerted ourselves so strenuously in defence of our religion and liberty; than after being stript of our arms, and bound like criminals, to receive an ignominious death upon a scaffold, or in a dungeon, from the hands of an ungenerous and unrelenting enemy?"

Book XII.
1573.

THEY were upon the point of putting their design in execution, when intelligence of it was carried to Toledo. He considered, that if they were not diverted from it, he should, in consequence of his victory, instead of a great and important city, acquire possession only of a desolated ruin. He reflected too on the danger to which his troops might be exposed, from the fury of so many brave men animated by despair and vengeance; and therefore, without delay, he sent a trumpet to the besieged, to give them hopes of favour and forgiveness. There was a violent struggle in their minds for some time between their fears, and the hopes with which he thus inspired them. But from their knowledge of his character, their distrust and diffidence prevailed; and they refused to hearken to his proposal, till he engaged, that, on condition of their paying two hundred thousand livres, the army should be restrained from plundering the inhabitants, and that all of them, except fifty-seven, whom he named, should receive a full pardon of their offences.

Toledo offers more favourable terms.

THIS exception of so great a number of citizens, who were the most considerable persons in the town, and had distinguished themselves by their bravery

BOOK XII. { bravery in its defence, would have prevented the accommodation from taking place, had not the German part of the garrison urged in the most determined manner, that the conditions offered should be accepted. The Walloons, on the other hand, and the Dutch, were extremely reluctant and averse; because, as they were more obnoxious than the Germans, they believed that no mercy would be shewn them. The garrison being thus divided in their sentiments, and many of them having, with a view to make their escape, secretly withdrawn from their stations on the walls, the inhabitants began to dread that the Spaniards, observing them grown more remiss than formerly, might take the town by storm; and therefore, without further delay, they sent a deputation of their number, to make the surrender on the terms proposed.

The surren-
der.

July 13.

A REGIMENT of Spaniards was immediately sent to take possession of the place. All persons, whether inhabitants or foreign soldiers, were ordered to lay down their arms. The citizens were commanded to retire into certain churches, and the garrison to certain monasteries, where guards were placed over them, to prevent their escape. And on the same day Toledo entered the town with the Spanish troops. In order to induce the foreign soldiers, of whom the garrison chiefly consisted, to concur with the inhabitants in the surrender, Toledo had given them particular assurances of safety. And although they were strictly guarded, and not suffered to depart, yet bread had been distributed to *them* as well as to the citizens; and no violence was offered them till the third day, when the duke of Alva, who had recovered from his illness, came to Haerlem, on the pretence of visiting the fortifications, but in reality to instruct his son with regard to his treatment of the prisoners.

It was then, but too late, that this brave, though now defenceless garrison repented of having so tamely delivered up their arms; and saw the folly of trusting in the mercy of an ungenerous enemy whose revenge and hatred were implacable. A massacre, which had been concerted in the interview between the father and the son, was begun, by putting to death three hundred Walloons. At the same time, the brave Riperda, and other persons of note were beheaded. But the slaughter stopt not here. Several hundreds of French, Scotch, and English soldiers, besides a considerable number of the citizens who had been seized in attempting to make their escape, were likewise butchered; and when the executioners were tired with slaughtering, they tied the unhappy victims two by two, and plunged them into the river. Even the sick and wounded were carried out into the court yard of the hospital where they lay, and put to the sword.

Book XII.

1573.
The perfidious cruelty of Alva and his son.

HISTORIANS differ as to the number of those who were involved in this dismal catastrophe; and it is remarkable that some of the Spanish writers make it greater than the Dutch. By the lowest account, nine hundred brave men were executed like the vilest malefactors, who, trusting to Toledo's promise, had given up their arms, and thrown themselves upon his mercy.

It would shock the reader's humanity to offer any excuse for such inhuman cruelty; yet it must not be denied that Alva had ample matter of challenge, when he considered how much the length of the siege, and the obstinate valour of the besieged had cost him. By the inclemency of the season, by the scarcity of provisions, and by the sword of the enemy, he had lost four thousand five hundred men; besides a great number whom their diseases or wounds rendered unfit for service. Nor was the diminution

Consequences of the vigorous defence of Haarlem.

Book XII. diminution of his forces the only loss which he sustained from this siege. It was attended with an expence, by which his treasury was exhausted. It sunk considerably the reputation of his arms; and inspired the insurgents with hopes, that an enemy, who had found it so difficult to conquer, might themselves be overcome. It afforded leisure to the other revolted cities to settle their affairs, and furnished them with the happiest opportunity of carrying on their conquests in Zealand, where the city of Middleburg still remained in the hands of the Spaniards ².

1573.

Mutiny of
the Spanish
troops.

OF the several inconveniencies which the duke of Alva suffered from the length of the siege, the draining of his treasury was not the least considerable; as it occasioned his falling behind in the payment of his troops, and rendered abortive all the succeeding operations of the campaign. He intended that they should have gone from Haerlem into North Holland, to secure the town of Alcmæer. But when orders were given for their march, they refused to obey. They had been greatly exasperated by the conditions granted to the people of Haerlem, because they were thereby disappointed in their hopes of plunder; and they resolved to make Toledo feel their resentment, by insisting on the immediate payment of their arrears. He represented to them the prejudice which the king's interest would suffer from their remaining inactive at the present crisis. But the more they perceived their importance, the higher was the gratification of their resentment. Without regard either to Toledo's remonstrances, or to the terms on which Haerlem had been surrendered, they fixed their quarters in that city; laid the citizens, already exhausted by their sufferings, under contribution, and

² Bentivoglio, p. 117. Meteren, p. 110. Meursii Auriacus, lib. viii.

and exercised over them the same tyrannical oppression, as if they had taken the town by storm: thus demonstrating to the inhabitants of the other cities, the absurdity of submitting to the Spaniards, whatever conditions might be offered; since, even when their commanders were willing to observe these conditions, they were violated by the soldiers, whose rapacity the general was unable to restrain.

Book XII.

1573

THIS incident affected the duke of Alva with the most sensible concern. He was aware of the pernicious effects that must arise from it. He had ever valued himself, and not without reason, on the exact discipline which he had hitherto maintained. Inclined, but at the same time afraid, to employ rigour and severity, lest still more pernicious consequences should follow, he resolved to make trial of persuasion; and with this view he employed the intercession of the marquis of Vitellii, who was the most beloved as well as the most respected of all his officers. Vitellii exerted his utmost art and influence; and at last, with infinite difficulty, he persuaded the mutineers to accept a part of their arrears, and to submit to the authority of their commanders *.

MUCH time having been employed in this negotiation, the season was far advanced before the army could be led to Alcmaer. This place (if they had attacked it sooner) must unavoidably have fallen into their hands. It had been the last of all the cities in North Holland, in shaking off its allegiance to Philip. The catholic inhabitants were numerous, and had been able to keep possession of one of the principal gates of the town. They had earnestly solicited Toledo to hasten to their assistance. But the mutiny of his troops having prevented him from complying with their request till

The siege of Alcmaer.

VOL. I.

C c

it

BOOK XII. it was too late, the prince of Orange had improved the leisure which this incident afforded him; and
 1573. having sent forces to the assistance of the protestant inhabitants, he had wrested the gate out of the hands of the catholics; furnished the protestants with arms, and procured for them from the neighbouring cities, supplies of provisions and military stores.

TOLEDO was aware of the disadvantages which must attend his entering on the siege of a place, situated like Alcmaer, in a marshy soil, so late in the year. But he hoped, that with so great an army as he now possessed ^h, he would be able to reduce it before the rainy season should begin; and he knew that the reduction of Alcmaer would greatly facilitate his conquest of the other towns in the province. He left Haerlem therefore as soon as Vitelli had quelled the mutiny of the troops, and marched directly towards Alcmaer ⁱ.

HAVING planted a battery on each side of the town, he began a brisk cannonading, and in a few days made such considerable breaches, that he doubted not of being able to carry the town by storm. In order to divide the garrison, he resolved to make an assault on both sides at once. The inhabitants perceived his design, and prepared for their defence. The Spaniards having passed the ditch, by means of two portable bridges, advanced to the attack with loud shouts, and full confidence that there was no force in the place sufficient to oppose them. But they soon found that courage, when grounded on despair, can in some cases supply the want both of discipline and numbers.

The Spaniards bravely repulsed.

The

^h It amounted to sixteen thousand men.

ⁱ It lies at the distance of only one day's journey from Haerlem.

The garrison, seconded by the townsmen, made so intrepid a resistance, as filled the Spaniards with astonishment. They renewed their attack several times; but were at last obliged to retire with the loss of six hundred killed, and three hundred wounded. Toledo could not, either by promises or threats, persuade them to return to the assault. Soon afterwards the rains began to fall, and the Spaniards suffered greatly from the humidity of the air and soil. The duke of Alva too had received intelligence, that the Hollanders had formed the design of opening their sluices, in order to lay the country round Alcmaer under water. To save his army therefore from destruction, he sent orders to his son to raise the siege; which Frederic did accordingly on the eleventh of October. He then marched to the southern parts of the province, and put his troops, greatly fatigued and exhausted, into winter-quarters *.

Book XII.

1573.

The siege raised.

ALVA was not more fortunate at this time by sea, than he had been by land at Alcmaer. In revenge for the assistance which the people of Amsterdam had lent the Spaniards in the siege of Haerlem, the inhabitants of Enchuysen, Horn, and other protestant cities, had fitted out against them a numerous fleet, which they stationed in the mouth of the river Ye. With this fleet they took or destroyed every vessel that attempted to pass from Amsterdam into the Zwider sea, and thus put an entire stop to the trade of that commercial city. To remedy this evil, which must soon have proved fatal to a people who subsisted wholly by trade, the duke of Alva had come himself to Amsterdam, where he had equipped with the utmost expedition a fleet, consisting of twelve ships of war, of a much larger size than usual, of which he gave the command to the count de Bossut. This

Sea-fight near Amsterdam.

C c 2

fleet

* Meteren, p. 123. Thuanus, lib. lv. sect. 8.

BOOK XII. fleet was much inferior in number to that of the
 1573. enemy ; but this disadvantage, Alva hoped, would be compensated by the number of soldiers on board, added to the superior size of the ships, and the skill and bravery of the commander.

The pro-
 testants vic-
 torious.

As soon as Bossut approached the mouth of the river, the Hollanders left their station, and retired towards Horn and Enchuyfen. Here they received a considerable reinforcement ; and soon afterwards returned, under the command of Theodore Sonoy, to watch an opportunity to encounter the enemy on advantageous terms. The two fleets for some time lay in sight of each other, and frequent skirmishes passed between them. Bossut hesitated long, whether he should venture to engage with a force so much superior ; and for this reason he kept his fleet in the open sea, and in the deepest water, where he could avail himself of the size of his ships. But the people of Amsterdam, impatient under the interruption of their trade, having transmitted a false representation to the duke of Alva of the strength of the Dutch fleet, persuaded him to send positive orders for a general engagement. Bossut, though extremely diffident of success, immediately steered towards the enemy, who lay in shallow water, prepared for his attack. The combat was begun with great spirit and intrepidity, but victory soon appeared on the side of the Hollanders ; who having a much greater number of ships than the enemy, attacked them on every side ; and being much nimbler in all their motions, did them a great deal of mischief, while their own loss was inconsiderable. Of Bossut's fleet, one ship, with all the crew, was sunk ; three were stranded, and afterwards taken by the Hollanders ; and all the rest, except the admiral's galley, saved themselves by flight. Of this vessel, the cotemporary historians speak in the strongest terms ; and represent

sent her as one of the largest, and the best equipped, that had been ever seen. She was surrounded by a number of the enemy's smaller vessels, which battered her furiously on every side, and at length drove her upon a bank. Bossut, still unwilling to suffer her to fall into their hands, continued to make the most obstinate resistance ¹, till of three hundred soldiers on board, two hundred and twenty were killed, and all the rest wounded but fifteen. In this situation, one of the Spaniards, who remembered the scenes of treachery and bloodshed in which he had been concerned in Naerden and Haerlem, advised the admiral to receive the enemy into the ship, and then to blow her in the air. But Bossut, conscious of having done every thing that either his duty or his honour could require, refused to listen to so desperate a proposal, and chose rather to confide in an offer which was made him by the Hollanders, that if he would surrender without any farther resistance, they would spare the lives of all that were on board. On this condition the ship was accordingly given up; and Bossut, with such of the crew and soldiers as survived, was conducted to prison in the town of Horn ^m.

Bossut is taken prisoner.

SONOV sent immediate notice of this victory to the States of Holland; who being sensible how much their safety depended on maintaining their superiority at sea, had been extremely anxious with regard to the issue of the contest; and they now appointed a solemn thanksgiving to be observed in all the churches of the province.

THEIR

¹ This engagement lasted for twenty-eight hours.

^m The admiral's ship called the *inquisition*, carried only two and thirty guns.—Thuanus, lib. lv. sect. vii. Meteren, p. 125. Bentivoglio, p. 133.

BOOK XII.

1573.
The States
acquire San
Gertruden-
berg.

THEIR joy on this occasion was not a little increased by the acquisition of San Gertrudenberg; which gave them the command of the Maese, and a free entrance into the province of Brabant. It was taken by a detachment of their troops, under the command of the Sieur de Payette, a French protestant, who entered it in the night by scalade, and put the garrison, consisting of a cohort of Walloons under a Spanish governor, to the sword.

St. Alde-
gond taken
prisoner.

THIS loss was in some measure compensated to the duke of Alva, by an advantage which a detachment of his army gained over the Sieur de St. Aldegond, who had marched with a body of troops to check the excursions of the Spaniards in the southern parts of Holland. St. Aldegond's forces were cut to pieces or dispersed, and he himself was taken prisoner. Alva would not have spared the life of a man, who, by his activity in rousing the spirit of liberty among his countrymen, had rendered himself so exceedingly obnoxious, had he not been restrained by his regard for the preservation of the count de Bossut; upon whom the prince of Orange had declared he would retaliate, for whatever severity should be used against St. Aldegondⁿ.

Alva leaves
the Nether-
lands.

ALVA intended to have begun the next campaign with the siege of Leyden; and with this view he seized upon a number of stations in the neighbourhood of that city. But this siege, no less memorable than that of Haerlem, was reserved for his successor. Alva had, as mentioned above, applied to Philip for liberty to leave the Low Countries, on account of the bad state of his health, occasioned by the moisture of the climate, and the fatigues which he had undergone. This was believed by many to be only a pretence; while his request proceeded in reality from apprehensions, that

* Meursii Albanus, p. 270. Meteren, p. 125.

that the king had listened to the representations of his enemies, and would soon confer his office upon another. There is very little reason however to suppose that Philip was in the smallest degree dissatisfied with his conduct, since he appears, in all his tyranny and violence, to have acted with strict conformity to his instructions. But Philip having at last become diffident of the success of those cruel measures which he had hitherto prescribed, had resolved, not from choice, but from necessity, to make trial of some more gentle expedients. He knew how unfit the duke of Alva was to be employed in the execution of this new plan of government; and he believed that no concessions would prove acceptable to the revolted provinces, that could be made by one who had rendered himself so much the object of their abhorrence. He had therefore readily consented that Alva should retire, and had, more than a year before the present period, appointed the duke de Medina Cœli, governor of the Netherlands in his room. This nobleman having found, upon his arrival, that the provinces were in a very different state from what he had expected, and that the charge which he had undertaken would probably be attended with much greater difficulty than glory, declined entering upon it, and afterwards obtained leave from Philip to return to Spain. He remained however in the Low Countries till towards the end of the present year, when the new governor, Don Lewis de Zuniga, and Requesens, arrived. And soon afterwards the duke of Alva, who had come to Brussels to receive Requesens, having resigned the regency into his hands, set out with his son, by the way of Germany and Italy, for Spain.

ON this occasion men were affected variously. Even all the protestants did not entertain the same sentiments with regard to the effects which the duke's departure was likely to produce. While some

BOOK XII.
1573.

The new
governor.

BOOK XII. Some rejoiced at it from the dread which they entertained of his abilities; others considered, that for several months past his good fortune had forsaken him; and they believed that the abhorrence which his tyranny had excited towards his person and government, would, by proving a powerful bond of union among his enemies, effectually prevent them from listening to any insidious terms of accommodation which the Spaniards might propose.

Alva's boast. HE was regarded both by the catholics and protestants, as the chief source of all the calamities in which the Netherlands had been involved. He had received his government from the dutchess of Parma, in a state of perfect tranquillity. By his tyranny, he had thrown it into the most terrible combustion, and kindled the flames of a destructive war, which he was conscious of being unable to extinguish, and had therefore applied for liberty to retire. He is said to have boasted to count Koningstein °, at whose house he lodged in his way to Italy that during his government of five years and a half, upwards of eighteen thousand heretics had suffered by the hand of the public executioner; besides a much greater number whom he had put to the sword, in the towns which he took, and in the field of battle.

His government.

THE situation of the Low Countries during Alva's administration, was truly deplorable. His oppression was not confined to the protestants; but great numbers too of the catholics were put to death, and their effects forfeited, on the pretence of their having given entertainment to heretics, or of having held a correspondence with them in their exile. Wives were punished with the utmost severity for affording shelter to their husbands, whom the council of tumults had condemned; children

for


° Uncle to the prince of Orange.

for performing the like kind offices to their parents; and in Utrecht, a father was executed for allowing his son, who had returned from banishment, to lodge under his roof, for one night. By forcing so many thousands of the most industrious inhabitants to leave the country, and by neglecting to provide a naval force to oppose the exiles at sea, commerce was almost entirely ruined; notwithstanding which, he imposed upon the people more oppressive taxes than they could have borne, if they had been in the most flourishing condition. In levying these taxes, the utmost rigour was employed. The people were often wantonly provoked, and tumults purposely excited, from which occasion was taken to punish them with confiscation of their goods, and sometimes both with death and confiscation. From the confiscations and taxes large sums were raised; yet, by maintaining so numerous an army, and by building citadels to keep the principal towns in awe, as he received little assistance from the king, who was engaged in other expensive enterprises, he fell behind in the payment of his troops; and in order to keep them in good humour, he permitted them to live at free quarters upon the inhabitants; against whom they exercised, on many occasions, the most cruel and oppressive rapacity.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE REIGN OF
PHILIP THE SECOND,
KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK XIII.

PART I.

PHILIP could not have made choice of a more Book XIII.
proper successor to the duke of Alva than 
Requesens, who had acquired some military fame 1573.
in the battle of Lepanto, and had distinguished Character of
himself in the government of Milan, by his pru- Requesens.
dence and moderation; qualities from which Philip
now hoped for greater success, in quelling the re-
bellious spirit of his subjects in the Netherlands,
than had attended the violent administration of the
duke of Alva.

To shew as early as possible, that a change of 1574.
measures had been adopted by the court of Spain, He applies
Requesens began his government with demolishing himself to
Alva's statue above mentioned, and with repressing raise the
the insolence of certain garrisons, at whose enor- siege of
burg. Middle-
mitics

mifies his predecessor had connived *. He then applied with great industry to make the necessary preparations for the relief of Middleburg ; which, having been closely besieged by the Zealanders for more than a year and a half, was now reduced to the last extremity. Several vigorous attempts had been made, during the duke of Alva's administration, to raise the siege ; but through the superiority of the Dutch fleet, they had proved abortive ; and Mondragone the governor had given notice, that if he was not relieved in a few days, he would find it necessary to surrender.

REQUESENS knew that nothing but the most pressing necessity would have drawn this declaration from an officer of so great spirit and fortitude as Mondragone. And he was sensible, that upon the preservation of Middleburg, depended *that* of all the other towns in Zealand which retained their allegiance. He therefore postponed every other object of his attention ; and having gone to Antwerp, he equipped there, and at Bergen-op-zoom, with the utmost expedition, a fleet consisting of more than thirty ships, besides transports, with provisions and military stores ^b.

THIS fleet he divided into two squadrons, one of which commanded by the vice-admiral, the Sieur de Glimes and Julio Romero, he ordered to sail from Bergen, down the Easter Scheld ; and the other under Sancio d'Avila, to fall down the Hondt or Wester Scheld, from Antwerp. By this measure, he intended to distract the enemy's attention, and to oblige them to divide their forces ; and he hoped that at least one of the two squadrons might effectuate its entrance into the canal of Middleburg.

BUT

* Strada, ab init. anno 1574.

^b Meteren, p. 131.

BUT the prince of Orange, whose adherents Book XIII.
 were numerous in every corner of the maritime 1574.
 provinces, had received early information of the
 governor's design, and had likewise got intelligence
 of his plan of operations. Having passed over
 from Holland to the isle of Walcheren, and taken
 up his residence in Flushing, in order to assist the
 Zealanders with his counsel, William stationed a
 part of his fleet on the south coast of the island, to
 lie in wait for d'Avila; and sent all the rest,
 strongly manned, and well equipped for fighting,
 up the Easter Scheld, with orders, as soon as pos-
 sible to attack the fleet under the command of de
 Glimes and Romero.

THIS fleet, with the greatest part of the trans- Battle of
Sacherlo.
 ports, had already set sail from Bergen; and Re-
 quefens, extremely anxious for its fate, had ac-
 companied it as far as Sacherlo. There it cast an-
 chor, and was waiting for the rising tide, when
 the Zealanders, commanded by Boisot admiral of
 Holland, arrived in sight. De Glimes soon per-
 ceived the superiority of Boisot's fleet, both in the
 size and number of the ships, and was of opinion
 that he ought not to proceed in the intended enter-
 prise; but he was overruled by Romero, who,
 prompted by his innate courage, and by that con-
 tempt, which, like the rest of his countrymen, he
 entertained for the Dutch insurgents, insisted that
 they should try the fortune of a battle. They ac-
 cordingly weighed anchor, and advanced to the
 enemy. In the beginning of the engagement, De
 Glimes's own ship ran foul of a sand bank, from
 which she could not be disengaged. The Zealand-
 ers perceiving her distress, attacked her on every
 side, and at length set her on fire. Romero hasten-
 ed to her assistance; but all his attempts to ex-
 tinguish the flames proved ineffectual. In a few
 minutes she sunk; after having communicated the
 flames

Book XIII. flames to Romero's ship, that had come to her
 1574 relief. Romero was obliged to jump overboard, and save his life by swimming. The Zealanders had the same fortunate success against all the other ships of the enemy; they sunk some, burnt others, and took the rest. Besides De Glimes, and several other officers, near a thousand Walloons and Spaniards perished. The victory was decisive. And Requesens had the mortification, from the dike of Sacherlo, to witness this disaster, which was great in itself; but was rendered still greater, and more afflicting to him, by the fatal consequences with which he foresaw it must be attended.

D'AVILA in the mean time, with the squadron under his command, had sailed from Antwerp, and advanced as far as Flushing. Had he proceeded in his voyage without delay, he must have reached Middleburg, in spite of the Dutch fleet which had been stationed to oppose him; for it is not probable that he would have met with great resistance from that fleet, as the flower of all the forces belonging to it had been sent with Boisot. The prince of Orange, who knew this, was extremely apprehensive of the issue, and anxiously longed for Boisot's return; but he was soon delivered from his anxiety, by observing from a promontory near Flushing, that instead of hastening forward, d'Avila had cast anchor, and seemed resolved to wait for the arrival of De Glimes and Romero. In a few hours d'Avila received intelligence of their defeat; after which, despairing of being able to relieve the besieged, he immediately set sail for Antwerp. He was pursued by the enemy; but having betaken himself to flight in time, he arrived with very little loss at his destined port.

THE

HE prince of Orange conveyed intelligence to Book XIII.
 dragone of what had passed, by a Spanish offi-
 whom he had taken prisoner, and at the same 1574.

threatened, that if he did not surrender the The sur-
render of
Middle-
burg.

in a few days, the garrison should be put to
 sword without mercy. Great numbers of the
 ged had already died of hunger, or of the un-
 lesome food to which they had been obliged to
 : recourse. Provisions of almost every kind,
 excepting the flesh of dogs and horses, were
 umed; nor had they any other food, but bread
 e of flax seed; and even this was nearly ex-
 ted. Mondragone perceiving that the destruc-
 of the garrison, as well as of the inhabitants,
 t be the certain consequence of his refusing to
 tulate, consented to give up both the city of
 dleburg and Armuyden, on condition that the
 ifons should be allowed to depart with their
 s and baggage, and that the ecclesiastics, and
 such of the catholic inhabitants as inclined to
 idraw, should have liberty to dispose of their
 ts, and be transported to the continent. Wil-
 i highly respected Mondragone on account of
 gallant conduct during the siege, and agreed to
 e conditions; but required that he should pledge
 honour that he would procure the release of St.
 egond, and two or three more of the Protestant
 lers, or return into captivity. In the sequel,
 ndragone shewed himself worthy of the confi-
 ce which was reposed in him. By his interces-
 with Requesens, St. Aldegond and the other
 oners were set at liberty ^d.

NOTWITHSTANDING this signal triumph gained Apprehen-
sions of the
prince of
Orange.
 r Requesens in his first enterprise, the prince of
 nge was not without apprehensions, that the
 erence between his character and that of his
 decessor, added to the difference of measures
 ch he seemed determined to pursue, might pro-
 duce

^d Meteren, p. 120. Bentivoglio.

BOOK XIII. duce some alteration in the sentiments of the people. The high military talents, the vigour and activity of Alva, had been objects of dread and terror. They had overawed most of the provinces, and rendered the efforts of others ineffectual; but as the oppressive violence of that tyrant had at first given birth to the revolt, so it had contributed more than any other cause to cherish and support it. Under a milder and more artful governor, William dreaded, not only that the inhabitants of the interior provinces would acquiesce in the established government, but that even the people of Holland and Zealand would be enticed, again to yield their necks to the Spanish yoke. And to prevent this, he employed every consideration that could work either on their hopes or fears.

He puts the
people on
their guard.

THE king had so far complied with their wishes, as to remove the duke of Alva; but how little reason they had to flatter themselves, that any greater regard would be now paid to their rights than formerly, was manifest from his choice of the new governor, who had procured his master's favour, by the exercise of cruelty over the Moors in Granada; and who, being a stranger and a Spaniard as well as Alva, could not be greatly interested in the prosperity of the provinces, nor have any other end in view, but to promote the tyrannical designs of the court of Spain. Requesens indeed had a more benign and placid countenance than Alva; but the danger to which the provinces were exposed, was for this reason the more to be dreaded by every friend of his country. Amidst the governor's professions of concern for their prosperity, no mention had been made of freeing them from that enormous load of taxes under which they groaned; or of delivering their consciences from that restraint and violence, which the former governor had imposed upon them; or of restoring the laws which Alva had so wantonly trampled under

under foot; or in short, of dismissing those foreign troops, from whose rapacity they had suffered such intolerable outrage. In order to accomplish these important purposes, the provinces of Holland and Zealand had taken up arms; and although the fortune of the war had been various, yet in spite of the most vigorous efforts of the duke of Alva, with a numerous army, to reduce them, these provinces were governed by their own inhabitants, and enjoyed the free and full possession of their religious and civil rights. The other provinces ought now to imitate the example of their countrymen; the king having appointed a governor over them, inexperienced in the art of war, and unacquainted with the army under his command, which was at present strongly infected with a spirit of sedition and discontent. It might perhaps appear rash and daring for the inhabitants of so narrow a territory as the Netherlands, to enter the lists with so potent an enemy as the king of Spain; but the power of that monarch was not in reality so formidable as it seemed. The great extent of his dominions served rather to embarrass and encumber him, than to add to his strength; and considering the distance of his place of residence, and the difficulty of transporting troops either from Spain or Italy, there was little reason to apprehend that he would ever be able to subdue the people of the Netherlands; if they had the resolution to act with unanimity and spirit, in a cause, in which, not only their property, and their existence as a commercial state, but their religion and civil liberty, were at stake."

Book XIII.
1574.

By these and such other arguments, did the prince of Orange animate the people to co-operate with him, in asserting their liberty, in opposition to the plan formed by the court of Spain to enslave them.

The last attempt of count Lewis of Nassau.

MEAN while, his brother count Lewis, who had resided in Germany ever since the surrender of Mons, was employed in attempting to persuade the protestant princes there, to assist him in his preparations for a new invasion of the interior provinces; to which, notwithstanding the failure of his former enterprises, Lewis was prompted, partly by his knowledge of the mutinous spirit of the Spanish troops, but chiefly by the prospect of that assistance which it was now in his brother's power to afford him. It was concerted between the two brothers, that as soon as count Lewis had finished his levies, the prince should advance with a body of troops towards the interior provinces, either to make a diversion in his brother's favour, or to unite their forces.

LEWIS found it extremely difficult to procure money to defray the expence of his intended expedition. His brother's fortune as well as his own were almost ruined by their former military enterprises. The States of Holland were involved in greater expence than they were able to support. They had, in conjunction with the prince of Orange, made application to the queen of England; but this princess, being unwilling to embroil herself with Philip, had refused to assist them. Lewis had begun his preparations, in hopes of receiving supplies from some German princes, who had promised their assistance, but who were either not inclined, or unable to fulfil their engagements. To save himself from the affront of abandoning an undertaking, in which a great number of French and German protestants had engaged at his request, he opened a negotiation with Schomberg, ambassador of Charles the Ninth of France, who at this time courted the favour of the protestant princes in Germany, with a view to facilitate the election of his brother the duke of Anjou, to the crown

crown of Poland. Between Lewis and Schomberg, who met at Francfort on the Maine, it was agreed, That if Charles should, in behalf of the inhabitants of the Low-Countries, declare war against the king of Spain, the provinces of Holland and Zealand should be immediately delivered into the hands of the French monarch; on his engaging to maintain all their rights, and in particular, the free exercise of the reformed religion. But if Charles should not make open war, it was agreed, that count Lewis should have three hundred thousand livres to assist him in his present enterprise; that the French king should have the sovereignty of Holland and Zealand, and that some of the German princes should be surety for the fulfilment of this condition. A part of the money was paid, and Lewis was thereby enabled to complete his levies, which amounted to between three and four thousand horse, and seven thousand foot.

He began his march, accompanied by his brother Henry, and Christopher, son of the elector Palatine, in the beginning of February; and despising the rigour of the season, he advanced with great rapidity towards the Netherlands, in hopes of finding the governor unprepared. Having crossed the Rhine and the Moselle, he directed his course towards Guelderland, with an intention to pass the Maese at Maestricht, and to pursue his march through Brabant, till he should unite his forces with those which his brother had engaged to bring to his assistance.

WITH so great dispatch and secrecy had Lewis conducted his preparations, that Requesens remained ignorant of his design, till he was informed that he had begun his march. By this intelligence

The governor's perplexity.

D d 2

the

* Thuanus, lib. lv. Meteren, p. 133.—Charles died soon after, and the treaty had no other consequences.

the governor was thrown into great perplexity. His troops had been lately so much reduced, that it was impossible for him to oppose both the brothers at the same time; and he considered, that to unite his forces, and employ them against Lewis, would expose the maritime provinces an easy prey to the prince of Orange. His anxiety was increased by the discovery of an intrigue, which had been formed by William's adherents, for the surprise of Antwerp. Nor was he entirely free from apprehensions that his troops might refuse to quit the towns in which they were stationed, till they should receive payment of their arrears. Having convened a council of his principal officers, and heard their opinions of the measures which they thought most proper to be pursued, he resolved to remain, together with the Marquis of Vitelli, in Antwerp, to watch the secret machinations of the prince of Orange; and such troops as could be soonest drawn together, were immediately sent off under Sancio d'Avila, to oppose the passage of count Lewis over the Maese. The rest followed soon after; having been persuaded to leave their quarters, by a promise that their arrears should be paid, as soon as the provinces were delivered from the impending danger.

LEWIS in the mean time advancing towards the frontier, had arrived within a few miles of Maeftricht, where he pitched his camp; in expectation that his friends in the place would be able to make themselves masters of one of the gates. But Requensens having discovered his intention, had dispatched several companies of light armed troops before the main army, to secure the town. Their troops arrived in time to prevent the friends of Lewis from executing their design; and in a few days afterwards, they were joined by d'Avila with the rest of the forces.

LEWIS was not prepared for undertaking the ^{Book XIII.} siege of a place so completely fortified as Maestricht; and after some trials of strength in two or three skirmishes with the Spaniards, he decamped, and marched down the East side of the river, till he came to Ruremonde; but there too, as well as in Maestricht, the protestants were intimidated and overawed, and not a single person ventured to declare in his favour. He continued his march in the same direction, resolving to hasten forward till he should join his brother, who was advancing to meet him in the country which lies between the Maese and the Waal.

1574.

D'AVILA aimed at nothing for some time, but to prevent Lewis from transporting his army over the river, and with this view he had marched as near him as possible, having the river between them; but receiving a reinforcement of two thousand veteran troops, and finding, by the information of his spies, that Lewis had laid aside his first design of crossing the Maese, and was on full march towards the prince of Orange, he considered, that it was of the highest importance to prevent their junction; and that for this purpose it was necessary to compel Lewis as soon as possible to engage. With this intention he proceeded with the utmost celerity down the river, and having crossed it by a bridge of boats at the town of Grave, he thus got between count Lewis and his brother's army. Lewis, anxious to prevent this, had avoided every unnecessary delay; but his troops, chagrined at being refused admittance first into Maestricht, and afterwards into Ruremonde, had proceeded in their march with much less alacrity than the Spaniards. He received the first intelligence of D'Avila's having crossed the Maese when he arrived at Mooch, a village at the distance of only one league from the Spanish army, and on the
same

same side of the river. He soon perceived the necessity to which he was reduced, either to give the enemy battle, or to retire. To retire, he saw, must be extremely difficult and dangerous, on account of the disorder and consternation which commonly attend a retreat; and therefore he did not hesitate to try the fortune of a battle, although he knew how much inferior his undisciplined forces were to the Spaniards, who were select veteran troops, animated by the consciousness of superior prowess, and commanded by d'Avila, a person of extraordinary abilities, who, by merit alone, had raised himself from the station of a common soldier, to the rank of general.

Battle of
Mooch.

To enable him to resist so formidable an enemy, Lewis resolved to remain in his present situation at Mooch, and to cover his infantry with a strong intrenchment. His cavalry, though reduced by desertion, was still superior to that of the enemy; but from this superiority, the nature of the ground, which rises into hills at a little distance from the river, did not suffer him to derive any considerable advantage. He drew them up as well as the unequal face of the country would permit, on the right of his camp; and upon a hill behind his main army, he placed a squadron of chosen troops, with which he intended either to fix the victory, if it should appear doubtful; or, in case of a defeat, to open a passage through the enemy to his brother, who had now advanced as far as Nimeguen to meet him. He had just time to put his troops in order of battle when d'Avila arrived, having his infantry on the right, and on the left his cavalry, flanked by a body of musqueteers, designed to support them against the superior numbers of the German cavalry.

D'AVILA began the engagement by sending three hundred men to attack the enemy's lines.
The

The troops which had been appointed to defend them, advanced briskly towards the Spaniards, and gave them a gallant and resolute reception; but they were soon compelled to retire. The Spaniards followed, and attempted to enter the camp along with them. The action there was bloody and obstinate, and fresh succours hastened from both armies to the assistance of the combatants. But the cotemporary historians differ so widely from each other in their accounts of this engagement, that it is impossible to know the truth. Some authors affirm, that the Germans acquitted themselves with honour, and made a bold and vigorous resistance. Others say, that only the French troops in count Lewis's army performed their duty, while the Germans refused to advance unless their arrears were paid, and remained obstinately in their camp till the Spaniards broke into it, and, after making prodigious havock among them, put them to an ignominious flight. In the beginning of the action, the German cavalry proved an overmatch for their antagonists; and having fallen with great fury on that part of the enemy's horse that was nearest them, they drove them to a distance from the field of battle; but when they were forming themselves again for a new attack, some fresh squadrons of the Spanish cavalry advanced, and threw them into disorder. The Spanish musqueteers, who had been placed to support the horse, were then of signal use. With their shot they galled the Germans in flank, and greatly augmented their confusion. Count Lewis and the Palatine attempted, but in vain, to rally them. These princes did every thing to restore the battle that could have been done by the most expert commanders, while they endeavoured to animate their troops by their example, and gave conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valour. Their efforts might have been crowned with success, if a body of

Book XIII.

1574.

Lewis defeated and slain.

BOOK XIII of Spanish lances had not arrived when the German reiters had begun to give way. The reiters were overpowered; above five hundred of them were killed, and of the infantry between three and four thousand. The victory was decisive, and the value of it to the conquerors was greatly enhanced by the deaths of count Lewis, his brother Henry, and the Palatine; all of whom the cotemporary historians describe as having exerted the highest degree of vigour and intrepidity, although none of these writers were able to procure information of the manner in which they fell. Their death was matter of great lamentation to the protestant confederates, and especially the death of Lewis, who had made so many great exertions in their behalf.

1574.

As soon as the prince of Orange received the melancholy news of this disaster, he began to return towards Holland, being convinced that now, when he was deprived of his brother's aid, it would be in vain for him to attempt to keep the field^f.

Mutiny of
the Spanish
troops.

WILLIAM expected that they would have immediately followed him, in order to improve their victory, whilst the terror which it inspired was recent; and they would probably have done so, had not the Spanish troops sullied the glory which they had acquired, by rebelling against their officers on the next day after the battle. D'Avila could not instantly fulfil his engagement to pay their arrears. Almost three years pay was due to them. Even before the present expedition, their patience had been worn out, and it appears to have been the hopes of plunder, or the dread of consequences fatal to themselves, that induced them to march against the Germans, more than their confidence in

^f Bentivoglio, p. 143. Thuanus, lib. lix. sect. xv. Van Meteren, p. 132.

on the promise which D'Avila had made them. BOOK XIII.
 being now freed from their apprehensions of personal danger, and disappointed in their expectations of being enriched by the spoils of the enemy, who were still poorer than themselves, they demanded from their general the immediate fulfilment of his promise; and when they only received new assurances of the same kind as those with which they had been amused before, they threatened to take vengeance on him for his falsehood and deceit. He and the other officers endeavoured to appease them, but in vain. In order to avoid their fury, he was obliged to make his escape secretly from the camp; and immediately after his departure, they ran to arms, expelled their officers, and, having from among themselves elected other officers and a commander in chief, they quickly left Mouch, and directed their march to Antwerp, with an intention to live at free quarters upon the inhabitants of that wealthy city, till they should extort payment of their arrears. 1574.

REQUESENS having received intelligence of their design, had remained at Antwerp; and, if he had complied with the counsel of Champigny, governor of the town, and taken precautions for securing a part of the fortifications which was unfinished, he might have frustrated their attempt; but being extremely diffident of the Spanish part of the garrison, which had the same ground of discontent with the mutineers, and flattering himself with the hopes of being able to appease them, he suffered them to enter the city without resistance, to the number of three thousand men. They had no sooner entered, than they formed themselves in order of battle. The citizens were overwhelmed with terror, and many of them fled precipitately out of the city. Requesens rode up to the mutineers, and remonstrating to them on the pernicious tendency of their conduct, he prayed, intreated,

Book XIII. ed, and threatened them; but could not, by addressing either their hopes or fears, draw any other concession from them, but that they would abstain from plunder, on condition that they should receive immediate payment of their arrears, and that the Walloons and Germans under the command of Champigny should be ordered to quit the town. With this last request, the governor thought it expedient to comply; and thus the mutineers were left in full possession of the place, without any force to controul them. The first object of their attention was to secure the gates, after which they dispersed themselves over the city, and took up their quarters in the houses of the principal inhabitants, where they studied to create expence, and night and day to give disturbance and uneasiness. They were perpetually demanding the fulfilment of the governor's engagements; and as they daily threatened to sack and plunder the town, if he did not speedily comply with their requests, the people were disquieted with continual apprehensions and alarms. The mutineers required payment not only of their own arrears, but of those too which had been due to such of their companions as had died of diseases or fallen in battle. At length, the sum of one hundred thousand florins was raised by the inhabitants; and the governor was obliged to pledge his jewels and furniture for the remainder, and to grant a pardon, confirmed by a solemn oath, to all concerned in this sedition; after which the mutineers returned under their former officers, and went to join the rest of the army which was now in Holland, and had already begun the siege of Leyden.

May 30.

Deſtruction
of the king's
fleet.

FROM this mutiny, Philip's interest in the Netherlands suffered greatly in several respects. In the time of D'Avila's expedition against count Lewis, Requesens having exerted his utmost vigour and activity,

activity, had equipped a numerous fleet, which he intended to employ in the recovery of Zealand. Book XIII.

1574.

When the mutineers arrived at Antwerp, this fleet, which was not yet of sufficient strength, lay under the walls of the city. Adolphus Hanstede, the commander, anxious for his charge, and apprehensive that the seditious soldiers might, in order to extort compliance with their demands, take possession of the ships, had removed them to a place at some distance from Antwerp, where they were out of the reach of the Spaniards. But in avoiding this danger he fell into a greater. The Zealanders, whose partisans were continually on the watch, quickly received intelligence of his change of station, and resolved to improve the opportunity which was thus presented to them. Having attacked him when he was utterly unprepared for defence; they took forty of his ships; sunk and destroyed several others; and rendered all the rest unfit for service. By this severe blow, the plan which Requesens had projected, for recovering the maritime towns, was entirely disconcerted. The fleet now destroyed, was to have acted in conjunction with another which Philip had been preparing in the ports of Spain. But as the Spanish fleet, was deemed too weak to contend singly with the enemy, the design was laid aside for the present; and no future governor of the Low Countries ever found it practicable to revive it ².

WHILST the Zealanders availed themselves of the sedition in the Spanish army by sea, the prince of Orange had been equally intent on deriving advantage from it by land. On receiving information of the fate of his brothers, he had begun his march, towards Holland; but when intelligence was brought him that the Spaniards had mutinied, he resolved to improve the present opportunity, of making some

² Bentivoglio, p. 149. Meteren, 137.

Book XIII. some new acquisition. Passing over into the isle of Bommel, which is formed by the confluence of the Maese and the Rhine, he engaged the chief town in it to espouse his interest; and having fixed his head-quarters there for some time, he gave support to his friends in the island, and reduced to great extremity such of the people as still adhered to the Spanish government. The marquis of Vitelli was dispatched by Requesens to oppose his progress. That able commander rendered abortive a design which the prince had formed on Bois-le-duc; and the prince, on the other hand, took measures which prevented the town of Bommel from falling into the hands of Vitelli. But the attention of both was soon after this ingrossed by a more important and interesting object, the siege of Leyden, to the relation of which I shall proceed, after mentioning an attempt of Requesens, to put an end to the war, by publishing a new act of indemnity in the name of the king.

Act of indemnity.

ALTHOUGH several persons were excluded from the benefit of this indemnity, yet it was much more comprehensive than that which had been published some time before by the duke of Alva. It did not however produce the desired effect. The people were not conscious of that guilt which Philip's pompous deed of clemency imputed to them; they believed that they had suffered wrong, instead of having done it; and they could not be grateful to him for dispensing with a punishment, which they thought it would have been in the highest degree tyrannical to inflict. Besides this, the pardon was clogged with a condition, by which almost all the inhabitants of Holland and Zealand, amounting to many hundred thousands, and great numbers too in the other provinces, were excluded. This was, that the protestants should renounce their religion, and return into the bosom of the church;

church; a condition from which Philip's bigotry ^{Book XIII.} would never suffer him to depart, nor the zeal and sincerity of the reformers permit them to accept. ^{1574.} Requesens could not be ignorant of this, yet he entertained some hopes at this time of bringing about an accommodation, by means of St. Aldegond, who had not as yet obtained his liberty. The governor sent Champigny and Junius de Jong to treat with him; but when St. Aldegond informed them that no peace would be ever agreed to by the maritime provinces, unless the question concerning religion were left to the decision of the States, Requesens, who knew that Philip would never consent to that condition, ordered the conference to be immediately dissolved ^h.

He now bent his whole attention to the siege of ^{The siege of} Leyden. He had blockaded that city for several months in the winter season, and reduced the inhabitants to great distress; but he had been obliged to desist from his undertaking, and to call off his troops to oppose the German army. They left their stations in the neighbourhood of Leyden on the 21st of March, and resumed them on the 26th of May.

In order to form a just conception of the operations of this memorable siege, it is necessary to remember that Leyden lies in a low situation, in the midst of a labyrinth of rivulets and canals. The city was large and populous; and at the time of the siege was surrounded with a deep ditch, and a strong wall, flanked with bastions. That branch of the Rhine which still retains its ancient name, passes through the middle of it; and from this stream such an infinity of canals are derived, that it is difficult to say whether the water or the land possesses the greater space. By these canals, the ground

^h Bentivoglio, p. 150.

BOOK XIII. ground on which the city stands is divided into a great number of small islands, united together by near a hundred and fifty stone bridges, that are equally subservient to the beauty of the place, and the convenience of the inhabitants. Leyden is at the distance of a few hours journey from the Hague, Delft, and Gouda, and only a little farther from Rotterdam on the one hand, and Haerlem on the other. On account of its situation, as well as on its own account, it was deemed a place of the first importance, and a prize worthy of all the ardour which was displayed by the contending parties.

1574.

THE prince of Orange, who had received notice of the governor's intention to renew the siege, communicated his intelligence to the citizens; and exhorted them to furnish themselves with stores of provisions, and to send out of the town all such persons as would be useless in defending it. They were not sufficiently attentive to these injunctions. The prince complained of their remissness, and informed them, that for three months at least it would not be in the power of the States to raise the siege.

To retard the approach of the Spaniards, he ordered ten companies of English adventurers, under the command of colonel Edward Chester, to take possession of two forts, one at the sluice of Gouda, and the other at the village of Alphen, by which the enemy must pass in their way to the city. These troops did not answer the expectation which William had conceived of their behaviour. The five companies which were placed at the sluice of Gouda, after a short resistance, betook themselves to flight; and the other five, after a skirmish in which no person fell on either side, basely imitated the example of their countrymen, and retired under the walls of Leyden. The citizens, who from
their

their ramparts had beheld their ignominious behaviour, and suspected them of treachery, refused to admit them within the town. The English ascribed their conduct to the insufficiency of the fortifications which they had been appointed to defend; but not being able to wipe out the suspicion entertained of their fidelity, they all deserted to the enemy, but a few whom the people of Leyden received with open arms¹.

Book XIII.
1574

THE prince of Orange having intended, that the English forces, after being obliged to quit their first stations, should have retired into the town, had not provided any other troops to defend it. The inhabitants were therefore reduced to the necessity of trusting for their defence, to their own valour and conduct: a circumstance, which at first had a formidable aspect, but which in the end proved the cause of their preservation; since it was thereby much longer before they were reduced by famine, than it would have been, if besides themselves, they had had a numerous garrison to support.

THE government of Leyden was committed on this occasion to Janus Douza^k, a person of noble birth; and well known in the literary world, by his poetical productions. By his example, and his eloquence, this illustrious patriot kindled in the minds of his fellow-citizens, such a zeal for liberty, and so great an abhorrence of the tyranny of Spain, as rendered them superior to every distress, and in a great measure supplied their want of military skill. They must however have been found inferior to the Spaniards; and if Valdez, the Spanish commander, to whom Requesens committed the conduct of the siege, had pushed his operations with proper vigour, he must certainly have made himself

Janus Douza, chief magistrate of Leyden.

The blockade is formed.

¹ Meteren, p. 139. ^k Or Jean Vander Does, lord of Noordwick.

BOOK XIII. himself master of the town. But whether he wanted to save his men, and to carry his end without bloodshed; or despaired, with the skill and force which he possessed, to be able to reduce so strong a place by sack and storm, he did not think of any other expedient for subduing it, but that of blocking it up on all sides, so as to prevent the entrance of supplies. To this one point, all his operations were directed. By a circular chain of more than sixty forts, which communicated with each other, and ran quite round the city, he invested it on every side, and not only rendered it impossible to introduce supplies, but even cut off all intelligence between the besieged and their friends in the other cities, except what was conveyed by pigeons, in the manner to which the protestants had recourse during the blockade of Haerlem¹.

1574.

Conduct
and resolution
of the
inhabitants.

By one of the forts called Lammén, the besieged having been deprived of the benefit of pasturing their cattle in the neighbouring meadows, they sallied out with great fury upon the Spaniards, and almost got possession of the fort; but after an obstinate and bloody contest, they were at last obliged to retire. The Spaniards fortified themselves in that station more strongly than before; and the besieged now despaired of being able, either in that, or any other quarter, to remove them to a greater distance from the city. Instead of this, they apprehended daily their nearer approach to it; and expected that they would soon open their batteries, in order to prepare for taking it by storm. This belief served to quicken the inhabitants; and the women as well as the men were employed day and night, without ceasing, in strengthening the fortifications. An account was taken of the stock of provisions

¹ These pigeons were embalmed, and are still preserved in the town-house of Leyden. *Les delices des Pays bas.*

provisions within the town ; and in order to make ^{Book XIII.} it hold out as long as possible, they began to husband it betimes. They were perpetually exhorting and animating each other, and expatiating upon the cruelty and perfidy of the Spaniards, and the unworthy fate of the people of Zutphen, Haerlem, and other places, who had trusted to their faith and mercy. When they were solicited to return to their allegiance by Lanoy, De Lique, and other natives of the Low-Countries ; they made answer, in the words of a celebrated Latin Poet,

1574

Fistulam dulce canit volucrem dum decipit auceps.

To other letters, in which they were desired to reflect on the misery to which they must ere long be reduced, they replied, that they had, upon the most mature consideration, resolved rather to die of hunger, or to perish with their wives and children in the flames of the city, kindled by their own hands, than submit to the tyranny of the Spaniards ^m.

THAT misery which, during the first two months of the siege, existed only in idea, was at last realized. Their whole stock of ordinary provisions being consumed, they were obliged to have recourse to the flesh of dogs and horses. Great numbers died of want ; and many by the use of this unnatural food. The resolution of the people at length began to fail, and they now believed their present calamities to be superior even to those they should experience under the Spanish government. Some of them conceived a design to deliver up the town, and formed a secret association for this purpose.

VOL. I.

E c

pose.

^m Another saying, still more ferocious, is recorded by some historians ; That rather than submit to so perfidious an enemy, they would feed on their left arms, and defend themselves with their right. Van Meteren, ut supra.

Book XIII.

1574

pose. But their plot being detected, means were taken to prevent them from putting it in execution. A great number of people having come one day in a tumultuous manner to a magistrate whose name was Adrian, exclaiming that he ought either to give them food, or deliver the town into the hands of the enemy, "I have solemnly sworn, he replied, that I will never surrender myself, or my fellow citizens, to the cruel and perfidious Spaniard; and I will sooner die than violate my oath. I have no food, else I would give it you. But if my death can be of use to you, take, tear me in pieces, and devour me; I shall die with satisfaction, if I know that by my death I shall for one moment relieve you from your direful necessity."

By this extraordinary answer, the people, struck with astonishment, were silenced, and their fury was for some time appeased.

The States
resolve to
lay the
country un-
der water.

THE prince of Orange, who was not ignorant of the extreme misery to which the besieged were reduced, had done every thing in his power to accomplish their relief. He had already collected large supplies of provisions; but could not, with all his activity and address, raise a sufficient force to open a passage into the city. When he found that the situation of the besieged would not admit of longer delay, he convened an assembly of the States of the province. The deputies, after considering the strength of the enemy, and the amount of their own forces, perceived it to be impracticable to relieve the besieged, either by land, or by the river and canals; they therefore had recourse to an expedient, which was dictated by despair, and was the only one at present in their power to employ. They resolved to avail themselves, against the Spaniards, of that furious element, from which their country had often suffered the most dreadful devastation;

devastation ; to open their sluices, to break down the dikes of the Maese and the Iffel, and by thus laying all the country round Leyden under water, to get access to the besieged with their fleet. Nothing could be more repugnant to the ideas of this people, than such a resolution. To drain their lands, to exclude the water, and preserve their dikes, were then, as they are still, objects to the Dutch of almost continual attention, and which cost them annually an immense expence. But they were at present animated by objects still more important and interesting ; and their love of liberty, joined to their dread of popery and the Spanish yoke, prevailed over every other consideration. The damage, which it was supposed would arise from the measure adopted, was estimated at six hundred thousand guilders. But they considered, that if the Spaniards should succeed in their present enterprize, not only the region to be overflowed, but all the rest of the province, would fall under their subjection. This the States regarded as infinitely worse than either poverty or death ; and in their present disposition, they would have chosen to ruin the country altogether, rather than leave it to be enjoyed by an enemy whom they held in such abhorrence. They were now employed in the demolition of those mounds, upon which their existence as a nation depends, with a degree of industry and ardour, equal to that which they were accustomed to employ in repairing them, after the ravages of an inundation.

Book XIII.

1574.

THE water, after its barriers were removed, diffused itself over all the adjacent fields ; and in a few days, almost the whole region which lies between Rotterdam, Gouda, Delft, and Leyden, was overflowed. The Spaniards were thrown at first into the utmost dread and terror ; but when they understood the cause of this unexpected in-

Book XIII. undation, and observed that the water did not
 1574. rise above a certain height, they recovered from
 their astonishment. They were obliged to abandon
 such of their forts as were situated in the lower
 grounds, and to retire to those which stood higher;
 however, of these last, they hoped to be able to
 keep possession, and to continue the blockade, till
 the famine, which they knew raged in the town
 with dreadful fury, should conquer the obstinacy
 of the citizens, and bring the siege to a conclusion.

THE prince of Orange, in the mean time, was
 employed with the utmost diligence in preparing
 every thing necessary to secure the successful exe-
 cution of his intended purpose. He ordered to
 be built, at Rotterdam and other places, near two
 hundred flat-bottomed vessels, having each of them
 ten, twelve, fourteen, or sixteen oars; and these
 he mounted with guns, and manned with eight
 hundred Zealanders; a rude and savage, but a
 brave and determined band, animated at once by
 religious zeal, and the most implacable hatred
 against the Spaniards; and whose appearance was
 rendered horrid by the scars of innumerable wounds,
 which they had received in their late naval en-
 gagements. They were brought from the fleet
 by Boisslot, the admiral of Zealand, to whom the
 conduct of the present enterprise was committed^a.

WITH such of the vessels as were already equip-
 ped, Boissot left Delft in the beginning of Sep-
 tember, and directed his course towards Leyden.
 But the water had not as yet risen to a sufficient
 height, and the banks of the rivers and canals, in
 which only there was a proper depth of water,
 were

^a The spirit by which these men were actuated, may be
 conceived from their method of distinguishing themselves;
 which was by wearing a half moon on their caps, with this in-
 scription, *Türks* rather than *papists*. Meteren, 140.

were so strongly fortified, as to render his approach to the city impracticable. From some of their forts he obliged the Spaniards to retire, but others were of sufficient strength to withstand his most vigorous attacks. In order to avoid these, he continued to break down more dikes as he advanced, and in his progress, had several bloody engagements with the enemy. The blockade, however, remained still as close as ever. Boissot began to be apprehensive of the issue. Heaven seemed not to favour his design. The north wind continued much longer than had been ever known at the present season, and retarded the water in its ascent. The prince of Orange, when Boissot entered upon this expedition, had been confined to his chamber by a dangerous illness. He was now recovered, and came to visit the admiral's disposition of his ships, which he found to be exactly conformable to the directions which the States had given him; but their design, the prince perceived, must prove abortive, and all their labour and expence be lost, unless the wind should change soon to another quarter, and the autumnal tides rise as usual.

Book XIII.

1574.

WITH extreme impatience they now expected the approach of these tides, which are commonly the subject of dread and terror to the Hollanders. The situation of the besieged was become the most deplorable and desperate. During seven weeks there had not been a morsel of bread within the city; and the only food had been the roots of herbs and weeds, and the flesh of dogs and horses. Even all these were at length consumed; and the people reduced to live on soup made of the hides of animals which had been killed. A pestilence succeeded to the famine, and carried off in a few weeks some thousands of the inhabitants. Those who survived, overwhelmed with anguish at the dismal

The anxiety and misery of the citizens.

BOOK XIII. dismal scenes which they daily witnessed, were scarcely able to perform the mournful office of burying the dead. In this dreadful situation, they beheld from their walls, the sails and flags of the vessels destined for their relief; but had the mortification to perceive, that it was utterly impossible for them to approach. It is not surprising that some of the people, finding their misery greater than they were able to endure, should have entertained the thoughts of surrendering the town to the enemy. Some conspiracies were again formed for this purpose; but they were discovered and defeated by the vigilance of Douza, supported by a great majority of the people, to whom neither the pestilence, nor famine, nor death, in its most hideous forms, appeared so dreadful, as the tyranny of the Spaniards.

Their deliverance.

BUT the time of their deliverance was at hand; and Heaven interposed at last in a conspicuous manner in their behalf. Towards the end of September, the wind changing from the north-east to the north-west, poured the ocean into the mouths of the rivers with uncommon violence; and then veering about to the south, it pushed the water towards the plains of Leyden, till they were converted into a spacious lake, in which the Spanish forts were seen scattered up and down, and many of them almost covered with the water.

BOISSOT seized with ardour the opportunity which was thus presented to him. And though several of the enemy's fortifications still lay in the way by which it was necessary for him to advance, he soon obliged the Spaniards to abandon them. The Zealanders pursued them, sometimes on foot along the dikes, and sometimes in their boats; and had several fierce rencounters with them, in which, from the advantage which their boats afforded

forded them, they were every where victorious. Book XIII.
 The situation of the Spanish troops at this time 1574.
 was truly deplorable. Some were swallowed up in the mud and water; and others attempting to march along the dikes, were either killed by the fire from the boats, or dragged down with hooks fixed to the ends of long poles, and put to the sword without mercy. Fifteen hundred perished in their retreat.

ALL the forts were now forsaken, except the fort above mentioned, called Lammen, of which, if the Spaniards had kept possession, they might have retarded the approach of the fleet for several days. This fort was much stronger, and stood higher than the rest. But when the garrison understood that their general had fled, and that the Zealanders on the one hand, and the besieged on the other, were preparing to begin an attack, they abandoned their station, and by torch light effectuated a junction with the rest of the forces, in the middle of the night.

In this manner was the siege of Leyden raised, in the beginning of the fifth month after the blockade was formed. Boissot advanced without delay to the gates of the city. The people, pale and meagre, ran, as their small remains of strength would allow, to meet him; and many of them so greedily devoured the food which he distributed, that what was intended for their relief, proved the cause of their instant destruction; for provisions of every kind in the city had been entirely exhausted, and the besieged were so weakened, that if the blockade had continued two days longer, they must all have perished*.

WHEN

* They escaped still more narrowly from falling into the hands of the enemy. In the night immediately preceding, and at the very time when the Spaniards were making their retreat from the fort of Lammen, a great part of the wall of the city having

WHEN they were somewhat refreshed with the food which Boissot had brought, they accompanied the magistrates to one of the churches, where they rendered thanks to the Almighty for their deliverance. Never was any assembly more deeply agitated. By the consideration of that signal and unexpected deliverance, when they were upon the brink of ruin; joined to their remembrance of the dismal scenes which they had witnessed, and of the many friends and fellow citizens whom the famine and pestilence had carried off, their minds were overpowered at once with gratitude and sorrow. They were dissolved in tears; and mingled together the voices of praise and of lamentation.

THE cotemporary historians have further recorded, that when the prince of Orange received information of the raising of the siege, being engaged in public worship in one of the churches at Delft, he stood up, and read to the audience the letters which contained the intelligence; after which, the States being convened, a day of general thanksgiving was appointed.

THE Spanish army took their route by the way of Amsterdam and Utrecht, and attempted to get possession of the last of these places by surprise; but the gates being shut against them, and a contribution of money offered, they were prevailed on to pursue their march towards Maestricht, where they were put into winter-quarters ^P.

P A R T

having fallen down, the noise reached the ears of the Spaniards; who, if they had known the cause, might have entered the town without resistance. But their dread represented the noise to their imaginations as the approach of the enemy, and served only to precipitate their flight.

^P Mezeren, p. 139. Meursii Auriacus, p. 130. Bentivoglio, p. 151.

The Spaniards threw all the blame of the failure of their enterprise upon their general; whom they accused of having been remiss in his operations against the town, on account of a bribe
of

P A R T II.

THE difficulties which the Spaniards encountered in the several enterprises that have been related, gave Philip a very different idea of the spirit, vigour, and resources of the malcontents, from what he had hitherto entertained; and determined him to listen to an offer, which his cousin the emperor Maximilian made at this time, of mediating a reconciliation. Maximilian was prompted to interpose his influence, partly perhaps by concern for the interest of his kinsman, but chiefly by his apprehension, that through the close connection which subsisted between the Dutch and German protestants, the flame which raged with so much fury in the Low Countries, might at last diffuse into Germany. Having therefore interceded with Philip to grant the insurgents favourable terms, and obtained powers to negotiate an agreement, he transferred these powers to count Schwartzburg, whom he sent into Holland, in the beginning of the year 1575, attended by several German nobles. On the count's arrival in Dort, he had an interview with his kinsman the prince of Orange; with whom he employed all his own influence, and that of the emperor, from whom he brought a confidential letter to the prince. From the respect due to the emperor, William consented to a congress in the city of Breda. But as he could

Book XIII.

1575:
Negotiations for
peace.

of two hundred thousand florins, which they alleged he had accepted, either from the States of Holland or from the people of Leyden. Whether there was any ground for this accusation, does not appear with sufficient evidence. But the soldiers flew to arms, seized his person and confined him, till he agreed to pay them the two hundred thousand florins, which, they said, he had received from the Hollanders.

Book XIII. could not be persuaded, that Philip would be ever brought to offer conditions, which the States could accept with safety, he believed, that the treaty proposed would prove abortive, and therefore he exhorted the States to keep themselves in a posture of defence, and to prosecute with vigour their preparations for renewing the war, when the congress should be dissolved. The prince himself was not of the number of the deputies; nor did those who were appointed, though less obnoxious to Philip's resentment, think it safe to trust themselves in the power of the Spaniards in Breda, till Romero, and Mondragone, and two other persons of distinction, were sent into Holland as hostages.

1575.

FROM the proceedings at this congress, and the mutual distrust which the deputies discovered, the reader will easily perceive the causes which rendered ineffectual, not only the present attempt, but likewise all the endeavours which were afterwards employed, during the space of forty years, to reconcile the contending parties.

March 14th. THE demands of the States of Holland and Zealand consisted of two articles; that the governor should immediately dismiss the foreign troops; and that a general assembly of the States of all the provinces should be held to determine the several points in controversy, whether civil or religious.

IN answer to these requests, the Spanish deputies observed, that it was unreasonable to call the Spaniards by the name of foreigners, since they were equally the subjects of the king as the people of the Netherlands, and had done him the most signal service, in that very country from which he was now requested to expel them. That the Germans, French, and English, in the service of the States, might with much greater propriety be denominated foreigners. That the king did not intend, in case
peace

peace were established, to retain the Spanish troops in the Low Countries any longer than necessity should require ; but that it would be highly improper to urge him any further on this subject, as he could not, consistently with honour, dismiss the forces in the present posture of his affairs. They added, that after tranquillity was restored, the king would not be averse from the convocation of the States, nor oppose their deliberating concerning such affairs as properly belonged to them. That he would be ever ready to listen to their counsel, and would regulate his conduct agreeably to it in every thing that was just and reasonable. And that, in the mean time, he was graciously pleased to make them an offer of a full indemnity of their past offences, upon the following conditions : That all cities and forts, with their artillery and stores, should be delivered into his hands ; that every heretical form of worship should be proscribed ; and that all such persons as were unwilling to forsake their errors, should dispose of their effects and leave the country.

To these declarations and offers of the Spanish deputies, those of the States replied, that notwithstanding what had been said, they must still adhere to their first request of having the provinces delivered from the oppression of the Spanish and other foreign troops. These troops were indeed subjects of the king of Spain ; but they were not subjects of the duke of Brabant, or the earl of Flanders, Holland, or any other of the provinces, in which therefore they could not be suffered to remain, without a violation of a fundamental law of the constitution. It was true, that the French and English troops were foreigners ; but these troops had come into the Low Countries at the desire of the States ; they had never assumed to themselves any share in the government, and were deemed

BOOK XIII. deemed necessary by the States for their defence against the Spaniards; whereas the Spaniards had, from their first entrance into the Netherlands, treated the inhabitants as enemies and slaves; had arrogated to themselves every important branch of the administration, and had, on many occasions, exercised the most unrelenting cruelty, indulging, in the most abandoned manner, their lawless lust and avarice, to the utter ruin of great numbers of the innocent and faithful subjects of the king. It would be impossible to restore tranquillity to the provinces while these men were allowed to remain, nor were they friends to the king or the peace proposed, who advised him to retain them. If the service which the king had received from his Spanish troops, were compared with the mischief of which they had been the authors, it would be found that they had done infinitely greater harm than good; and that, by the lawless rapine which they had exercised, they had received much more than a sufficient compensation for all their services. The inhabitants of the Low Countries were conscious of having often contributed to advance the glory of the Spanish crown. Nor could even their late conduct, if justly considered, be interpreted as a breach of their duty to the king, since they had never opposed his exercising any rights which appertained to him as sovereign of the provinces; and although they had taken up arms, they had never employed them but in vindicating those rights and privileges which the king himself had sworn to maintain, or in defending their lives and fortunes, their wives and children, against the violence and lawless tyranny of the Spaniards.

It gave them much concern to find, that the king would not agree to summon an assembly of the States till peace should be restored, as they were

were convinced that no other means so effectual could be devised for establishing peace on a firm and permanent foundation. It gave them still greater concern to hear the deputies, in the name of the king, express themselves, as if they looked upon the States only as counsellors, whose advice he would or would not follow, according as he should judge expedient. This they could not help considering as intimation, that the States were to be limited in the exercise of their authority; and if this was intended, no useful purpose could be served by calling them together. With the conditions annexed to the proffered indemnity, it was impossible they could comply. They could not deliver the cities and forts into the hands of the Spaniards, without being apprehensive of the fraud exemplified in the fable of the war between the wolves and the sheep, in which the latter were persuaded to give up their auxiliaries the dogs into the hands of their crafty foes. For they had not forgotten the fate of the counts Egmont and Horn, and many others, who repented, when it was too late, of putting faith in promises which their enemies could violate with impunity. And with respect to the other condition, that all heretics should quit the country, as they could not believe the religion now established in Holland and Zealand to be heretical; so if all who had renounced the popish faith were to be deemed heretics, and expelled from the Netherlands, there would not be a sufficient number left to keep the dikes in repair; the country would be stripped of the greatest part of its inhabitants, and ere long be buried in the waves. They concluded with intreating the deputies to take the representation they had made in good part, as proceeding from their zeal for the interest of the king as well as of the provinces; and with praying Almighty God to inspire the king and his ministers

BOOK XIII. ministers with milder sentiments than those which they had hitherto embraced.

1575

IN the reply which was made to this remonstrance, the Spanish deputies, after complaining of the spirit in which it was composed, said that the king would so far comply with the request relative to the foreign troops, as to send them away immediately after the terms of peace were settled, provided the States would at the same time dismiss the foreigners in their service, and deliver up the cities and other fortified places. He would likewise summon the assembly of the States, as soon as the present disturbances had subsided; but he could not, consistently with his dignity, submit to their decision, the conditions on which peace was to be established; since this would be to abandon what he regarded as his peculiar prerogative, and to allow them to prescribe where it was their duty to obey. In particular, he was determined never to refer to their decision the important question concerning religion. The States, as well as the king, had sworn to maintain the catholic faith; and no consideration would ever prevail on him to suffer them to depart from it in the smallest article. He was not afraid of depopulating the maritime provinces by the expulsion of heretics; on the contrary, he believed that these provinces would flourish more, for that tranquillity which unity of faith would ensure; and if the heretical ministers were removed, he doubted not that the people would soon perceive the folly into which they had been betrayed, and return into the bosom of the church.

May 31st.
Final answer of the
States.

THE deputies of Holland and Zealand, after consulting their constituents, gave the following as their ultimate reply, That they were willing to refer the several points of difference, the dismissal
of

of the Spanish troops, the delivering of the cities, Book XIII.
 forts, and military stores, the nature of the secu-
 rity to be given for the fulfilment of the conditions
 of the peace, and even the article of religion, to
 the general assembly of the States of all the pro-
 vinces: and they were willing, they said, to make
 the last of these concessions, not from any inten-
 tion of giving up their religion, which no conside-
 ration would induce them to forsake; but from
 the deep concern which they felt on account of
 the long continued calamities of their fellow-citiz-
 ens; to put an end to which, they were ready to
 abandon their native country, if the States should
 find it necessary to establish a religion, with which
 their consciences would not suffer them to comply.

1575.

COUNT Schwartzburg now perceived that no greater concession could reasonably be expected. The confer-
 ences dis-
 solved.
 He represented to the governor, that considering
 how deep the protestant religion had struck its
 roots in the maritime provinces, the extirpation of
 it could not be speedily accomplished; and he
 urged him to grant a truce for six months, during
 which time the exercise of that religion should be
 permitted, and every lenient measure employed to
 soothe and conciliate the minds of the people. But
 Requesens had not authority from the king to
 agree to this request; and he refused to grant even
 a truce of two months, except on condition that
 the protestants should abstain from their mode of
 religious worship, and oblige their ministers im-
 mediately to quit the country. With this con-
 dition Count Schwartzburg knew that the mari-
 time provinces would never be persuaded to com-
 ply. He therefore despaired of being able to
 bring his negotiation to the desired issue, and soon
 after set out for Germany. The congress was
 dissolved. The hostages were restored; and the
 contending

BOOK XIII. contending parties, having their resentment more inflamed than ever, applied themselves to the prosecution of the war ^p.

1575.

The war renewed.

July 12th.

THE deputies had no sooner left Breda, than Requesens published an edict, prohibiting all communication with the malecontents; and immediately afterwards sent his troops, under the count de Hierges, to lay siege to the town of Buren; which they soon obliged to capitulate. From Buren they marched to Oude-water, and in spite of a brave and vigorous defence, they took it by storm; exercising at this place their wonted fury, and putting the garrison and all the inhabitants to the sword, without distinction either of sex or age. Hierges proceeded next to Schowen upon the Leck. The prince of Orange made haste to send a reinforcement to the garrison. But the inhabitants dreading the same fate as that of the people of Oude-water, obliged the garrison to surrender. After which, Hierges directed his march towards Crimpen. Vitelli, in the mean time, with the forces under his command, reduced a number of places which lie between the Leck and the Vahal; and Mondragone was no less successful in the quarter of Holland, which borders upon Brabant.

The governor undertakes the conquest of Zealand.

BUT Requesens did not incline that his troops should push their conquests in Holland any further at present. In compliance with his instructions, he resolved to bend his whole attention to the reduction of some of the principal towns in Zealand, which Philip was desirous of acquiring, for the reception of a fleet to be sent from Spain. In order to accomplish this design, Requesens drew off his troops from Holland; and had, some time before,

fore, prepared a number of flat-bottomed vessels, proportioned to the depth of the gulfs and canals. In these vessels he intended to have transported his troops to Zealand; but the prince of Orange having received intelligence of his design, and collected a naval force of the same kind, much superior in number, he relinquished his first plan, and adopted another that seemed equally difficult and dangerous. This was to imitate what was done by Mondragone, when he raised the siege of Tergoes, and to make the soldiers wade through an arm of the sea, which was five miles broad.

Book XIII.

1575.

IN the north-east parts of Zealand, there are three islands much larger than the rest; Tolen, Duveland, and Schowen. Tolen, which lies nearest to Brabant, was in the hands of the Spaniards; and between this island and Duveland, lies the little isle of Philipsland, which is separated from Duveland by the canal, or arm of the sea, over which Requesens intended that his forces should pass on foot. It was known from some experiments which had been made, that this canal was fordable; nor was it quite so broad as that which Mondragone's troops had passed over to the relief of Tergoes. But there was still much reason to suspect that the attempt would be found impracticable.

Bold and singular enterprise of the Spaniards.

SUCH of the officers as were of this opinion, observed that there was a wide difference between the enterprise in question, and that of Mondragone, whose men had no other obstacles to encounter but those of the passage, and needed only strength and patience to ensure success; whereas, in the present case, the enemy had taken the alarm, and were continually upon the watch; the ford was in a manner besieged by their numerous vessels, which were ready to attack the Spaniards, when they would be unable to defend themselves. And even allowing that they should surmount these difficulties,

BOOK XIII. and effectuate their passage, yet what remained for them, on their approach to the opposite shore, but to be attacked by a fresh and vigorous enemy, advantageously posted before they could disentangle themselves from the mud and water.

1575.

By these considerations some of the principal officers were induced to remonstrate against the intended enterprise, as too hazardous and desperate; and they were of opinion, that no attempt ought to be made on Zealand till the fleet from Spain should arrive. But this prudent counsel was not suited to the bold intrepid spirit which animated the greater part of the Spanish officers. The remembrance of their former victories, joined to their contempt of the malcontents, inspired them with confidence of success; and they were unwilling to divide the glory of their conquests with their countrymen, who were supposed to be on their way from Spain. If this enterprise, said they, be impracticable in the day, why may we not undertake it in the night; when we shall either elude the vigilance of the enemy; or, if they get information of our design, yet we shall have little reason to dread their efforts, as they will be obliged to fire their guns at random, and spend their force in air. The troops posted on the other side to oppose our landing, will act, as their countrymen have often done on similar occasions. The boldness of our adventure, and the daring countenances of our men, will overwhelm their dastardly spirits with dismay and terror.

REQUESENS was not naturally fond of rash or daring enterprises; but being exceedingly desirous to carry his scheme of subduing Zealand into speedy execution, he transported three thousand select troops, composed of an equal number of Spaniards,

Spaniards, Walloons and Germans, to the isle of Philipland. Then having ordered d'Avila to attend him with the fleet, on board which he put one half of these forces, he gave the command of the other half, destined to attempt the passage, to Osorio d'Ulloa, a Spanish officer of distinguished courage, who had warmly exhorted him to undertake this bold and singular expedition.

Book XIII.
1575.

ON the 28th of September, as soon as it was dark, and the tide had begun to retire, Ulloa entered the water at the head of his troops, with the guides before him. The troops were followed by two hundred pioneers; and the rear-guard was formed by a company of Walloons, commanded by an officer of the name of Peralta. They could march only three men a-breast, on the top of a ridge of earth or sand, and were often obliged to wade up to the shoulders, and to bear their muskets on their heads, to preserve them from the water. They had advanced but a little way, when the Dutch and Zealanders approached, and began a furious discharge of their small arms and artillery. And not satisfied with this, many of them leaped into the water, and with hooks fastened to the ends of long poles, laid hold of the soldiers, oppressed with the weight of the element through which they toiled; massacring some, and plunging others in the waves. Nothing but the darkness of the night, which prevented the two squadrons of the enemy's ships from acting in concert, could have saved the royalists from destruction. But, notwithstanding the difficulties under which they laboured, they persisted bold and dauntless in their course, exhorting and assisting one another; and without quitting their ranks, repelling the enemy, and defending themselves as well as their desperate circumstances would allow. Their calamities increased as they approached to the opposite shore. For besides, that their vigour was impaired, they had deeper

water to pass, and the enemy's ships could come nearer to the ford. At last, however, they reached the land, in time to save themselves from destruction. The banks were lined with a numerous body of troops; and if these troops had behaved with an ordinary degree of resolution, it is impossible that the Spaniards, drenched as they were with mud and water, and exhausted with fatigue, could have stood before them. But unfortunately, in the beginning of the attack, their commander was killed, by an accidental shot of one of his own men. Consternation seized his troops, and they fled in the most dastardly manner, before an enemy unable to pursue.

THIS extraordinary adventure, though it succeeded beyond what could justly have been expected, was not executed without loss. The pioneers were all either overtaken by the tide, or destroyed by the enemy. The rear guard under Peralta saved themselves by returning back. Of the troops under Ulloa, a considerable number was killed or drowned, and others wounded. But among the killed there was only one person of distinction, named Pacheco; concerning whom it is recorded, that being wounded by a musket shot, and unable to advance, and some of his men urging him to suffer them to bear him on their shoulders; he replied, "*That* would serve only to retard your march. My wound is mortal; I die, and not without some honour in so glorious an enterprise." Saying this, he sunk down into the water¹.

WHEN

¹ Bentivoglio, p. 168. This historian gives the same authority for the above mentioned particulars, as for those of the passage at Tergoes; the testimony of Rivas, governor of Cambray, who was an actor in both.

The Spaniards were not a little encouraged by an appearance then rare, but since familiar and common, an Aurora Borealis, or northern light; which shone all the time of their passage, and which they interpreted as a sign wrought by Heaven in their behalf.

WHEN the Dutch and Zealanders saw that, in spite of their opposition, the royalists had accomplished their design, they quitted the canal, and went to give notice of what had happened to the inhabitants of the sea-port towns, which they supposed the enemy intended to attack. Requesens immediately laid hold of the opportunity which their departure afforded him, to transport the rest of his forces to Duveland; where they joined their companions, and soon compelled all the protestant troops on the island to fly over to Ziricsee, the capital of Schowen.

Book XIII.
1575.

THE reduction of that city was the immediate and principal object of the present expedition. For besides, that Requesens hoped, by possessing Ziricsee, to be able to disturb the communication between Holland and Zealand, he considered it as the fittest place for the reception of the reinforcement which he expected from Spain; and he intended to make it the seat of his strength in that quarter, till he should collect a naval force sufficient to ensure the conquest of Middleburg, Flushing, and the other towns in Walcheren. Towards Ziricsee, the army now commanded by Mondragone, proceeded without delay. Before they could reach it, they found it necessary to pass over the canal, which separates Duveland from Schowen, and on the opposite side of which they saw the enemy prepared to dispute their passage. This did not deter them from the prosecution of their design. Animated by the example of their leaders, they leaped without hesitation into the canal, which was near a league over, having the bottom full of mud, and advanced forward with such undaunted intrepidity, that the enemy, regarding them as more than men, abandoned their station, and left the passage free and undisputed.

MONDRAGONE would have immediately begun the siege of Ziricsee, but thought it necessary before-hand The desperate defence of Bommene.

Book XIII.

1575.

hand to make himself master of certain posts, which the Zealanders had fortified, in order to secure the communication between the inhabitants of that town, and their friends in the other islands and on the continent. These forts were three in number; one on the south near Borendam, and the other two called Browershaven and Bommene, on the north and east. Through the imprudent confidence of the Spaniards, who made an assault on the first of these forts too soon, it cost the lives of sixty of that nation, with Peralta their commander; besides a considerable number of Germans and Walloons. The fort of Browershaven submitted without resistance; but that of Bommene, which was better fortified, was likewise more valiantly defended than the other two. Du Lis, a French officer, commanded the garrison, consisting of Germans, French, and English; into whose breasts he had infused the same generous and dauntless spirit with which he himself was animated. The behaviour and fate of this brave determined garrison deserves a place in history. At the time of high water their fortification was impregnable, as at that time the sea filled both the ditch which surrounded it, and a canal which passed through it; but at low water, and for some hours before and after that time, the ditch was fordable, and the enemy could advance to the very foot of the wall. Both Requesens and Vitelli had come to direct the operations of the siege. Agreeably to their commands, the royalists, after approaching as near as possible to the ditch, by means of trenches, opened a large battery, which continued firing upon the fort for two days incessantly, till a sufficient breach was made. Then waiting till the water had retired, they made a furious assault; but the besieged withstood their most vigorous efforts, and at last obliged them to retire, with the loss of a hundred and fifty killed, and twice that number

number wounded. The Spaniards, enraged on account of their repulse and loss, returned to the assault next day, and began to storm the fort on different sides at the same time. Both parties were highly agitated with fury and despair, and both were alike determined either to die or conquer. The prospect of the returning tide wrought equally on the fears of the assailants, and the hopes of the besieged. The former knew, that if they did not carry their point soon, they must a second time suffer the shame and slaughter of a repulse, and the latter considered, that if they could hold out a few hours longer, the water would deliver them for the present, and the enemy be perhaps deterred from renewing the assault. Incited by these reflections, the combatants on both sides exerted all their vigour, and displayed a degree of valour and prowess which seldom occurs in the annals of history. Each person regardless of his safety, and intent only upon annoying the enemy, the conflict was as bloody and desperate, as the issue was critical and important. It had lasted for near six hours, and many of the bravest on both sides had fallen. At last, the assailants, perceiving the quick approach of the tide, and collecting and exerting at once their whole force, overpowered the besieged with their numbers, and burst forward irresistibly within the walls of the fort; in which the garrison still continued to resist, till there was not a single person left to enjoy the glory of so illustrious a defence. The royalists paid dear for their victory; above two hundred men, besides those who had fallen in the first assault, were killed upon the spot, and a much greater number wounded.

THEY now proceeded to the siege of Zirciee; The siege of Zirciee
and in this undertaking their difficulties were greatly

greatly augmented, and the siege prolonged by a resolution of the inhabitants, who had broken down the dikes of the canal, and laid the adjacent country under water. This measure, of which the States of Holland had lately set the example during the siege of Leyden, shewed how firmly determined the citizens were to make a vigorous defence, and rendered impracticable all the ordinary methods of conducting sieges, by trenches, batteries, and assaults. Mondragone perceived, that the reduction of Zircsee must be a work of considerable time, and that the only expedient which he could employ, was to block it up on every side, so as to prevent the entrance of supplies. These it could receive only by the way of a small canal dug from Zircsee, to the great one above mentioned, which separates Schowen from the isle of Duveland.

IN order to secure the communication between these canals, the Zealanders had fortified the banks of the smaller, where it is joined to the greater; and while they retained possession of the batteries which they had planted there, they secured a free entrance to the ships which were sent from Holland and Walcheren with supplies. To deprive them of this resource, and lock up the mouth of the small canal, was the first and principal object of Mondragone's attention. For this purpose he stationed his ships in those parts where the water was deepest; and formed in the most shallow parts, an estacade, a work of a prodigious labour, which employed his troops for several months, and was attended with considerable bloodshed. By perseverance, however, he brought it at last to a conclusion; and then having drawn another stacado of the same kind, from an island which lay in the entrance of the canal, he joined the two stacados together by strong iron chains, and thus rendered all access impracticable.

DURING

DURING the progress of these operations, the protestants embraced every opportunity of introducing supplies into the city; and they were greatly favoured by the season, which was so much milder than usual, as to leave the river and canals navigable through the whole of winter. But in the beginning of February, the enemy's works were completed, and from that time, all attempts to relieve the besieged, by the way of the small canal, proved ineffectual. Their friends were therefore obliged to turn to another quarter.

BOOK XIII.
1576.

IN the beginning of the siege several cuts had been made in the dike of the great canal, on the side of Schowen, in order, as was mentioned above, to overflow the country. Through one of these cuts, near the village of Dreifcher, the prince of Orange proposed to convey supplies to Ziricsee across the inundation; and he committed the execution of his design to count Hohenloe, a German nobleman of the most unquestionable spirit and resolution; but a storm arising, and the Spaniards having encamped most of their forces, and planted batteries on the dike, close by the cut, they obliged Hohenloe to retire. The prince, not discouraged by this check, prepared to make a second attempt with a more powerful armament. And in order to animate his troops, he resolved to conduct the enterprize himself.

HE reached Dreifcher, and approached the cut, at the time of high water. In the beginning of the attack he threw the enemy into confusion, made considerable slaughter among them, and carried off some pieces of cannon from their batteries. But the Spaniards, roused by the danger which threatened them, quickly recovered their stations, and made a bold and vigorous resistance, till

The prince of Orange attempts in vain to relieve it.

Book XIII. till the tide began to retire; when the prince perceiving it to be impracticable to advance, was obliged, in order to save his fleet from destruction, to return into the great canal. Boissot the admiral, whose ship was much larger than the rest, did not retreat in time; and his ship having struck against the bottom, he himself, and about three hundred of his crew, either perished in the waves, or were killed by the enemy. This was the last attempt for the relief of the besieged; who being at length overpowered with their miseries, agreed to surrender the town into the hands of Mondragone; and that general, desirous to put a period to so tedious an enterprise, granted them such favourable terms, as they were willing to accept*.

1576.

THIS siege had lasted near nine months, and during all that time had occupied the greatest part of the Spanish army.

**Death of
Vitelli.**

BUT before the surrender of Ziricsee, other events had happened, which rendered those that have been related of small importance to either party; and which, while they disappointed the hopes entertained by the Spaniards of completing the conquest of Zealand, in a great measure delivered the confederates from those disquieting apprehensions which the late success of the Spanish arms was calculated to excite. The first of these events was the death of Vitelli, who was, without controversy, the ablest and most experienced general at that time in the Netherlands.

**Death of
Requesens.**

VITELLI'S death was quickly followed by that of Requesens. In carrying on the siege of Ziricsee, much greater sums had been necessary than he was able to supply. From Spain, he knew that, considering the exhausted condition of the king's finances,

* Meteren, p. 155. Bentivoglio, p. 170.

es', occasioned by his war with the Turks, ^{BOOK XIII.} money could be expected; and the States of of the provinces as retained their allegiance, ^{1576.} either unwilling, or unable to comply with demands. Thus, great arrears were due to troops, and they had already begun to mutiny, to exercise the most intolerable oppression on people; to whom he had been obliged to grant liberty of wearing arms for their defence, from all grounded apprehension, that if he had not permitted them to do this, they would have done without his authority.

EQUESENS had too much sensibility, and too strength of mind, either to endure patiently mortifications, or to encounter resolutely the culties, to which he was exposed. His vexation chagrin preyed incessantly on his health and strength, and at length brought on a fever, of which he died in a few days; leaving behind him a much weaker character for civil, than for military accomplishments, in which he was confessedly much inferior to his predecessor the duke of Alva.

Meteren, p. 156.

This liberty had been taken from them by the duke of

Thuanus, tom. iii. p. 464. Strada, tom. ii. p. 35.

x

9

